



PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 04

Jing Wu Hen

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

Synopsis

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301: I don't want to see you suffer!

Wu Gang's body was tied up by the purple snake. Lin Feng had just cut off both of his legs to stop him from running. Blood was unceasingly flowing. Wu Gang's body was violently shaking. His eyes were filled with agony.

“That was for your shameless and cowardly actions.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold. His sword glowed again and another agonizing scream spread through the atmosphere. Wu Gang's left arm was cut off.

The pain was so extreme for Wu Gang that he even started to cry. The endless pain made him hate himself, he regret so much. Why? Why? Why had he infuriated a monster? What he had done wasn't much different from self-destruction. All that endless pain and agony was because he provoked Lin Feng.

“That was because you humiliated me.” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. He looked expressionless and emotionless.

“Then, the last one will be for Yun Xi.”

A light streaked through the air and Wu Gang's last arm was cut off as well. Immediately after, the snake let go of Wu Gang's body which immediately fell down onto the ground while wailing.

“You are shameless, cowardly and vicious. I will be even more vicious than you would be to your opponent, so I will not kill you. I will let you suffer a life not worth living.” Said Lin Feng coldly.

Immediately after, the purple snakes vanished and Lin Feng slowly turned around.

“Ahhhh,.....” Another horrible shriek emerged into the atmosphere. The last cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer had just been killed by Mister Chi and Mister Huo.

All the members of the Luo Xia Sect that were in Celestial River had died.

A group of strong cultivators with quite a few talents had come to Celestial River to steal the heavenly dragon cauldron, however, they hadn't obtained the treasure and instead met an early death. The only one left was Wu Gang who would be better off dead than alive.

Besides, all of this had happened because of a small incident. This was all because Wu Gang was a malicious person who accused other people of false crimes. Two of his fellow disciples had been killed and he wasn't able to avenge them so he had the evil idea to rape Yun Xi and use Ba Dao as a scapegoat, until Lin Feng appeared.

In an instant, a group of extremely strong cultivators had been killed. One cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer, two of the second and three of the first. They were a monstrously strong force but in an instant, they all died. From that moment on, the Luo Xia Sect would no longer be considered as one of the powerful sects.

And this all happened because they chose to make enemies of Lin

Feng.

Lin Feng looked at the ground covered with corpses. He was absolutely expressionless, it didn't affect him at all.

He could still remember how cold and detached those people were when Yun Xi tried to commit suicide. Lin Feng's heart was filled with coldness. Killing such scum didn't affect him at all.

Lin Feng looked at Meng Qing who was still holding Yun Xi. He then looked at Mister Huo and asked: "Mister Huo, I want to save her. What pills do we need?"

"Her bloods vessels have been severely damaged. Apart from the Divine Waters pill, there is nothing that can save her." Said Mister Huo slowly which made Mister Chi frown. Were Divine Waters pills the only solution to save her?

Lin Feng noticed that Mister Chi was puzzled. He then asked again: "Mister Huo, what kind of pills are the Divine Waters pills?"

"Xuan level pills of high quality, at least. They are Divine pills."

"Divine pills!" Lin Feng's heart started beating faster. These pills were at least Xuan level pills of higher quality. Lin Feng, even with the strength of his soul, was unable to concoct Xuan level pills of higher quality.

Besides, she only had seven days to live, which didn't give him

enough time to concoct the pills to save her. It seemed like Yun Xi was going to die in any case.

“Is there no other solution?” Asked Lin Feng while looking at that naive young girl. He couldn’t bear seeing Yun Xi die.

“Only if we could prevent her body from aging and the blood vessels from deteriorating, but in her current state, she will live seven days at maximum. In seven days, the blood vessels will weaken and she will die. I can’t think of any other pill which would have a better chance at saving her than the Divine Waters pill.” Said Mister Huo while shaking his head, which made Lin Feng remain silent. Wasn’t there any solution to save her?

“I have a solution.” Said a cold voice which surprised Lin Feng. It was Meng Qing.

When she saw that Lin Feng looked troubled, Meng Qing lowered her head and said: “I can freeze her which will slow the functions of her body but she will not die.”

“Huh?” Mister Huo was surprised. Meng Qing had that kind of ability.

“If you can do it then let’s give it a try. Then, if we manage to get the Divine Waters pill someday, we’ll give it to her and save her.”

“Meng Qing...” Said Lin Feng while looking at Meng Qing. He obviously understood what this would require.

“Let’s go back.” Said Meng Qing while carrying Yun Xi. She turned around and walked towards Mister Huo’s house. Lin Feng and the others followed her. Only Ba Dao stayed there and picked up the Na rings and precious items from the corpses. After that, he followed the others.

After they left, a crowd of people arrived at the battlefield. When they saw all the corpses, they were dumbstruck.

They were dead. Every single person had died.

All these corpses were strong cultivators of the Luo Xia Sect, and there were even extremely strong cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. They were all on the ground, lifeless.

“It’s Lin Feng again! How terrifying!” Thought the people in the crowd while shivering. Lin Feng was a death god. It was better to stay as far away from him as possible.

After that, the Luo Xia Sect would start to fall into decline. They had lost such a powerful and influential group of people. They had all perished in Celestial River.

.....

Lin Feng and the two others were outside a secret room in Mister Huo’s house. Meng Qing was inside that secret room with Yun Xi. Lin Feng and the two others didn’t know what the situation looked

like inside.

They waited for a while and then, the huge door of the secret room opened itself. Meng Qing's silhouette appeared at the door. She looked at Lin Feng and said: "It's alright now."

After talking, Meng Qing immediately left and went to her own room.

Lin Feng entered the secret room and slightly shivered because of the temperature. It was freezing inside the secret room.

He only saw a bed and a frozen silhouette lying on it. It was precisely Yun Xi. At that moment, she was frozen in ice. She completely entombed in ice.

Lin Feng and the others couldn't feel any Qi emerging from Yun Xi's body.

"There shouldn't be any problems." Said Mister Chi in a low voice. Lin Feng nodded and said: "I trust Meng Qing."

Mister Chi didn't say anything. Even though Meng Qing didn't say much, Mister Chi could see that Meng Qing and Lin Feng's relationship was of an intimate nature.

"Alright, let's let her rest here in peace. Maybe when she wakes up, she will just have the feeling that she was in a dream." Said Mister Chi. Lin Feng slightly nodded. There was no other solution.

At that moment, Lin Feng had no way to obtain Divine Waters pills. What he needed to do was to improve his cultivation level.

“Let’s go.” Said Lin Feng while leaving the secret room, whose door then slowly closed itself.

Mister Chi and Mister Huo left and then Lin Feng walked to Meng Qing’s room and knocked.

“I’m resting.” Said a cold and detached voice inside the room. She sounded like she was talking to a stranger and was unwilling to let him enter.

Lin Feng ignored her cold and detached voice, and immediately entered her room.

Lin Feng entered the room and saw that Meng Qing’s body was curled up on the bed. She was shaking from head to toe because her entire body was covered by a layer of frost.

When Lin Feng saw that Meng Qing’s body was covered by a layer of frost, he felt a pain invade his heart.

“What are you doing?!” Said Meng Qing sounding cold and detached. Lin Feng was looking at her, his eyes were filled with compassion.

Lin Feng roughly pulled Meng Qing into his arms, he was firmly and tightly embracing her. He then said: “Meng Qing, why do you have to do this? You know perfectly well that you don’t need to go through such pain.”

Obviously, Meng Qing was in that situation because she had frozen Yun Xi’s body. Now, her body was in pain and freezing from the powerful ice Qi.

Meng Qing nibbled her lip. Even though Lin Feng’s embrace was rough, each time he embraced her, her heart would still melt.

“I don’t like seeing you suffer.” Said Meng Qing to Lin Feng, which made his heart twitch. She just didn’t want to see him suffer, nothing more. Because of that simple reason, Meng Qing preferred suffering in silence to protect Lin Feng.

Lin Feng softly yet firmly embraced Meng Qing and said slowly: “Meng Qing, I am even less willing to see you suffer. You have to understand clearly that, for me, you are the most important person in my life.”

“For me, you are the most important person in my life!” When Meng Qing heard Lin Feng, her heart started pounding frantically. The incredible pain and her worrisome feelings seemed like they had completely vanished in an instant. She was the most important person for Lin Feng?!

For Lin Feng, nobody could replace Meng Qing, she had gone through so much with him.

“Then why are you not kissing me?” Said a Meng Qing with a voice which sounded like it was a dream. Lin Feng was stupefied. His face was filled with joy and delight. It was the first time that Meng Qing expressed her love for him.

Lin Feng, who was still holding Meng Qing, gazed into her eyes and then moved to passionately kissing her. It wasn't a soft and gentle kiss. Rather, it was a wild and passionate kiss. It was filled with the passion of youth!

Chapter 302: A Hundred and Twenty Thousand Pills

When Meng Qing felt Lin Feng's lips, her heart started pounding. It seemed like the endless ice had melted thanks to one kiss.

She had never had such a feeling in her life. It felt so warm, so pure. She hoped that she would be able to stay by Lin Feng's side forever, that would bring her true happiness.

Lin Feng's arms were still firmly wrapped around Meng Qing's body. He remained unwilling to let go of her. His heart was filled with an intense fire. His hands were moving across Meng Qing's perfect body.

When Meng Qing sensed Lin Feng's hands, she slightly shivered, immediately after, she stopped Lin Feng's hands from moving.

Their lips separated. Lin Feng's hands were, as before, still on Meng Qing's body. They were soft and limpid as water. Besides, at that moment, Meng Qing's face wasn't filled with coldness anymore but with a tender expression, her face was pink. She looked so sweet.

At the moment when Lin Feng wanted to react, Meng Qing said something: "Lin Feng, I want to hear a story!"

"A story." A light flashed in Lin Feng's eyes. He looked at that sweet and delicate face, how could he refuse?

“What kind of story do you want to hear?” Asked Lin Feng while looking into her limpid eyes.

“The fairy fox story.” Said Meng Qing in a low voice while putting her head on Lin Feng’s shoulder. At that moment, she didn’t look cold and detached at all. She was filled with softness.

Lin Feng slightly nodded and his lips started moving as he started his narration. It was a beautiful moment, like a dream.

Lin Feng’s story continued for a while. When he finished telling the story, he left Meng Qing’s room and closed the door. Immediately after, he disappeared from outside Meng Qing’s room.

“Lin Feng!” Whispered Meng Qing when she saw Lin Feng disappear. She then said, in a voice which sounded like it came from another world: “Lin Feng, at the moment, I am not good enough to be with you but you should definitely wait for me.” When Meng Qing finished talking, she leant against the window, there was only Lin Feng in her thoughts. Lin Feng’s words were still resonating in her mind: “for me, you are the most important person in my life!”

Lin Feng could never blame Meng Qing for being so cold. These days, her heart was finally started to melt. In her heart, there was a thread of warmth. Meng Qing was Lin Feng’s. She couldn’t run away, Lin Feng would never allow her heart to break free.

Lin Feng went to the room dedicated to concocting pills. Mister Huo and Mister Chi were there already.

“Mister Huo, I want you to help me gather spiritual herbs and then start concocting pills.” Said Lin Feng going straight to the point.

Mister Huo was surprised. He asked Lin Feng: “What are we concocting and how many?”

“Spiritual Sanguine pills, Pure Earth pills, Vitality pills and Red Sun pills, I need thirty thousand of each.” Said Lin Feng solemnly, which made the two old men shiver. Thirty thousand of a single pill, what a gigantic amount.

“Spiritual sanguine pills are Ling level pills of higher quality, the three others are medium quality. These four pills would be useless for cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. For cultivators under the sixth Ling Qi layer, the effects would be incredibly beneficial, especially the spiritual sanguine pills. If a cultivator under the sixth Ling Qi layer used the four pills together, I can guarantee that he would break through to the next Ling Qi layer. Besides, there would be no side effects at all from the instant breakthrough.”

Mister Huo was looking at Lin Feng and said slowly: “Lin Feng, if you gave one pill of each to thirty thousand cultivators under the sixth Ling Qi layer, they would all break through to the next layer. You.....”

Lin Feng nodded. Mister Huo, of course, knew what Lin Feng

intended to do.

“Mister Huo, I have an army. I want to increase their strength, I want them to break through to a higher layer.”

“Increase the strength of each member of an army and increase your total strength!”

Even if Mister Huo and Mister Chi were much stronger than cultivators of the Ling Qi layer, if faced with thirty thousand soldiers which all broke through to a higher Ling Qi Layer at once, that would be terrifying. Besides, Lin Feng sounded extremely calm when talking about it.

“Concocting these four pills is not a problem. Besides, we can concoct them all at the same time. Even though there is a high success rate, a hundred and twenty thousand pills require a few days before we can refine them properly.” Even with Mister Huo’s vast knowledge and abilities, he couldn’t concoct Xuan level pills of lower quality with even a hundred percent success rate, always succeeding was improbable. Concocting Ling level pills of higher quality wasn’t hard for him though, and then he could concoct and refine an incredible amount of Ling level pills of medium quality with a very high success rate.

“I can concoct at the same time as him.” Said Mister Chi.

Lin Feng smiled to the two old men and said: “I’m not worried. Sorry for bothering you again. You can concoct at the same time, I would like to personally start the process though. Using the earth

fusion, you two can give me direction.”

“Pay attention. Mister Chi and I will concoct the pills. When one of us takes a break, you can practice your skills, we’ll guide you.” Said Mister Huo.

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng obviously happy about the arrangement. He had two senior alchemists with him, he would probably be able to improve his concocting abilities extremely quickly.

When they finished discussing all these things, they immediately started concocting pills, with absolute determination.

.....

At the Luo Xia Sect, the setting sun was shining upon a palace in the mountains. It seemed like the entire beauty of the Luo Xia Sect resided there. It was absolutely magnificent.

However, at that moment, at the Luo Xia Sect, nobody felt like admiring the beautiful scenery. In a vast palace, the Patriarch of the Luo Xia Sect, Gu Chun Qiu, punched a table on his side which immediately broke into pieces. He was releasing an extremely cold Qi.

They had all died. The powerful cultivators of the Luo Xia Sect had gone to Celestial River and had all been killed. He had lost more than half of the strongest cultivators in the sect. That calamity made his sect become one of the weakest of the large

sects. Maybe they would even walk on the same path as the Yun Hai Sect and end up being exterminated.

The funniest part was that the calamity hadn't occurred while trying to steal the heavenly dragon cauldron, all of this had happened because they crossed paths with one person, Lin Feng.

Wu Gang had offended Lin Feng which was why Lin Feng killed all the outstanding elders and disciples of the Luo Xia Sect in Celestial River. There wasn't even one person left standing.

"Gather all the elders and core disciples of the sect and send them all to Celestial River!" Said Gu Chun Qiu coldly which made other people shiver. Gathering all the elders and core disciples of the sect implied that there wouldn't be anyone left to protect the sect.

What did Gu Chun Qiu want to do?

A sudden realization flashed in one of the elders' eyes. It seemed on the outside like Gu Chun Qiu wanted to get his revenge but in fact, there was another purpose, obtain the heavenly dragon cauldron!

These days, many of the elders and disciples of the Luo Xia Sect had been killed by Lin Feng. The sect had almost become barren of talent. If they wanted to rise again, they needed to find something to aid them from outside the sect. The heavenly dragon cauldron was one of the aids they could get from outside. That was a good opportunity for them to regain their lost power.

Therefore, Gu Chun Qiu was sending these people. He obviously wanted to kill Lin Feng, but above all, he wanted the heavenly dragon cauldron.

The setting sun was gradually going down while darkness gradually invaded the atmosphere over the Luo Xia Sect. At that moment, outside of the Luo Xia Sect, there was a cloud of dust. A group of dark silhouettes were rushing at full speed towards Celestial River.

At the city gate of Celestial River, many people were waiting. When they saw the dark silhouettes in the distance come towards them, they were a bit surprised and all got prepared for a potential fight.

Those days, everybody was coming to Celestial River because of the heavenly dragon cauldron. Besides, apart from extraordinarily strong and influential groups, nobody prevented anyone from trying to get the cauldron. Preventing people without backing from entering the city would at least reduce the number of people who were interested in the cauldron. There was more hope that way.

Far in the distance, the dark silhouettes were approaching at full speed. Many people blocked the path and shouted: “Stop immediately!”

However, nobody paid attention to them. The sky was pitch-black, it looked cold, desolate and very sinister.

There was a strange coldness invading people's hearts. It was silent. This crowd of black silhouettes were way too silent. There wasn't a single sound coming from their horses.

People focused their eyes and fixedly stared at the people who were coming. Finally, the darkness gradually became clarity but when the crowd saw these dark silhouettes, their hearts started beating faster.

Coffins! That group of silhouettes were not riding horses and instead it was a group of coffins moving in formation. How dreadful!

"Stop!" Shouted many people but they only saw that each and every single coffin was calmly approaching them. It looked absolutely insane. Immediately after, the crowd was unable to move. In a flash, they all disappeared. They had been taken inside the coffins.

"Ahhhhh....."

A bloodcurdling scream spread through the atmosphere in the pitch-black night. Some silhouettes were moving out of the coffins. They had human shapes but they looked like zombies.

In a flash, the living cultivators had been devoured by the corpses.

The hearts of the people in the distant crowd started pounding.

They wanted to prevent these people from entering the city but they remained in their original positions, they were not moving the slightest iota. Cold sweat was unceasingly flowing down their backs.

How terrifying!

These black coffins, in a flash, were inside the city. When the silhouettes disappeared from sight, the crowd sighed and took a deep breath. They all fell, seated on the ground and took a long time to calm down.

Who were those people?

Chapter 303: The End of the Conflict

In the middle of the room dedicated to concocting pills, there was a rich medicinal smell floating in the atmosphere. There was a cloud of smoke which was filled with a rich and pleasant fragrance that filled the air.

Above the gigantic cauldron, the concoction was unceasingly foaming and bubbling. In the cauldron, there was an incredible quantity of pills.

“Finished!” Said Lin Feng firmly. An incredible number of small lights immediately rose up in the air followed by an explosive sound. The atmosphere of that laboratory had once again exploded.

Rumbling noises spread in the air. Mister Chi stopped the fire and wryly smiled at Lin Feng.

That guy..... He was a monster.

Mister Chi wasn't the only one, Mister Huo was also fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng, who had broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer, had surprisingly been able to concoct, almost a thousand Ling level pills of medium quality at the same time.

In the previous days, Lin Feng had been sticking with the two old men. Through his earth fusion, he had learnt a lot from them. They had never given him any instruction but by being in the room and observing the concoction process, Lin Feng had learnt

how to concoct pills and was currently able to concoct Ling level pills of medium quality on his own. Besides, Lin Feng's concoction speed had also surpassed that of the two old men.

At that moment, Lin Feng only lacked one thing: fire. He still required Mister Chi's inner fire to be able to concoct pills.

If Lin Feng had been able to control his own form of inner fire, concocting pills would have been even easier for him, and he would also have been quicker. The only thing was preventing Lin Feng from progressing at that moment: fire.

Once Lin Feng reached the Xuan Qi layer, even if he didn't use inner fire, he would at least still be able to condense pure Qi into fire, which was also suitable to concoct pills.

However, fire made of pure Qi would not be as strong as Mister Huo's inner fire, but would still increase his ability.

Lin Feng opened his mouth, he looked satisfied. He finally put these last pills into his Na stone on his ring.

They had already finished concocting the one hundred and twenty thousand pills. They only needed to go back to Yangzhou City and they could give them to the soldiers to increase their strength. They would be able to break through to the next layer which was a monstrous move.

A group of cultivators of the fifth Ling Qi layer couldn't compete

with a group of cultivators of the sixth Ling Qi layer. The difference was huge. A cultivator of the sixth Ling Qi layer could kill a cultivator of the fifth Ling Qi layer with a single full power strike.

These pills would enable thirty thousand troops of the fifth Ling Qi layer to break through to the sixth Ling Qi layer. Hearing this would have made many people go insane with fright.

Of course, Lin Feng had only been able to achieve this because he had met the two old alchemists. In Xue Yue, there were few people above the third Xuan Qi layer, besides, cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer who were alchemists as well were so rare that it was a miracle to find even one.

“Mister Huo, Mister Chi, thank you very much.” Said Lin Feng while nodding at the two old men in a very sincere way. There were ninety thousand Ling level pills of medium quality and thirty thousand Ling level pills of high quality. Exchanging them for purity stones would have enabled the seller to earn a monumental amount of purity stones.

Besides, in the laboratory while concocting the pills, Mister Huo and Mister Chi had also taught Lin Feng the art of concocting pills and they had also become able to concoct pills together which was an extremely rare experience.

Experience and knowledge were the most precious things for an alchemist.

Mister Huo shook his head, smiled wryly and said: “Lin Feng, if you could control fire, even though the pills you refined are not high level ones, considering the speed and the quality of the pills, you are much more skilled than both of us, old men. I am ashamed.”

Lin Feng was indeed really gifted at concocting pills. He hadn't never seen anyone concoct pills before. Besides, the strength of his soul was also incredible. It seemed like he could do anything he wished. His soul control was extremely advanced even if he couldn't rival with the two old men yet in terms of strength. In terms of control, he was better than them.

For example, with the way they controlled their souls, they could concoct a hundred pills but there were always some incidents which prevented them from advancing further.

But such things couldn't happen to Lin Feng, he could control the entire concoction process very accurately without mistakes, that was amazing.

They could almost guess how monstrous Lin Feng's soul control was.

“You taught me everything.” Said Lin Feng modestly.

“Alright. You two can stop exchanging compliments, we still have a long way before being able to concoct Divine Waters pills. None of us is able to concoct them.” Said Mister Chi interrupting Mister Huo and Lin Feng. He pulled them back to reality when he

said that. Indeed, they still had to progress a lot to make Divine Waters pills. Even with three cultivators in harmony, they still had a long way before being able to concoct them.

“In the coming weeks, we should stay here and concoct pills. We should also be discreet, we don’t know what’s happening out there.” said Mister Chi in a low voice. Immediately after, the three of them left the concoction room and arrived in a huge living room.

At that moment, in the distance, a silhouette flickered. When Lin Feng saw the person, lights flashed in his eyes. Lin Feng had finally left the concoction room. During that short time, everything had turned upside down but Lin Feng and the two old men knew nothing about it.

“Ba Dao, you arrived at the perfect moment.”” Said Lin Feng.

“How is it outside?”

Ba Dao remained silent for a moment and then said only one word: “Chaos.”

“These days, in Celestial River, there are many strong cultivators. They all belong to the greatest influence spheres of the country. There are also some absolutely unknown people who, when they heard the news, immediately came to Celestial River. They are alone between two influential groups.”

“What two influential groups?” Asked Lin Feng.

“One of these groups, you know it, it’s the Dream Pavilion. The Dream Pavilion seems to be a small part of a larger organisation. The cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer, last time, was only in charge in Celestial River.”

Lin Feng was stupefied. A small part?

Lin Feng suddenly remembered what Lan Jiao had told him on that night. She belonged to a very influential group but back then, Lin Feng hadn’t paid attention to that. It seemed like Lan Jiao hadn’t lied.

“What is the other one?”

“The other one is evil. They don’t ride horses, they fly through the air in coffins. Even though they are not mounted, they are extremely strong. Besides, their skills resemble those of Mo Cang Lan. They can consume other people’s pure Qi and flesh. They probably are the same kind of cultivators as Mo Cang Lan. In Celestial River, a myriad of people have already been killed because of them.” Said Ba Dao.

“Like Mo Cang Lan!” Lin Feng frowned. He was feeling a bit annoyed. Aunt Yun belonged to one of these influential forces. Besides, the other sphere of influence works with Mo Cang Lan. They all hated Lin Feng from the bottom of their heart.

If both these groups attacked Lin Feng, the situation would be troublesome.

“Apart from these two spheres of influence, there are many other strong cultivators from Xue Yue. For example, every single person belonging to the Luo Xia Sect has come, even their patriarch Gu Chun Qiu. Besides, there are also people from the Hao Yue Sect, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, the Wan Shou Sect, the Yu Clan and even some people from the Imperial Clan. They are all here in Celestial River, it is encircled by strong cultivators.”

“That heavenly dragon cauldron has led to such an unstable situation. It seems like while we were concocting pills, it became chaotic outside.” Said Mister Chi indifferently. Everybody wanted to steal the treasure.

“Yes. Because of the ancient cauldron, many horrible things happened. Many strong cultivators even died. They want to end the conflict in three days.” Said Ba Dao.

“End the conflict? What does that mean?” Asked Lin Feng perplexed.

“I don’t know who decided it. There is a rumor in Celestial River that everybody gathered outside of Celestial River to solve the issue and decide to whom the ancient cauldron would belong. That suggestion, according to the rumors, also received the approval of the majority.”

“How will they agree on a specific person?” Asked Lin Feng.

“They still haven’t chosen yet. The rumors spread quickly and it is that the treasure is already in the hands of the people with the coffins. If they don’t understand that, everybody in Celestial River will kill them and then go with the plan everybody agreed upon. Everybody agreed on this course of action.”

“How smart is the person at the origin of all of this!” Thought Lin Feng. Those who hadn’t received the treasure would of course agree. Before everybody just had malicious intentions and would have never thought of such a thing but that move, even though it seemed simple, was actually very smart. The person who had spread the rumor had managed to make everybody agree on a solution.

Chapter 304: Kill Him!

Celestial River suddenly became extremely calm but that calmness was oppressive. It was clear to everybody it was an indication of the coming storm.

At that moment, everybody was calmly staring at the mystical and extremely strong cultivators in their coffins. If they didn't accept the offer, the crowd would definitely attack them.

Even though these people were extremely strong, in the middle of all these influential groups, nobody dared make a strange move.

Two days later, at night, that situation reached its breaking point. In the vast ancient city, in the middle of that night, the main street was almost completely depopulated. Extremely few people were to be seen.

At the city, there were many people calmly waiting.

In the middle of that crowd, there was one silhouette. That person was wearing a black chang pao. That person was covered from head to toe in black to the extent that their face was also covered.

That person's eyes were firmly closed as if they were sound asleep, but that person already knew that every single thing around them, including the slightest grain of sand, was under their control.

In the earth fusion state, he could perceive everything clearly. It even seemed like the atmosphere around the city gate belonged to his world.

That black silhouette was precisely Lin Feng, he had meticulously disguised himself.

In Lin Feng's mind appeared many silhouettes. They were coming towards the city gate and there were more and more people joining them. There were a few very strong cultivators. Who, when they arrived near the city gate, started walking softly and lightly, almost completely silently. It was difficult to notice them but nothing could escape from Lin Feng's earth fusion. If someone came, Lin Feng was already well aware of their every movement.

At that moment, in the horizon, a silhouette wearing a snowy-white chang pao appeared in Lin Feng's vision which made him frown. A sword appeared and it seemed like a powerful energy was being released.

"He's finally here." Thought Lin Feng with a cold expression on the corner of his mouth. Immediately after, he slowly opened his eyes which revealed an endless fierceness.

Bing He Teng's mood was bad these days. As a great elder of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, he had brought many people from the sect to Celestial River with the objective to kill Lin Feng and in the end, apart from him, everybody was killed.

After that, the heavenly dragon cauldron had appeared and everybody had started fighting for it, including Bing He Teng. He hadn't notified anyone at his sect because he wanted to keep the cauldron for himself.

Bing He Teng had been closely following Mo Cang Lan and had almost obtained the ancient cauldron but in the end, he had lost each time. Then, the group of mysterious and extremely strong cultivators had come and Mo Cang Lan gave the ancient cauldron to them. Bing He Teng's heart was becoming colder and colder, filled with evilness. He couldn't go back to the sect, he had no choice but to continue hoping for an opportunity to steal the ancient cauldron. Therefore, he had made his move early.

As expected, Bing He Teng's instincts were correct. Many people had already gathered there and besides, there were lots of cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer.

Before, cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were all considered as extremely powerful but at that moment, there were so many gathered in one place. They were all there for the ancient cauldron.

“A bunch of crappy cultivators, they also want the ancient cauldron...” Thought Bing He Teng while smiling coldly. That place was filled with extremely strong cultivators. Even cultivators of the first and second Xuan Qi layers could only watch, if they tried to get involved, they would certainly lose their life.

In the continent, each time a treasure appeared, a large number of people died but each time, there were people who courted death.

At that moment, a cold energy caressed Bing He Teng's body but there was a flash of sword Qi as well, which made his face turn rigid.

"Who's that...?" He said in a small voice. Immediately after, Bing He Teng saw a black silhouette flicker, the silhouette left the area of the city gate at full speed and started to rush towards the distance.

"Huh?" Bing He Teng frowned. What a strong presence. He was surprised.

That was Lin Feng, that bastard.

"There is only one person who wants to die that much."

Bing He Teng rushed towards Lin Feng. He wasn't worried about attacking Lin Feng, with his cultivation level, even if there was Meng Qing and Mister Huo, it didn't matter. Even though he couldn't defeat them, retreating wouldn't be a problem either.

"Stay there!" Shouted Bing He Teng coldly. He then threw himself in the air towards Lin Feng at an incredible speed.

However, Lin Feng was escaping at full speed as well. In a flash, he had already crossed a distance of a few kilometers. He had flown

through the air like a gust of wind.

But the gap between a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer and a cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer was gigantic. In a very short time, he had caught up with Lin Feng. Ice Qi shot towards Lin Feng which made him shiver and slightly move back. He remained silent but his eyes were still ice cold.

Bing He Teng, as expected, was chasing him.

“BOOM!” A punch emerged from Bing He Teng’s side and bombarded the atmosphere towards Lin Feng. A heavy frozen air invaded the atmosphere. A snowy-white layer of ice had invaded the darkness of the night.

However, Lin Feng suddenly changed direction, looked behind him at the attack, and in a flash dodged the attack. His back could feel the cold energy contained within that attack.

Lin Feng finally came to a stop and landed steadily on the ground. Bing He Teng was coldly staring at him.

At that moment, Lin Feng opened his chang pao, raised his head and looked at Bing He Teng. There was a cold smile on the corner of his lips.

“Bing He Teng, today is your day of judgement.” Said Lin Feng. At that moment, two silhouettes appeared in the air. One was following behind the other. In a flash, the two silhouettes blocked

Bing He Ten's path of retreat. These two silhouettes were, of course, Mister Huo and Mister Chi.

At the same time, another silhouette appeared by Lin Feng's side, Meng Qing.

Initially, he had come to the Celestial River city gate with the purpose of neutralizing Mo Cang Lan and Bing He Teng.

"Day of judgement? Unlikely!" Said Bing He Teng while making a motion of retreat. He released a punch made of pure Qi which directly moved towards Mister Chi. Surprisingly, he was considering Mister Chi as the weak link.

Lin Feng and the others smiled coldly and immediately after, they saw Mister Chi raise his hand, out of which, an incredibly gigantic bright red light emerged. Mister Chi's hand was filled with a violent and brutal Qi

"BOOM!"

A monstrously powerful energy spread in the atmosphere. At the moment when Mister Chi's attack reached Bing He Teng and with an explosive collision, blood started to flow from Bing He Teng's mouth.

Using all of his power, Bing He Teng quickly moved back. His facial expression had changed drastically. That red-haired old man, who was not there last time, was at the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

He had chosen him because Mister Chi was blocking the path in the encirclement which was the best choice for escape, but in the end, the person blocking him turned out to be at the fourth Xuan Qi layer. When had Lin Feng got to know such a strong cultivator?

“Kill him.” Said Lin Feng coldly which made Bing He Teng’s heart start pounding. Immediately after, Mister Chi’s silhouette flickered and he rushed through the air. A monstrosly terrifying oppressive energy crashed onto Bing He Teng’s body.

His silhouette flickered, he wanted to dodge but at the same time, a burning energy was rushing towards his back.

“Frozen World!” Shouted Bing He Teng furiously. The level of his technique was extremely advanced. It was already heavily snowing in the area.

“BOOM!”

A small hand appeared and smashed into Bing He Teng’s body. It was Meng Qing. she wasn’t scared of the cold. In a flash, she had broken through Bing He Teng’s technique, immediately punching him.

“Die.” Shouted Mister Huo. Fireballs rushed towards Bing He Teng like meteors falling from the sky. Bing He Teng gnashed his teeth and tried to dodge the incoming attack. However, another punch crashed into his body again, this punch contained fire which made Bing He Teng groan and fall from the air and land heavily onto the ground.

The atmosphere was shaking. Bing He Teng's internal organs had been damaged by the punch. He lowered his head and lightly coughed. His chest was extremely painful.

At that moment, a sword had pierced straight through his chest. The sword was stabbed through his back and the tip was sticking out the front of his chest.

Bing He Teng turned his head and looked at Lin Feng. He had the impression that it must be an illusion.

He was going to die. He had a great status within his sect, he was a Great Elder. He was both extremely strong and influential. However, at that moment, he had been killed by Lin Feng's sword.

“If you want to kill me or any of my people, you will die!” Said Lin Feng sounding ice-cold. His long sword flashed with an intense sword Qi and in a flash, Bing He Teng's internal organs were destroyed. A powerful cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer was defeated!

Chapter 305: The Cultivators in the Coffins!

He had died. Bing He Teng had never thought that he would die in Celestial River. Besides, it hadn't happened when trying to steal the ancient cauldron, instead, Lin Feng had lured him into a trap.

Four strong cultivators had attacked at the same time. Even if Bing He Teng was extremely strong, it was easy to kill him with a group. Besides, they hadn't randomly attacked Bing He Teng, they had carefully planned the ambush.

Lin Feng looked at Bing He Teng's corpse and grabbed his Na ring. He immediately stored it in his own Na stone. Considering he had the amazing status of Great Elder at the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, he probably had accumulated an incredible amount of resources during his long life, including some family heirlooms. Besides, Ba Dao had picked up a lot of rings containing Na stones from the other battles and gave them to Lin Feng, they all belonged to cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer in the past. Lin Feng had become quite wealthy already.

"Let's go." Lin Feng's silhouette flickered and he moved towards the Celestial River city gate. A short time after, he was in position again.

Lin Feng jumped onto the gigantic wall, his back was leaning against a pillar. Lin Feng then slightly closed his eyes and had the feeling of becoming one with the night.

In his mind, a few silhouettes suddenly appeared, they were

absolutely silent and were not giving off any presence. They couldn't escape from Lin Feng's vision when he was in fusion with the earth itself. Unless they managed to thoroughly hide their Qi, Lin Feng could always detect them without being seen at all.

Many strong cultivators had already arrived, besides, they remained in dark places and didn't show themselves.

In the east, a streak of light signalled that dawn was approaching, gradually breaking through the darkness of the night. The dark blue sky was starting to reveal itself.

At that moment, Lin Feng frowned. A brutal Qi appeared and pressed against his body. How cold!

A group of black coffins silently appeared in the sky. Their evil and demonic Qi streaked through the sky as they moved. They were both silent and terrifying.

These coffins were already flying low in the sky so the crowd could see them. People in the crowd felt extremely cold.

“Thirteen coffins!” Many people in Celestial River could see the coffins. They were stupefied. Were these thirteen coffins the representatives of the powerful evil cultivators?

Behind the thirteen coffins, many silhouettes were flickering and closely following the thirteen coffins. All of these people's Qi seemed extremely strong. These people belonged to the strongest

spheres of influence. They were obviously not going to let the people in coffins, who had also managed to obtain the heavenly dragon cauldron, leave peacefully.

Outside of Celestial River, on the yellow sand, many cultivators were already waiting, they looked cold and detached. These people were all extremely strong and intended to block the people with the coffins.

Amongst these coffins, which streaked through the sky, there was one to the side which directly moved near Lin Feng. Lin Feng could thus feel even more distinctly the terrifying Qi.

Lin Feng was wondering what kind of person practiced such evil skills.

“Crrrrr, crrrrr.....”

Silently, the coffins opened themselves. Two black chains appeared and immediately moved towards Lin Feng, they moved extremely quickly.

Lin Feng was stupefied. When the chains appeared, Lin Feng had a strange feeling as if he was being sucked towards the chains, but he resisted.

“Ah!” A strange sound emerged from the coffin. The black chains seemed to have found their target. They transformed into two dark lights which appeared in front of Lin Feng.

“Dodge!”

Lin Feng was in fusion with the earth, at that moment, Lin Feng was gracefully moving back and forth while carefully avoiding the attacks of the chains. The dark lights from the chains suddenly passed in front of him, so close that they almost crashed into his body. Even though he hadn't been touched by the dark lights, Lin Feng could still feel the evil Qi that created the light, penetrate into his body.

“Block!”

An evil voice emerged from the coffin. The black chains changed direction but Lin Feng, high up in the air, even though he couldn't fully use his earth fusion, he released a huge amount of purple energy. His body suddenly rushed through the sky like a meteor. He wasn't retreating, in fact, he had just thrown himself towards the coffin. He was monstrously quick and the black chains failed to block his path.

“What amazing agility!” Thought many people when they saw Lin Feng rushing through the sky. Lin Feng hadn't broken through to the Xuan Qi layer but he had been able to dodge the black chains consecutively which already showed that he was extremely skilled.

Besides, at the crucial moment, he hadn't tried to escape, on the contrary, he had chosen to attack.

A light flashed and a spiritual weapon materialized in Lin Feng's

hand, it was a long sword, it looked swift and fierce.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng. His sword slashed through the sky towards the coffin.

“Cling cling cling.....”

An endless amount of chains rushed forth from the coffin and collided with Lin Feng’s sword Qi. People’s hearts were pounding. The light from the sword Qi lasted for a moment and then the sword Qi vanished without a trace.

That cultivator in the coffin was much stronger than Lin Feng.

It seemed like there was an endless ocean of black chains, and they were all now rushing towards Lin Feng at full speed. Besides, the sky seemed to turn black from the endless black chains that appeared.

The other companions of the cultivator in the coffin were already in the distance. They thought that fighting against a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer and not being able to defeat him was a disgrace. They were furious.

Lin Feng’s face was filled with killing intent. He was still safe even though the opponent had immediately attacked him without warning. It was clear to Lin Feng that if the chains touched him, he would have probably died. They were trying to kill him for no obvious reason. How could Lin Feng not be furious?

An incredible quantity of purple energy started filling the atmosphere. A myriad of purple snakes appeared and threw themselves towards the person in the coffin. These purple snakes looked like the opponent's black chains, it seemed like there was an endless amount of snakes to match the endless black chains.

The myriad of purple snakes surrounded the black coffin and started to wrap around it.

The crowd was astonished. The cultivator in the coffin had failed to catch Lin Feng, but Lin Feng had managed to capture him inside the coffin. Even though the crowd couldn't determine who would win or lose the battle, they at least had the proof that Lin Feng was extremely strong.

“The Purple Spirit! It's Lin Feng!”

People in the crowd raised their heads and looked at the person wearing a black chang pao. They were astonished. Almost everybody knew that Lin Feng was in Celestial River. Even though a certain time had passed since people had last seen him, his accomplishments and spirit made him very famous in Celestial River, in which he was at the core of all rumors. That person was a monstrous genius. His natural talent was terrifying. They hadn't thought that he would also be here at this moment.

Had Lin Feng come to take back the ancient cauldron as well?

Even though he was the first person to own the ancient cauldron,

getting it back would be very difficult for him. A myriad of extremely strong cultivators were all staring at him, they were all there because they wanted the ancient cauldron for themselves.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. Lin Feng originally wanted to remain anonymous and just wait for his prey like a fisherman but he hadn’t thought that this cultivator would attack him for no obvious reason, which had led to Lin Feng’s identity being unveiled.

The myriad of purple snakes which had tied up the coffin were shaking as they dragged it down from the sky. At the same time, the myriad of chains kept moving in an attempt to attack Lin Feng.

Lin Feng smiled coldly. He moved higher into the air. At the same time, a snowy-white silhouette flashed through the air and immediately arrived beside the coffin.

A punch containing an incredible quantity of ice Qi crashed into the coffin.

The coffin was completely frozen solid.

As if that hadn’t been enough, another silhouette appeared in front of the coffin in a flash. Two fireballs emerged from the person’s hands, it was Mister Huo.

“Burn!”

His two hands shook and the fireballs from Mister Huo's hands crashed into the coffin. In a flash, the coffin started burning. Just after the powerful ice attack, Mister Huo carried out another powerful fire attack.

That black coffin suddenly looked magnificent. The fire was burning on one side and the ice on the other side was reflecting the brilliance of the fire.

“Ahhhh.....” A scream came from the coffin. The myriad of chains rushed back to the coffin and emitted loud sounds when they collided with the coffin. The coffin exploded and a silhouette appeared before the eyes of the crowd.

The hideous silhouette of a man who looked like a skeleton appeared. He was hanging in the air thanks to the chains, he looked like a monster.

However, he was severely suffering from the effects of the ice Qi and fire Qi corroding his body.

Ice and fire had mixed together, ice Qi and fire Qi together made a terrifyingly deadly power.

“I will kill you.” Shouted the monster evilly. He raised his head to look at Lin Feng, but then, immediately after, a cold light plummeted from the heavens and pierced through his head. The atmosphere became deadly silent.

Amongst the cultivators inside the coffins, the first one had died!

Chapter 306: The Empire's Influence

When the crowd saw that corpse, they sighed. Why had the strong cultivator in the coffin used his chains to attack Lin Feng? He hadn't managed to immobilize Lin Feng. In the end, he had lost his life because of it. At the moment just before he died, his heart was probably filled with regrets. He had provoked Lin Feng and the punishment had been his life.

Besides, at the moment when Lin Feng used his sword, it seemed like he had become stronger once again and broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer. On the path of cultivation, he was advancing at lightning speed.

“He is a real genius, he's really extraordinary.” thought the crowd. Lin Feng was monstrous. Within a few days, he had broken through to the next Ling Qi layer.

Besides, at the time when Lin Feng was still in the eighth Ling Qi layer, he was able to kill cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. So now that he became stronger, maybe that cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer would no longer be his equal.

But at the same time, a myriad of cold and deadly energies were surrounding Lin Feng, which made his heart grow cold. A huge number of people wanted to kill Lin Feng.

Concerning the twelve other coffins, they were all floating above the yellow sand. They were, as before, silent, which made the crowd feel horribly oppressed.

The unknown was the most frightening thing in the world.

Besides, the person whom Lin Feng had just killed was also terrifying. His body was entirely covered with black chains, which gave off the impression that he was a demon. He looked extremely evil.

At that moment, many people started walking forwards and arrived in front of the people in their coffins. Each and every single one of them looked cold and detached. In that group of people, there was the leader of the Dream Pavilion, Aunt Yun, who had fought against Mister Huo and Meng Qing.

At that moment, she was behind a middle-aged man. That man had an even higher status than her.

“The Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms, you surprisingly rushed over to Celestial River, but this is Xue Yue. You shouldn’t be here.” Said the middle-aged man while looking at the twelve coffins in a cold and detached manner. At the same time, he had immediately revealed their social status as The Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms.

However, many people looked puzzled. They had never heard that name “The Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms.”

“Eeeee, eeee, eeee.....” some sharp whistling sounds spread through the atmosphere. The coffins were moving towards that middle-aged man at the speed of light.

But the man who had just talked looked calm and serene and remained motionless. Some silhouettes flickered behind him and bombarded the atmosphere with their punches. A monstrous exploding sound emerged in the atmosphere. The twelve coffins started to break.

Besides, coming from the interior of the coffins, deathly pale white hands were slowly appearing, grabbing both sides of the coffin. A demonically evil Qi had also enveloped the crowd.

“I know that you purposely like to make a mystery of simple things!” Shouted the middle-aged man. He started walking forward which made the ground vibrate. In a flash, an extremely violent pure Qi emerged from the ground. Yellow sand started rolling above the ground and was moving straight towards the coffins.

“BOOM!”

The twelve coffins were completely crushed. At the same time, the twelve silhouettes appeared floating in the air above the ground. Their bodies were completely tied up by black chains. Just like spiders, they were using their black chains as legs to keep their bodies hovering above the ground.

Besides, these twelve people had a common point. They were nothing but skin and bones, they looked like dried, mummified bodies. They looked terrifying.

When they saw these monsters, many people with a lacking determination let dread invade their hearts. They also didn't feel like trying to steal the ancient cauldron anymore.

These people were terrifying. A simple glance at them was enough to be terrified.

But, as before, many people's eyes were glowing with greed. Some opportunities couldn't be missed, of course, they had to remain vigilant.

However, the middle-aged man of the Dream Pavilion glanced at the crowd and his mouth looked like he was holding back a joke. He then said, sounding cold and detached: "Everybody else, screw off. You cannot rival with the people of the Tian Sha Sect."

"Tian Sha Sect?" Some people were puzzled. They had never heard of the Tian Sha Sect.

However, those who had an advanced cultivation level and a broad knowledge of the continent started shaking when they heard that name.

The Tian Sha Sect... Surprisingly, they were people of the Tian Sha Sect, how terrifying!

When the middle-aged man saw that many people didn't understand what it meant, a mocking expression appeared in his eyes and he said coldly: "Oh my... You've never heard of the Tian

Sha Sect? You're just a bunch of tiny insects, such a group of nobodies..."

"What an arrogant man!" Lin Feng was exasperated when he heard the middle-aged man. Lin Feng had never heard of the Tian Sha Sect either. He didn't know so many things concerning the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

As if the middle-aged man had sensed Lin Feng's feelings, he looked at him and said, while smiling coldly: "You are Lin Feng, right? You dared to throw away the heavenly dragon cauldron instead of handing it over to us, the Cosmic Pavilion. How audacious. Since it's that way, get prepared to stay buried here forever."

"Stay buried here forever?" When Lin Feng could distinctly feel the killing intent. His heart was filled with endless coldness again.

"Oh my god! The Dream Pavilion is a branch of the Cosmic Pavilion!" Shouted a person in the crowd in surprise.

"You people are from the Dragon Mountain Empire!" Said the person again whose pupils shrank while staring at the middle-aged man.

"Surprisingly, you have some knowledge, you are not as moronic as him." Said the man mockingly. Obviously, he was making fun of Lin Feng.

“The Cosmic Pavilion is one of the largest powers of the Dragon Mountain Empire. We have branches everywhere. The Dream Pavilion is just one of them, that’s all. You are just a bunch of nobodies compared to us. Even the Xue Yue Imperial Clan are just a bunch of nobodies to us. As far as the Tian Sha Sect is concerned, they are one of the biggest sects of the Black Feather Empire. You can’t afford to provoke them, therefore, everybody, get the hell out of here.” Said the middle-aged man sounding insufferably arrogant. He gave the impression that he thought that he was a god when in the Xue Yue country, considering everything and everyone beneath him.

Many people could feel his arrogance and thought that it was natural.

Amazingly, they were people from the Cosmic Pavilion from the Dragon Mountain Empire. In Xue Yu, there were thirteen powers, four of them were the empires while nine of them were normal countries. The Dragon Mountain Empire was one of the four empires. However, Xue Yue was just a small country, dependent on the Dragon Mountain Empire. The Cosmic Pavilion was one of the biggest spheres of influence in the empire. Everybody could imagine how strong they were. No wonder that the middle-aged man was so arrogant.

Besides, the Black Feather Empire was also one of the four great empires. They were as strong as the Dragon Mountain Empire. The people in the coffins surprisingly were extremely strong cultivators from the Black Feather Empire and belonged to the Tian Sha Sect.

Many people were starting to move back. These cultivators were from two of the four empires. They were way too strong. Nobody could afford provoking them.

“Weaklings!” Said a voice sounding cold and detached. Everybody was stupefied and then immediately looked at Lin Feng.

“Weaklings, because of one sentence, you are all scared to death and start moving back. Are the sects of all the imperial countries extremely strong, don’t they have weak sects as well? Besides, even if their sects are extremely strong, so what? This is not within their sect, this is Xue Yue. You people are scared of a sect which is in a far away corner of the continent. What’s the point in such weaklings being cultivators?” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. The crowd was shocked, Lin Feng was right. They were in Xue Yue, which is where their sects had power. If the people in front of them stole the treasure and left, who would be able to find it in the gigantic Continent of Nine Clouds?

But they were all terrified, what kind of cultivators were they against?

When Lin Feng thought about that, he looked at the middle-aged man of the Cosmic Pavilion. Lights were flashing in Lin Feng’s eyes. That middle-aged man was so sly. He surprisingly was trying to scare everybody away so that he would be able to get the cauldron for himself.

“Trash is trash.” Said the middle-aged man while smiling coldly. He stopped looking at the crowd and then looked at Lin Feng in a strange way. What a brilliant young man, he knew that the

middle-aged man wanted to focus his energy on killing him which was why he wanted to scare the crowd away without a fight. If all those interested in the ancient cauldron had left, it would have been very dangerous for Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had a different line of thought. If the crowd left, would he still be able to grab the ancient cauldron in the chaos? Of course it would have been impossible! He was facing the Cosmic Pavilion and the Tian Sha Sect.

“Stop your arguing.” Said an abyssal voice at that moment. It amazingly came from one of the people from the Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms.

“Today, all of you will die.” Said a sombre voice. The Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms people started releasing their evil Qi.

In the air, the broken coffins turned into a gray Qi which started to gather around the cultivators, it was extremely cold and sinister.

The gray Qi was getting more and more dense and was vast above the yellow sand. People were suddenly breathless. They saw that the gray Qi which was condensing was gradually transforming into a silhouette, shaped like a person!

Chapter 307: King Class Evil Ectoplasm

When the twelve members of the Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms saw the silhouette slowly form itself above the ground, they respectfully said: “We welcome a King Class Evil Ectoplasm!”

“A King Class Evil Ectoplasm is here, how is that possible?!” Thought the middle-aged man while frowning. The people of the Tian Sha Sect were extremely strict. Besides, the Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms were all above the Xuan Qi layer, they were extremely strong.

The Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms were just stationed in Xue Yue. Even though they weren't as strong as the other Evil Ectoplasms in Black Feather, they were still all at, or above, the second Xuan Qi layer. As far as the King Class was concerned, in Black Feather, in order to be an authentic king class, a cultivator had to be at the Tian Qi layer.

At that moment, the Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms were kneeling down in front of their king. As expected, the corpse which had appeared was at the Tian Qi layer. He had monstrous power and could even destroy the whole country.

“The people of the Tian Sha Sect are so quick!” The middle-aged man said while narrowing his eyes. He was blankly staring at the corpse which had appeared, he was no longer feeling at ease.

Besides, at that moment, the evil Qi finished transforming into a silhouette. Surprisingly, that silhouette was crawling on the

ground. The person raised their head and immediately stood up, tall and erect.

But that body looked like a gray illusion. Besides, it had two black holes instead of eyes. It looked terrifying.

“They are still convinced that we, people of the Tian Sha Sect, accepted the meeting here because we were scared, haha!” Laughed a deep and evil voice, it was coming from the gray silhouette. It looked like an illusion, but his voice sounded very clear and distinct, clearly affecting the other cultivators.

“We’ve come here to kill.” Said the King Class Evil Ectoplasm. The twelve other evil ectoplasms all stood up and an endless amount of chains started to fill the atmosphere. In a flash, many people who didn’t have the time to dodge were tied up in chains. All these people immediately got pulled towards the king.

An evil smile appeared on the king’s mouth. His silhouette flickered and he immediately rushed forward.

“Ahhhhh.....”

A bloodcurdling scream spread through the atmosphere. The King Class Ectoplasms had jumped on that person and sucked all of his pure Qi as well as his blood from his body, until there was nothing left at all. In a flash, that person had turned into a pile of skin and bones. Besides, The image of the king was becoming more lifelike.

“Ahhh, ahhhhh.....”

Horrible shrieks were spreading through the atmosphere, all the people, who were tied up in chains, had their blood and pure Qi sucked from them. Besides, the king's illusion was getting even more real. Some evil Qi spread in the atmosphere.

“He is reincarnating into a new body.” The middle-aged man's pupils shrank. He had suddenly understood. No wonder the king had made it to Celestial River so quickly.

“Stop him. We can't afford to let him regain his body. Right now, he's just a spirit, he's not very strong but if we give him the opportunity to absorb more blood and pure Qi, then he will regain a real body, become a real king class and have the strength at the Tian Qi layer. If that happens, everybody here will die.” said the leader of the Cosmic Pavilion, which made people's heart start pounding. If he regained a real body, he would be at the Tian Qi layer?

If that happened, they would all definitely die. There wouldn't be a single one left.

When Lin Feng heard that, he secretly smiled coldly. That guy had just told the entire crowd to screw off and now that the king class was regaining a real body, he had suddenly drastically changed. He wanted everybody to stay and help stop the king. Why wasn't he going himself?

“Back!” Said Lin Feng. He immediately moved back. If the King

Class Evil Ectoplasm had a chance of regaining his strength, Lin Feng preferred leaving. Losing his life because of the heavenly dragon cauldron was really not worth it.

The twelve evil ectoplasms were attacking at the same time. It seemed like their chains were endless, and that their power was inexhaustible. People were unceasingly being tied up in chains, then dragged towards the king and then had their pure Qi and blood were sucked from their body.

“Don’t think that you can run away! If the king regains a real body as well as his strength of the Tian Qi layer, do you think that you will be able to run away? Now, the only solution is to kill the twelve remaining from The Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms and then immobilize the king. This is the only way for us not to die and even get the heavenly dragon cauldron.” Shouted the middle aged man from the Cosmic Pavilion loudly. His voice was violently resonating in people’s minds. It also seemed like he was, at that moment, realizing that the crowd was adopting a wait-and-see attitude. If he didn’t attack first, there would probably be nobody who would dare to take the initiative.

“Thousand Fist Shadows!” Shouted the man. His body moved swiftly and violently bombarded the atmosphere with his fist, which made the entire atmosphere vibrate. A golden pure Qi transformed into a gigantic hand and rushed through the air towards the evil ectoplasms.

“BOOM!” The pure Qi was striking against the chains, making them vibrate violently and move back. One of the evil ectoplasms, who was too weak, surprisingly couldn’t stand the power from the

pure Qi and his body was sent flying backwards.

The middle aged man of the Cosmic Pavilion had broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer. He was extremely strong.

The Cosmic Pavilion had also dispatched some strong cultivators for the heavenly dragon cauldron.

“Die!” An incredibly sharp energy emerged. A long spear, which looked like a venomous dragon rushed forwards. It immediately moved towards the evil ectoplasm’s chest who had been knocked back. Another one of them had just died!

When the crowd saw that move, the crowd suddenly felt less scared. Indeed, these evil ectoplasms weren’t that strong at all. The evil ectoplasms were only in a small group, if the large group of cultivators all attacked together, how could these evil ectoplasms overpower them? As far as the king was concerned, if they prevented him from absorbing more pure Qi and blood, it wouldn’t be easy for him to become stronger by himself.

“Kill them. Then we will be able to take back the heavenly dragon cauldron. These people are only at the Xuan Qi layer like us, why are you scared?” Shouted the cultivator who had just thrown the spear. He looked majestic and his voice was filled with power.

“Yes, kill them! There are only eleven evil ectoplasms left, that’s all! The king cannot do anything, let’s kill them and take back the heavenly dragon cauldron.” Said another powerful voice which

made people's hearts beat faster. They were starting to feel a rush of fighting spirit.

“Kill them! Get the ancient cauldron!”

“Kill them, if the king becomes stronger, he will kill us all even though we are so many people!”

Many people were saying various things as if they were trying to regain their motivation and speaking like the heavenly dragon cauldron was about to be theirs.

“You all want to die!” Said The King Class Evil Ectoplasm, when he saw that these people wanted to kill him, he released some cold and evil Qi. His body shook and he grabbed two evil ectoplasms. Two horrible shrieks spread through the air and in a flash, the two evil ectoplasms fell dead onto the ground.

When the other evil ectoplasms saw that, their eyes narrowed. Expressions of terror appeared on their faces. The King Class Evil Ectoplasm was planning on absorbing their blood and Qi.

“You, give me your lives.” Said the King Class Evil Ectoplasm. His silhouette transformed into a gray light and streaked through the air towards the evil ectoplasms. All of them were already tied by their own chains, and the chains obeyed the King Class.

At that moment, the crowd was attacking and was about to reach them. The King Class Evil Ectoplasm jumped high into the air. It

was amazing, in a flash, the king was high in the sky.

In the atmosphere, the evil ectoplasms were tied up by their own chains.

An incredible quantity of pure Qi and blood was flowing along these chains and entering the king's body. The king's body looked even more real. His face looked like he was intoxicated with happiness. He had sucked up the pure Qi and blood of ten cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, he was demonic.

When the crowd saw that evil monster in the air, their hearts were pounding. Was the King Class Evil Ectoplasm really going to obtain a real body?

Would they all die?

“ARRRGHHHHHHhhh!” Shouted the king furiously. The infinity of chains were swinging in the atmosphere. The thirteen evil ectoplasms had all died. Only the king class remained, looking majestic in the sky.

“You will all die, I will suck up all your blood and Qi!” Said the king while looking down at the people on the ground. His mouth looked hideous and evil.

“How strong, the King Class Evil Ectoplasm will become real!”

“When the king appears, we will all die.”

Everybody was panic-stricken. Lin Feng was quickly moving back. He had anticipated such incidents occurring. Not only had the Cosmic Pavilion appeared but the Tian Sha Sect of the Black Feather Empire. Even the King Class Evil Ectoplasm had appeared. Lin Feng had never heard about these two spheres of influence from these two different empires.

However, at the moment when Lin Feng was leaving, a sharp Qi emerged. Lin Feng turned around and saw a person who was preventing him from leaving.

Lin Feng was also dumbstruck. That person was the strong cultivator who, a moment ago, had killed the evil ectoplasm with his spear, the one who had been trying to convince everybody to fight against the king class.

Chapter 308: The Impermanence of Life

Lin Feng was fixedly staring at his interlocutor. Lin Feng's eyes were filled with displeasure.

That man had killed an evil ectoplasm with a spear, motivated the crowd to fight against the king, but he was already there and not fighting, besides, he was even preventing him from leaving.

Lin Feng glanced around him and his heart twitched for a second. At that moment, there wasn't only the spear cultivator standing around Lin Feng but seven others as well. They were all wearing black clothes and all had spears in their hands. Even though they weren't releasing any Qi, their silence and coldness were piercing to the bones, which made Lin Feng sense that these eight people were all extremely strong cultivators.

“Let him go.” At that moment, a faint yet firm discernible voice spread through the air. Immediately after, the one who were blocking Lin Feng's way looked at Lin Feng in a respectful way and opened the way, letting Lin Feng leave.

Lin Feng stared straight into the first person's eyes, then he looked towards Celestial River. On the city gate, there was a person wearing a black chang pao, his body and face was completely covered. He looked mystical and mysterious.

At that moment, the person who spoke was calmly leaning against the city wall and lowered his head, almost looking like he was closing his eyes, as if what was happening at that moment had

nothing to do with him.

By carefully observing that man in a black chang pao, Lin Feng realized that the situation was much more complex than he initially believed.

Maybe that king class was an insect to him. Everyone had come for the cauldron, but there was a venomous snake staring at everyone like they were prey.

Of course, he was also looking for the heavenly dragon cauldron.

Lin Feng continued walking on the periphery, but didn't hurry to leave. He was standing on the yellow sand, watching the people fighting.

At that moment, they only saw the king class' body fly through the air and rush towards a small group. Immediately, the small group of cultivators died after having their Qi and blood absorbed.

“We must kill him. If he regains his body, it will be very dangerous, whereas right now we are dealing with his spirit and nothing more. I am sure that if we attack him together, we will definitely kill him.” Shouted the middle-aged man of the Cosmic Pavilion when he noticed that the crowd was becoming distracted and easy targets. However, when he finished talking, he saw a pair of piercingly-cold eyes looking at him. They were piercing him to the bones, making his heartbeat accelerate.

“Die!” Shouted the King Class Evil Ectoplasm furiously. An endless number of chains started moving towards him, making his heart pound brutally. He jumped and a brutal fist moved towards the chain. The pure Qi of the fist attack emitted rumbling noises in the atmosphere.

However, at that moment, many chains silently appeared behind him. In a flash, he turned his head around and his facial expression drastically changed. He couldn't avoid them anymore, it was too late. These chains were controlled by the king's soul. They were moving closer and closer to him, when suddenly, both his hands were tied up by the chains.

“I don't want to die, attack him together!” The middle-aged man furiously shouted, but at that moment, the crowd was dumbstruck. They only saw an evil smile appear on the king's face, before he then threw himself forwards like a predator.

“You've become my dinner!” The King Class Evil Ectoplasm evilly said. He landed on the middle-aged man's body and sucked out his pure Qi and blood.

“Thousand Illusion Disintegration!” The middle-aged man furiously shouted . A deadly strength invaded the atmosphere. The King Class Evil Ectoplasm suddenly looked surprised and was blown backwards.

“BOOM!”

A multitude of chains were broken. At the same time, the middle-

aged man's body also disappeared like dust in the wind.

The king was startled. His Qi was fluctuating, which meant that he had been injured. Thousand Illusion Disintegration! What a bastard!

“Argh!”

The king groaned and continued to move while sucking out the Qi and blood from the people he encountered. At that moment, there weren't that many strong cultivators left. In a flash, there were only a few dozen people left. Besides, the king's Qi was getting more and more powerful.

“Run away! Run Away!” The crowd only had one thought, everyone started trying to escape in every direction. They didn't want the heavenly dragon cauldron anymore.

At that moment, a few silhouettes were running towards Lin Feng.

However, the cultivator who blocked Lin Feng's escape a moment ago, the one with the spear, was still standing there, as motionless as a mountain, as steady as a rock. He looked cold and detached, and his eyes looked sharp.

“Open the way!” Shouted a man while running away like a madman. The spear in the cultivators hand shook and in a flash, some black pure Qi appeared and transformed into a long dragon

which immediately shot towards the man who was trying to run away. In an instant, that cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had died.

“How strong. That spear is monstrously powerful. He is at least as strong as Mister Chi.” Thought Lin Feng, whose heart stopped for a second. These eight people were all at least at the fourth Xuan Qi layer, they were incredibly powerful.

Behind, two people, who were trying to escape, were also approaching the cultivator with the spear. He looked puzzled and then his body slowly became rigid.

These two people were from the Cosmic Pavilion, Lin Feng knew the girl. On that day, when the Aunt Yun had tried to get the ancient cauldron from Lin Feng, that person was there as well, it was Lan Jiao!

Many people of the Cosmic Pavilion had come thinking that they would definitely get the ancient cauldron. Nonetheless, almost all of them had died in Celestial River.

“Those who want to escape, die!” Said the cultivator with the spear sounding cold and detached. He took a huge step forwards. His spear was unceasingly gathering deadly energy. A terrifying pure black Qi emerged in the atmosphere.

He was about to throw his spear.

“Stop!” said a voice coming from the sky, which surprised the

man with the spear. Immediately after, a silhouette fell from the sky, landing by Lan Jiao's side. That person was precisely Lin Feng.

The man with the spear was surprised, and had an extremely cold expression on his face.

“You cannot kill her.” Lin Feng said, sounding indifferent. The man silently put down his spear and immediately turned to Aunt Yun who was also running away. The man was surprisingly listening to Lin Feng and letting Lan Jiao live.

Lin Feng took a deep breath. Before that, Lan Jiao had tried to warn him a few times. Lin Feng appreciated the help she gave him in the past. If he could save her, he wouldn't hesitate.

“Save me.” Said Aunt Yun when she saw the cultivator with the spear was moving towards her. She was looking at Lin Feng with hope in her eyes.

Lin Feng, looking cold and detached, looked at Aunt Yun and said expressionlessly: “Last time, you wanted to kill me, and now you want me to save you?”

Aunt Yun's heart was pounding. Her heart was filled with regret. In her thoughts, there was only one thought: “One careless move and the whole game is lost.”

She perfectly knew what kind of temperament Lin Feng had. He

was stubborn and determined. Why had she tried to steal the cauldron from Lin Feng? She should have thought about the results. She initially just didn't care about gaining Lin Feng's wrath. All she thought was that she could rely on her strength to obtain the cauldron, and that she could kill Lin Feng at any time.

However, in life, everything can quickly change. She hadn't managed to kill Lin Feng when she had had the opportunity and at this moment, because of that, she would lose her own life.

She was going to die because of one wrong move.

The long spear was releasing an incredible deadly energy. Aunt Yun's face was filled with regret and hatred. She closed her eyes and did not feel like resisting. Even if she could resist for a short period of time, the result would be the same. Her death was already sealed. She could get killed here or by the King Class Evil Ectoplasm. She had no way out. Besides, getting killed by a spear was much better than dying after having Qi and blood sucked from the body.

"Aunt Yun!" Shouted Lan Jiao while her eyes were filling with tears. Lin Feng was preventing her from moving to help. She couldn't move from that spot.

Suddenly an unfathomable voice emerged in the air. Lin Feng dragged Lan Jiao backwards. At that moment, he saw many people getting killed either by the King Class Evil Ectoplasm or by the spears from the cultivators blocking peoples retreat.

At that moment, apart from Lin Feng, his friends and the eight cultivators with spears, everyone had died. Of course, there was also the mysterious person leaning against the city wall.

“Little brat, you are really audacious.” The King Class Evil Ectoplasm said while evilly staring at Lin Feng, which made a cold light flash through Lin Feng’s eyes.

“Haven’t you noticed that they are waiting for you?” Lin Feng said while pointing at the eight cultivators in black clothes. Lin Feng sounded cold and detached. He hadn’t left because he had realized that these eight people as well as the person leaning against the city wall had come to kill the King Class Evil Ectoplasm. They had prepared everything earlier. Perhaps it was all part of their plan.

The King Class Evil Ectoplasm wasn’t stupid. He had also noticed these things. He then evilly stared at the eight cultivators with the spears and said coldly: “You are quite strong but a moment ago, I killed some people who were much stronger than you. How come you think that you can be so audacious?”

“Because of me!” Said a deep voice interrupting. The mysterious person leaning against the city wall slowly started moving towards them. He still hadn’t raised his head and was still looking at the ground. In a flash, he had crossed a hundred meters and arrived in front of the King Class Evil Ectoplasm.

“This is Xue Yue. Since the evil cultivators of the Tian Sha Sect have come here, there is no need for you to leave anymore.” Said a cold voice coming from one cultivator in a black chang pao.

Immediately after that person raised his head, a bright and resplendent light emerged and flashed, it was dazzling to the eyes!

Chapter 309: The Sealed Doors!

“How impudent. I would have never thought that in a tiny little country such as Xue Yue, someone would ever dare talk to me like that.” Said the King Class Evil Ectoplasm. He was drifting in the air and was releasing some evil Qi.

“However, I would like to know who you are.” Said the King Class Evil Ectoplasm and at that moment, an endless amount of chains moved towards the man in the black chang pao as well as the eight cultivators with their spears.

However, at that moment, pure Qi was emerging out of these eight cultivators’ spears and bombarded the atmosphere.

“Die!” They shouted furiously. The long spears started crossing the sky at the same time. Eight dragons made of pure Qi were crossing the atmosphere. Their protruding teeth were terrifying. Rumbling sounds spread in the atmosphere and the chains started shaking violently, to the extent that a certain number of them even broke into a thousand pieces.

Besides, at the same time, the mystical cultivator in the black chang pao jumped into the air. He moved his hands and suddenly, a terrifying vortex appeared in the air.

Behind the King Class Evil Ectoplasm appeared a gigantic door. It was gigantic. It looked like a black hole made of deadly Qi. It was releasing a terrifying Qi.

Sharp lights were flashing in Lin Feng's eyes. That was a blood spirit! It was the Sealed Doors!

“That person belongs to the Imperial Clan.” Thought Lin Feng while his heartbeat started accelerating. He had already seen that deadly black Qi. Duan Feng had already used it but Duan Feng's Qi was far from being as frightening and monstrous.

“Duan Clan!” Shouted the king, whose facial expression drastically changed.

It seemed like he wanted to say something else but the sealed door was moving towards quicker and quicker.

“New Body Reincarnation is just a lower demonic skill, that's all. It relies on the strength of the soul, it is no match when facing the sealed doors of my blood spirit.” Shouted the man in the black clothes. Each sound in the atmosphere was followed by the appearance of a sealed door. In a flash, the King Class Evil Ectoplasm was surrounded by five sealed doors, he was confined in the middle of all the sealed doors.

A terrifying Qi was emerging from these sealed doors. That cultivator in black clothes looked as cold and detached as before. He then said, sounding ice-cold: “Sealed Soul!”

When he finished talking, the five sealed doors all transformed into the same character: “Seal” and immediately crashed into the king's body.

“BOOM!!” A gigantic rumbling noise spread in the air. The king’s muscles were ripped apart. A black illusion appeared, however, each “seal” would further seal his soul.

“How terrifying.” Lin Feng’s eyes were flashing. These sealed doors were extremely strong.

Besides, it seemed like the sealed doors had extremely strong effects on the King Class Evil Ectoplasm, it was restricting his New Body Reincarnation skill, otherwise, the cultivator in the black chang pao wouldn’t have been his opponent.

As expected, it was all under control. It was planned already on how to kill the King Class Evil Ectoplasm. Maybe the one who made the plan for everybody to meet outside of Celestial River was the cultivator in the black chang pao.

A light flashed and a huge umbrella emerged from the mystical cultivator’s hands. The umbrella opened itself but in the middle of it, there was an incredible golden light and some terrifying Qi.

“Go!” Shouted the mystical cultivator coldly. The golden umbrella left his hands and rushed towards the king’s soul at full speed. It immediately crashed into his soul.

“Close!” Shouted the cultivator. The umbrella then slowly closed itself. A moment later, the terrifying Qi disappeared without trace and the seals vanished from the atmosphere as well.

In the atmosphere, there was an endless stream of powerless chains falling from the sky. The king's soul had disappeared.

When Lin Feng saw the umbrella go back into the cultivator's hands, he felt a bit agitated. The soul had disappeared. That cultivator in black clothes had managed to deal with the king's soul.

A light flashed and the umbrella disappeared, the cultivator put it back into the Na stone of his ring.

He slowly descended from the sky onto the ground and said, sounding cold and detached: "If you see other spies from other countries, you know what to do."

When he finished talking, the eight cultivators' silhouettes flickered. In a flash, they disappeared and started searching the outskirts.

Besides, at the same time, the cultivator in the black chang pao slowly turned around, his head was still a bit low, he then said to Lin Feng: "Initially, I was going to follow you to get it back, but you didn't leave, take it out now."

When he said that, Lin Feng was stupefied.

Lin Feng remained silent and that cultivator in black spoke again: "Should I remind you that you have the heavenly dragon cauldron in your possession?"

“As expected.”

Lin Feng was stupefied. What an acute perception! Lin Feng thought that nobody knew about it. He hadn't thought that his interlocutor would find it out.

The Thirteen Evil Ectoplasms had stolen the heavenly dragon cauldron, however, at the moment when the king absorbed them, the ancient cauldron hadn't appeared, even when the king died, the cauldron hadn't appeared either. That was only because the evil ectoplasm who attacked Lin Feng was the one with the cauldron and when Lin Feng had killed him, he immediately put the cauldron into the Na stone of his ring.

However, the entire crowd had only seen the brilliance of Lin Feng's sword. They hadn't seen the small movement of taking the cauldron. That was also the reason why the King Class Evil Ectoplasm, a moment before, had said that Lin Feng was audacious.

Lin Feng smiled and took out a cauldron and left it on the ground. It was the heavenly dragon cauldron.

“You can leave.” Said the cultivator in black while giving a warm smile and picking up the cauldron. Lin Feng nodded indifferently, turned around and immediately started leaving.

At that moment, the eight cultivators with their spears returned to the cultivator in black. They had accomplished their mission.

Lin Feng entered Celestial River and looked at the ground filled with corpses. It was a river of blood. As before, blood was still flowing on the ground. Coldness invaded Lin Feng's heart.

As expected, these eight cultivators with their spears had killed every single witness and spy that was hiding in the distance. Nobody knew what had happened apart from the cultivator in black and the eight cultivators themselves, as well as Lin Feng and his friends.

That bloodbath, however, was probably also a warning to Lin Feng and the others.

“Warm smile and easy to talk with?” Thought Lin Feng while smiling coldly. If it was the emotionless monarch or brutal and unruly prince, would that care about a few trivial lives of Lin Feng and his friends.

Some of the cultivators from the Duan Clan were warm and friendly though, they were easy to speak with.

“Your Highness, next time you want something, just tell me.” Said Lin Feng from the distance, which reached the ears of the other cultivators. The cultivator in the black chang pao was a bit surprised.

Immediately after, he slowly raised his head and looked at Lin Feng's silhouette on the horizon. He didn't look cold and detached anymore, on the contrary, he suddenly looked warm and friendly.

Considering how quick-witted Lin Feng was, he had guessed that Lin Feng would have an idea of his identity, but he didn't expect him to break the silence and admit it.

Duan Wu Ya smiled and didn't think about it anymore. He then said: "Lin Feng, come back to the Imperial City soon. The Great Competition of Xue Yu will start soon. We have to select the nations young geniuses. Those who are going to join it are, for example, the eight high-officials. Lin Feng, with your natural talent, you could also participate in the competition. Besides, nowadays, the situation between the thirteen countries of Xue Yu is not so peaceful anymore."

"Lin Feng will remember Your Highness' words." Replied a voice from far away on the horizon. Immediately after, Lin Feng's silhouette gradually disappeared from Duan Wu Ya's vision.

After Lin Feng left, Duan Wu Ya glanced at all the corpses and immediately smiled.

"We have gained so much this time."

The Heavenly Dragon Cauldron was a great reward. Even though it was a damaged cauldron, it was still priceless. Besides, he had also trapped the king's soul which was priceless as well.

When Duan Wu Ya thought about these things, he looked delighted.

Besides, many of his enemies and other countries' spies had died as well.

“Let's go!” Said Duan Wu Ya sounding cold and detached. He then started moving at full speed, followed by his companions. They went back to the Imperial City.

The nine silhouettes flickered and in a flash, they had almost safely left Celestial River. However, at that moment, Duan Wu Ya stopped.

He wasn't the only one. The eight other cultivators stopped as well. They were all looking in one direction.

They were looking at the Celestial River city gate where Duan Wu Ya had been standing before. At that moment, there was a silhouette. That person's back was facing Duan Wu Ya and the others. That person was carrying an ancient sword and his chang pao was fluttering in the wind.

His long hair was following the wind and shining in the sun. That person looked natural and unrestrained, but also a bit lonely!

Chapter 310: The Emotionless Sword

That natural and unrestrained yet lonely looking silhouette seemed like he had come from ancient times, no one could sense his movements, as if he had always been there.

Duan Wu Ya smiled and uncovered his face after which his warm and friendly looking face appeared, as well as his smile.

He slightly bowed and said, while looking at that person's back: "Duan Wu Ya salutes Wu Qing!"

If other people had seen Duan Wu Ya bow in front of someone else, they would have been extraordinarily surprised.

Duan Wu Ya was a prince in Xue Yue. He was extremely strong and was the fourth ranked high-official. He rarely engaged in battles. Some people even conjectured that he was going to become the third ranked soon. People whom he respected to such a degree were extremely rare.

However, that lonely silhouette was one of them.

Zhuge Wu Qing could slice people into pieces with cruel sword skills. At fifteen years old, Wu Qing learnt how to control sword force, sword based energy attacks at eighteen, sword fusion at twenty one, and had become a true sword cultivator at twenty four.

However, even though the man didn't need a sword, he was still carrying an ancient sword on his back. That person's hands were much sharper than any sword could ever be. His sword attacks were expressionless, thus, people gave him the title, the Emotionless Sword.

Zhuge Wu Qing was the best sword cultivator of the entire Xue Yue Country.

Duan Wu Ya could still only see Zhuge Wu Qing's back, his clothes were fluttering in the wind. Wu Qing then said, sounding indifferent: "Second prince, you should understand why I have come here."

Duan Wu Ya smiled wryly. Wu Qing the Emotionless Sword, after obtaining his sword, hadn't returned to the Imperial City and was not planning on going back, there was only one reason he was here.

In the entire universe, there was only one person who could make a request of him in the Imperial City.

Duan Wu Ya perfectly understood why Wu Qing had come.

"Senior Wu Qing, I have come all the way from the Imperial City, it was a very long journey....."

"Stop!" Shouted Wu Qing interrupting Duan Wu Ya, he sounded ice-cold. There wasn't the least bit of warmth in his voice.

Duan Wu Ya smiled wryly. He hadn't thought that things would turn out this way.

"I understand." Said Duan Wu Ya. A light flashed and the Heavenly Dragon Cauldron appeared. His long sleeves fluttered and immediately, the ancient cauldron flew through the air to Wu Qing.

"Duan Wu Ya has delivered the ancient cauldron!" Said Duan Wu Ya who understood Wu Qing. His emotionless sword could split apart anybody, including him, Duan Wu Ya.

The ancient cauldron flew towards Wu Qing, his sleeve fluttered and immediately, it disappeared. He had received it, looking absolutely cold and detached, it didn't seem to affect him at all.

"Thank you second prince for having helped me achieve my aim." When he finished talking, Wu Qing's silhouette flickered and, just like a sword he pierced the atmosphere. In the air, there was just the glow of a sword as he disappeared into thin air.

Even though he had thanked Duan Wu Ya, he hadn't sounded grateful at all. It was just a way to remain courteous, nothing more.

It was just like when Duan Wu Ya had wanted the cauldron, Lin Feng had no choice in the matter. If he didn't want to give it, the cauldron would still belong to the other party.

Asking and thanking were just formalities.

Duan Wu Ya looked at that silhouette disappearing in the horizon and smiled wryly. If he had known earlier that things would happen that way, he wouldn't have risked offending Lin Feng.

Wu Qing, extraordinarily, had left his mountain to obtain the cauldron!

“Let's go back.” Said Duan Wu Ya. The wry smile on his face gradually switched back to a warm and tender facial expression. He had lost the ancient cauldron but it didn't matter. Wasn't it a good thing that Wu Qing had appeared? They were on the same side.

.....

Lin Feng knew nothing about what happened after he left. He had gone back to Mister Huo's residence. He looked at the two old men and said: “Mister Huo, Mister Chi, I have to go back to Yangzhou City. Mister Huo, Mister Chi, thank you for having taken care of me in Celestial River for this short period of time.”

Mister Huo and Mister Chi glanced at each other and immediately smiled, they then said to Lin Feng: “Lin Feng, Mister Chi and I have already made up our mind, we want to follow you.”

“Follow me!” Lin Feng's pupils shrank. Mister Huo and Mister

Chi were cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. One of them was at the third Ling Qi layer while the other one was at the fourth Xuan Qi layer. They were much stronger than him. Surprisingly, they wanted to follow him.

“Indeed, follow you. Lin Feng, you’re not going to leave behind two old men like us, right?” Said Mister Chi while giving an honest smile.

Lin Feng was stupefied and then immediately smiled as well.

“Since Mister Chi and Mister Huo are willing to follow me, I will not refuse. Having you two on my side would make it much safer!” Said Lin Feng while smiling. He obviously knew what the two old men thought. Mister Chi and Mister Huo had faith in his potential and his character. Lin Feng was, of course, not going to refuse their help.

At least, in the previous days, the old men had helped him to an incredible degree. If he became extremely strong in the future, he would not leave them behind.

Lan Jiao, who was there as well, was surprised. She was looking at Lin Feng with twinkling eyes.

Lin Feng had extremely high natural talent, but in the end, he was still a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer. Even though he was far from being able to compete with Mister Chi or Mister Huo, these two old men were still willing to follow him.

Lin Feng's position in the hearts of the two old men was obvious, it was very high. They were willing to follow him because they knew that he was going to become extremely strong someday and would return the favour.

Unfortunately, the people of the Dream Pavilion could have been friends with Lin Feng as well. Besides, at the beginning, Aunt Yun also wanted to match Lin Feng and Lan Jiao, but in the end, because of the ancient cauldron, they had made him their enemy.

Aunt Yun had threatened Lin Feng. She wanted him to hand over the ancient cauldron but Lin Feng refused. Aunt Yun thus wanted to kill him. But now, all the strong cultivators of the Cosmic Pavilion in Celestial River were killed. Lan Jiao was the only one left and this was only because Lin Feng had saved her.

She had the feeling that everything was a dream. She had been in the Dream Pavilion for a year and it had been completely destroyed.

“Who?” At that moment, Lin Feng was surprised. Immediately after, he immediately left.

At the same time, Mister Huo and Mister Chi also moved towards the exit, extremely quickly.

However, at the moment when they arrived outside, they saw a silhouette in the distance. That person had an ancient sword on his back. That person's sword Qi disappeared and their silhouette vanished as well.

There was only a white sword Qi trail left in the atmosphere. It looked amazing.

“How strong.” Said Mister Huo when he saw the trail left in the air. He was astonished. How monstrously powerful! That silhouette had moved through the sky like a meteor. He was extremely quick and had left a trail through the sky as if it was cut by a sword.

“How strong. Maybe he’s a high level cultivator of Xuan Qi layer.” Whispered Mister Chi. He meant that the cultivator had possibly broken through to the seventh, eighth or ninth Xuan Qi layer.

That person surprisingly had silently appeared outside of Mister Huo’s residence and then in a flash, disappeared again.

“LOOK!” Shouted Mister Huo gasping with astonishment. Immediately, they looked at the ground. There was an ancient cauldron! It was peacefully lying on the ground.

“Boom!”

Their hearts were pounding, surprisingly, the ancient cauldron was there!

Lin Feng had handed the Heavenly Dragon Cauldron over to Duan Wu Ya a moment before and now it was appearing in front of

them once again.”

“He came to give us the cauldron!” They thought while looking at the vanishing silhouette in the distance. That strong cultivator had come to give them the cauldron?

Besides, the fact that the cauldron was suddenly appearing again, it meant that it had been taken back from Duan Wu Ya.

Lin Feng and the others were filled with doubts and suspicions. They didn’t understand why the strong cultivator would have seized the cauldron and gave it back to them.

“Lin Feng, hurry up and take the cauldron!” Said Mister Huo. Lin Feng slightly nodded, his silhouette flickered, he grabbed the cauldron and put it in the Na stone of his ring. Immediately after, he returned to his original position.

“Lin Feng, do you know that person?” Asked Mister Huo.

Lin Feng’s eyes flashed and he shook his head. Amongst the people he knew, the only one who could be that strong was Yan Yu Ping Sheng but that was definitely not him.

But, why had he given him the cauldron?

“This is way too strange.” Said Mister Huo while frowning. He didn’t understand. First, Lin Feng had the cauldron, then many groups stole it from him and were fighting over it, but in the end,

it had returned to Lin Feng's hands, that person had come to give it to Lin Feng, but Lin Feng didn't know why.

"Lin Feng, could it be one of your parents' friends?" Asked Mister Chi. He then saw Lin Feng's eyes flash.

Immediately after, Lin Feng shook his head. His father, Lin Hai probably didn't have such strong friends. Besides, he had never seen his mother.

"Impossible." Said Lin Feng.

"What's the point in thinking so much? If the other person wanted to be recognized, they wouldn't have left in a flash. If that person doesn't want to show themselves, what's the point in trying to figure it out. You will find it out when they want you to know." Said Lan Jiao. Lin Feng slightly nodded. Indeed, since the person had handed the cauldron over and left, it was because that person didn't want them to know their identity. Was thinking so much over it really necessary?

Lin Feng had the cauldron, that was the most important thing.

"Maybe we will have the opportunity to find it out who that was in the future." Thought Lin Feng.

Chapter 311: The Request

Yangzhou City was growing. At the gate, the guards looked majestic and ice cold. Outside of the city, in front of the gate, there were two Chi Xie armored horses looking at the sky and neighing.

Beside these two horses, there were two bronze statues, they looked alive. One of them was the creator of the Chi Xie armored horses, Liu Cang Lan.

Liu Cang Lan looked a bit strict with a soft touch. There was also a similar Qi around the statue. Surprisingly, on that statue, there was a Qi similar to Liu Cang Lan's Qi which made the statue even more lifelike.

The other statue was the representation of a young man. That young man looked calm, serene and handsome. That statue looked alive. His eyes were closed and he had a meaningful expression. Some arrogance was also emanating from the statue. That young man looked heroic, natural and unrestrained. That young man was the officer of the Chi Xie army, the Marquis of Yangzhou City, also known as the Chi Xie Marquis.

These two statues were commemorative monuments. They were monuments to the powerful commanders, as if Yangzhou City would always be protected by them.

Outside of the city, many people were paying homage to these statues. Liu Cang Lan the Divine Arrow was considered as a hero by many people. He was a hero who had nearly been killed by the

Imperial Family. Life had been truly cruel to him.

This was not a good time to be a hero. Only those who had an incredible strength could scare their enemies away, especially if the enemy was the Imperial Family.

People in Yangzhou City were chatting and laughing. It seemed like they were all in a good mood.

After Lin Feng had become the Marquis of Yangzhou City, the city had dramatically increased in size. Majestic cultivation buildings had been erected across the city. For example, the entrance into the city also looked imposing, especially since all the guards were Chi Xie troops. Their watchful eyes like gods looking down on mortals.

At that moment, Yangzhou City had indubitably become an adequate place for a marquis to live, it had become a place of growing influence.

After the army of Chi Xie troops came to Yangzhou City, cultivation had become one of the core principles of the city. Therefore, people's cultivation level was also becoming better each day. They had all persistently started practicing cultivation. They also hoped that someday, they would be able to reach the sky, become a marquis and command people around them. That sort of culture and atmosphere attracted people from all the neighbouring regions, many people were moving to Yangzhou City each day.

“Eeee....” A gigantic eagle shrieked in the distance which made

all the people, who had gathered in front of the city gate, gaze into the distance.

They only saw a black dot on the horizon. It was coming towards them at full speed. It looked clearer and clearer with each second.

“It’s a ferocious beast!”

When the crowd saw the shape in the sky, their bodies went rigid. It was a ferocious beast and it was crying out. Sharp murderous lights were flashing through its eyes. It was releasing a bestial Qi. Its huge wings were moving in the air and each time they moved, they created a hurricane like wind. At the same time, in one breath, that beast could cross a distance of a thousand meters. It was a bird of prey.

Besides, what astonished people the most was that two silhouettes were standing on the back of that ferocious beast. An extremely strong wind was blowing around them which made their clothes and long hair flutter in the wind. They looked calm and unrestrained.

There was a young woman and a young man. The young man was handsome, his figure seemed slender and ladylike. His arrogant looking eyes also contained a cold indifference. He had a strange expression in his eyes.

Concerning that girl, she was also very beautiful. She also looked insufferably arrogant as if she was a princess. She looked like she had an incredibly high social status.

“Brother, this is Yangzhou City!” Said that girl indifferently. Her soft voice contained some arrogance as well.

“Indeed, it is Yangzhou City.” Nodded the young man.

“My teacher told me that recently, a young prodigy has appeared in Xue Yue. His name is Lin Feng, he is younger than you. Nowadays, he has already become the marquis of Yangzhou City and the entire city worships him. You see these two statues, the one that represents a young man must be Lin Feng!” Said the young girl while pointing at Lin Feng’s statue. She sounded cold and indifferent. The young man seemed surprised and a sharp and bestial light flashed in his eyes.

“Hmph, marquis... it’s just a trivial title, even if Xue Yue wanted to give me that title, I would refuse it with disdain. Besides, concerning the genius your teacher told you about, he has only broken through too the seventh Ling Qi layer. In my eyes, he is a nobody, I can kill him in one strike.” The young man was insufferably arrogant and megalomaniac.

When the young woman heard him, she laughed. People all reacted differently.

“Of course, it is unlikely that he can compete with you. You just have to understand that our teacher is over 150 years old. However, he has only accepted us as his students, which means that your strength and natural talent is higher than that of the lower ranked high officials. Concerning those at the top of the

rankings, you will soon be stronger than even them.”

“Obviously.” Replied the young man sounding indifferent, as if fate was completely under his control: “The Great Competition of Xue Yu will start soon. The best cultivators of Xue Yue are all going to the Imperial City to practice and get prepared, with the intention to fully display their abilities. They want to show that they have the required potential to gain a place in the competition. That is precisely why our teacher has made us come to gain some experience. He obviously trusts us. This time, the ranking of the eight high officials will definitely undergo some changes.” While talking, arrogance was flashing in the young man’s eyes. In his opinion, no matter how strong the high official at the bottom of the rankings was, he was going to replace them.

“This is obvious. Even though Xue Yue cannot compete with the empires, it still counts as a vast country where a myriad of strong cultivators are hiding. Thus, in the past years, many strong cultivators must have been practicing hard. All these geniuses will probably want to join the Xue Yu Great Competition and try to claim first place.” Said the young woman while nodding. At that moment, they had already arrived outside of Yangzhou City and were still in the air, they were looking down at the ground.

“Could that Lin Feng be strong enough to become one of the eight high officials?”

“Why are you mentioning him and me in the same breath!” Said the young man with a harsh look on his face. He looked annoyed. The young woman had compared him to Lin Feng a few times and that made him feel uncomfortable.

“Black Eagle, go down!” Said the young man in an ice cold tone. Immediately after, the eagle started swooping down which made a smile appear on the girl’s face. She liked how arrogant the young man was. It aroused her enthusiasm.

When the people outside of Yangzhou City saw that ferocious beast swoop towards them, their hearts twitched. How scary!

While the eagle was still in the sky, they hadn’t noticed much about it but now that it was diving, they realized how gigantic it was. It’s two gigantic wings were creating such a strong wind that the crowd was being blown backwards.

When the Chi Xie troops, who were standing on the city gate, saw that eagle swoop in the direction of the statue, their facial expressions drastically changed, even though it was scary, they couldn’t tolerate such blasphemy.

“Stop!” Shouted the Chi Xie troops at the city gate with furious roars, they immediately threw themselves in the direction of the eagle, which made the crowd hold their breath. The Chi Xie troops definitely deserved their reputation as being elite troops of Xue Yue, they were absolutely fearless.

“Die!” Shouted the young man. A sharp light streaked through the sky like a meteor towards the Chi Xie troops who were in the air, which made them start shaking. An explosion sound spread in the atmosphere and blood appeared. Their bodies had been cut into two pieces and filled the atmosphere with blood. People in the

crowd started screeching. That young man was extremely dangerous!

“BOOM! BOOM!” Two more explosion sounds spread in the atmosphere. Liu Cang Lan and Lin Feng’s statues exploded into a thousand pieces.

A whistling sound spread in the air. Another strong wind started blowing on the crowd which made them lose balance and fall down. That eagle was flying into the air again. It was flying away from the countless Chi Xie troops who were unceasingly rushing out of the city to do battle.

“My name is Ling Tian! Tell Lin Feng that if he wants to get his revenge, he can come and find me in the Imperial City.” Said Ling Tian, whose insufferably arrogant voice fell down from the heavens, it made people’s hearts race. The eagle flapped its wings even faster and the black dot in the sky vanished.

“How powerful! That eagle must be a Xuan level beast!” The crowd was looking at the gradually disappearing silhouette, their hearts were trembling. His name was... Ling Tian.

At the same time, when the Chi Xie troops who had rushed over saw the corpses on the ground and the wrecked statue, hideous expressions appeared on their faces which were filled with hatred. It seemed like Ling Tian had just created thousands of new enemies.

At that moment, in the distance on an ancient road, a few horses

could be seen, they were galloping at full speed raising a cloud of dust behind them.

However, all the people riding these horses looked tense. These people were Lin Feng and the others. Besides, a moment before, they had heard the young man's arrogant words. But, they didn't know what was going on in Yangzhou City.

Their horses started galloping even faster towards the city.

“Lin Feng, a moment ago, that beast was a Xuan level beast.” Said Mister Huo. The eagle had flown above their heads so they had obviously seen it too.

Lin Feng remained silent. A short time after, they were almost at the gate of Yangzhou City.

“It's our officer, Officer Lin Feng is back!”

Outside of Yangzhou City, some people had noticed Lin Feng in the distance, they were surprised.

In a flash, Lin Feng had arrived at the gate, when he saw dozens of Chi Xie corpses on the ground, his facial expression drastically changed.

“Lin Tian!”

Lin Feng raised his head to look at the sky where the eagle had disappeared, and his face was filled with killing intent!

Chapter 312: Ambitious Goals!

“Imperial City!” Whispered Lin Feng. He didn’t know Ling Tian at all. Besides, when Lin Feng was in the Imperial City, he had also never heard that name.

But Ling Tian had come to Yangzhou City make a show of his strength, he had shown how powerful he was. He had even killed a group of Chi Xie troops and had left after leaving a message for Lin Feng. He said if Lin Feng wanted to get his revenge, he could go to the Imperial City and find him.

For him, life had no value. In his eyes, people and beasts were just lambs to the slaughter. In order to prove how strong he was, he didn’t hesitate to kill those in his way.

“I will make you regret this.” Said Lin Feng sounding ice-cold. He was going to leave for the Imperial City very quickly.

Duan Wu Ya had said that the Xue Yu Great Competition was approaching. Those days in the Xue Yue country. Some geniuses were on the rise, that was why Ling Tian was going to the Imperial City as well. Besides perhaps there would be many people like Ling Tian appearing to participate in the competition.

“Officer!” Saluted the Chi Xie troops, their voices showed that they were furious. Their faces were red with anger and were filled with murderous intentions.

“Bury them properly, I will head to the Imperial City.” Said Lin

Feng sounding detached. These people were all biting their lips, their faces were filled with hatred, they slowly nodded.

Immediately after, they picked up the dismembered body parts and left to bury them.

In the distance, people were whispering all sorts of things. Yangzhou city cultivators were much too weak. Cultivators of the Ling Qi layer were considered as extremely strong in Yangzhou City, especially amongst young people. They were even considered as incredible geniuses. However, when they saw that extremely strong and terrifying young man riding his eagle, people were thinking that his cultivation level had exceeded the Ling Qi layer already.

That terrifying genius gave people the feeling that they were way too inferior in comparison. They had just witnessed a strength which they had never even imagined was possible.

They had the same experience with Lin Feng, he was also extremely strong.

When they saw that handsome young man on his horse, the crowd started wondering what their officer's cultivation level was. In comparison with the insufferably arrogant young man, who would win?

Lin Feng obviously wasn't going to have such thoughts. He and his friends were galloping at full speed towards the interior of Yangzhou City.

The seat of the government was much bigger than in the past. Inside, it looked like a huge fortress, it was gigantic. Besides, it also looked very dangerous.

At that moment, Feng Yu Han, Lei Qing Tian and the other officers were greeting Lin Feng. When they saw the people who were with Lin Feng, their eyes started to fill with admiration.

Meng Qing was so holy and pure, just like an ice goddess. Duan Xin Ye was precious and beautiful, she was the princess of Xue Yue, besides, there was also the Fei Fei who was voluptuous and beautiful. At that moment, two new beautiful women had appeared with Lin Feng, the first one was Lan Jiao while the other girl seemed very pure, she was frozen in ice and only her beautiful features could be seen through the ice. She looked calm and peaceful. There was a resplendent smile on her face. She looked as if she was sleeping inside the ice. Besides, she was so beautiful that she looked like she was born from a dream.

Apart from Ba Dao and these girls, the three officers were particularly surprised when they saw the two old men. Even though they hadn't released the slightest bit of Qi, they could see in the old men's eyes that they were extremely profound.

they could possibly be cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer.

Even Lin Feng seemed different. The expression in his eyes looked even more profound, and he looked more mature.

It seemed like Lin Feng had benefitted a lot from his trip to Celestial River and gained a lot of valuable experience.

“Uncle Ren, Uncle Feng, Uncle Lei, this is Mister Huo and this is Mister Chi. Both of them have already broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.” Said Lin Feng introducing the two old men to the three officers, which shocked them. As expected, they had guessed right. They were both cultivators at the Xuan Qi layer.

“Mister Huo, Mister Chi.” Saluted the three officers politely. Lin Feng had brought people back with him and on top of that they were at the Xuan Qi layer, the three officers had to show them respect.

“Pleased to meet you.” Mister Chi and Mister Huo slightly nodded and greeted the officers back.

“Come with me.” Said Lin Feng while galloping forwards. They quickly arrived in a meeting room.

Lin Feng asked Meng Qing and Lan Jiao to go and put Yun Xi in a calm and tranquil place while Ba Dao also left. Only Lin Feng, the two old men and the three officers were left.

“Mister Huo, Mister Chi, we are in Yangzhou City which is my fief. It is thus under my direct control. The government seat is my residence.” Explained Lin Feng to the two old men briefly. Immediately after, he continued: “But I will not always stay in Yangzhou City. This time, I came back for a short stop and then I will go to the Imperial City.”

“We’ll come with you.” Said Mister Huo which made Lin Feng shake his head. He already had other plans for them.

Duan Wu Ya and Ling Tian’s displays of power were signs to remind him that there were still many strong young prodigies in Xue Yue. He had to push himself to the limit and practice, he had to become stronger.

If Mister Huo and Mister Chi followed him, they would always be there to protect him, but Lin Feng thought that Meng Qing’s presence was already enough. He couldn’t rely on the support of too many strong cultivators if he wanted to become stronger. He could only become stronger on his own. That would be the only way for him to reach the sky. Besides, if he had been much stronger, the deaths that had occurred earlier that day would have never come about.

Besides, he also needed Mister Chi and Mister Huo to stay in Yangzhou City for another reason.

“Mister Huo, Mister Chi, My Chi Xie troops are stationed in Yangzhou City. They are my elite soldiers. They have all broken through to the Ling Qi layer but I still think that it will not be enough. I need them to constantly become stronger. I actually went to Celestial River because of them.” Said Lin Feng to the two old men and continued: “I need them to become monstrously strong. Giving them the pills we have already concocted will help, but it’s still not enough. I hope that you two can stay in Yangzhou City and help me achieve my goal.”

Mister Huo and Mister Chi frowned and immediately said: “Do you want us to concoct even more pills for them to improve their cultivation?”

“That is one of the tasks I would require from you. Besides, I hope that your presence can motivate them and you could also assist my three officers in creating a real elite army. Of course, if you two have particular requests and needs. For example if you need some spiritual herbs, you can always send out the army to go and collect herbs for you. It is also good for their cultivation practice to be sent on adventures.” Said Lin Feng sounding respectful. Even though these Chi Xie troops were already elite troops, Lin Feng still thought that it wasn’t enough. That kind of strength wasn’t monstrous. They were a merely a mortal army and he needed an army that would soar into the clouds.

The old men’s eyes were sparkling. At the same time, Ren Qing Kuang and the two other officers also had sparkling eyes. These two old cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer seemed to know a lot about alchemy.

“Alright, Lin Feng, since we came with you, we will listen to everything you say.” Said Mister Chi while nodding.

“Indeed. You decide. We will do our best to help you achieve your goals.” Said Mister Huo immediately after. Since they had already decided to follow Lin Feng, they obviously had to put aside their pride as cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and listen to Lin Feng. Otherwise, following him wouldn’t provide any benefits to him.

“Thank you, both of you.” Said Lin Feng while nodding.

Immediately after, he looked at the three officers and said: “Mister Huo and Mister Chi are at the third and fourth Xuan Qi layer, they are extremely strong and on top of that, they have extraordinary alchemy knowledge. From today, you will do your best to work with them. If they have any request, you must do your best to fulfil it.”

They were both advanced Xuan Qi layer cultivators, besides they were also amazing alchemists!

Ren Qing Kuang and the two other officers were dumbstruck. How powerful! Such strong cultivators had surprisingly decided to follow Lin Feng. Obviously, the officers were right in following Lin Feng.

“Alright.” Said the three officers while nodding. Two alchemists were there to assist them, they were of course satisfied with that.

“Uncle Ren, in the stone of that ring, there are a hundred and twenty thousand pills, spiritual sanguine pills, pure earth pills, vitality pills and red sun pills. If these four pills are taken at the same time, people under the sixth Ling Qi layer will instantly breakthrough to the next layer, they may even have multiple breakthroughs. Even cultivators of the seventh and eighth Ling Qi layer can expect a breakthrough when consuming these pills. Please take care of them.” Said Lin Feng while handing a ring to Ren Qing Kuang which made his heart start to violently pound.

A hundred and twenty thousand pills, four different pills which when used together, could make a cultivator instantly breakthrough... That was enough to make thirty thousand

cultivators break through to the next layer, in a short period of time. That was terrifying. Even though he had been on the battlefield for many years and could control his emotions, at that moment it was difficult for him not to express his astonishment. At that moment, his heart was pounding.

“Take it.” Said Lin Feng while putting the ring in Ren Qing Kuang’s hand. He then said: “I need my troops to become the strongest. You need to select an elite group to pay special attention to and they need to have at least the strength of the seventh Ling Qi layer. My soldiers must be loyal and courageous, they must all have these qualities. Besides, I hope that Uncle Ren can make the Chi Xie troops into an army of strong cultivators. I want every soldier to break through the fifth Ling Qi layer as a minimum.”

“All of them... at least the fifth Ling Qi layer!” Ren Qing Kuang’s heart was pounding. He had never dared think about such a monstrous army!

Chapter 313: I am Lin Feng!

Ren Qing Kuang was looking at Lin Feng and only thinking of how ambitious and brave the young man was. Since he was following Lin Feng, he had already wondered if Lin Feng would make the Chi Xie troops into a fearsome army.

He was hoping that Lin Feng would be able to carry out this extremely difficult task in the future. However in a very short time, Lin Feng had managed to astonish him by bringing a hundred and twenty thousand pills which could make thirty thousand cultivators instantly breakthrough. What he had been trying to do for many years. Lin Feng had done in a very short time due to his hard work and determination.

Besides Lin Feng was resolute, he had immediately handed the pills over, giving Ren Qing Kuang a huge responsibility.

“Uncle Ren, Mister Chi and Mister Huo will help you to break through to the Xuan Qi layer. Our forces will become much stronger that way.” Said Lin Feng. The three officers were dumbstruck, Xuan Qi layer!

Who would refuse becoming incredibly stronger?

“Mister Huo, Mister Chi.” Said Lin Feng while turning to the two old men. He saw that the two old looked irresolute yet they immediately said: “We will find a solution.”

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng. Immediately after, he looked at Ren

Qing Kuang again and said: “Uncle Ren, Uncle Feng, Uncle Lei and you are experienced officers. You obviously don’t need me to teach you anything. I just want to say that these days, even though you are not on a battlefield, our troops cannot lose their fighting spirit and ardour. No matter if we are talking about their determination or their courage, they need to continue on the path of blood. They need to keep fighting and continue facing danger. Only that way, will they be able to increase their cultivation. After I leave, the troops must regularly go out on missions to practice. Besides, they will potentially gain extra battle experience. We cannot show mercy. If they don’t face danger during their breakthroughs, they will never benefit and become truly strong.”

These troops had all survived previous wars. After all their previous experiences, Ren Qing Kuang obviously hoped that none of them would die. Lin Feng had to remind him that if they kept the troops in a safe and nurturing environment, would they remain as battle hardened warriors?

“Alright.” Said Ren Qing Kuang while nodding. He understood what Lin Feng meant. It was already clear to him. Lin Feng was right to remind him of what made their army so powerful. If they protected their army in the city and didn’t give them the opportunity to fight any battles. They would become docile and their cultivation would suffer. These people were fearless even when facing death, these Chi Xie troops had to remain in a constant state of battle!

“Uncle Ren, is there anything you need to discuss with Mister Huo and Mister Chi? I want to go and practice in seclusion now. After that, I will leave Yangzhou City and go to the Imperial City” said Lin Feng to Ren Qing Kuang and the old men. He saluted them

and immediately left. He first went to see if everything was ok with Meng Qing in caring for Yun Xi. Then, he went to practice.

His surplus souls technique was already extremely powerful. He could use his soul to create multiple purple snakes. He could kill cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer using his purple dragon. That kind of unique ability was a life saving ability for Lin Feng. He needed to practice the technique in order to make even more surplus souls appear. He needed a stronger soul to control even more of his spirit's power. At the same time, he needed to develop himself to become even stronger.

.....

Outside of the Imperial City, it was extremely crowded and lively. The crowd was like a river of people.

At Qing Xin's restaurant, many people were leaning against the banister and looked down at the river of people which moving like a dragon through the streets. All sorts of comments were filling the air.

“Even though Duan Lie isn't a direct member of the Imperial family and hasn't joined the core of the Imperial City, his status is still extraordinary.”

“Indeed. Duan Yu's wedding will probably be extremely majestic.”

In the restaurant, many people were unceasingly whispering. One topic was occupying everybody's conversations, Duan Yu's wedding.

At that moment, in the restaurant, only one table was drawing everybody's attention because on that table there was two incredibly beautiful women. One of them had her face covered with a fine veil. That silhouette made many people feel speechless.

Besides, the other girl was very beautiful. Her eyes, which were bright and clear, were filled with endless light. She looked outstanding, especially her voluptuous chest, which looked like two mountains separated by a valley. She was extremely alluring.

Besides, with these two beautiful girls, there was also a young man. Everybody in the crowd envied him to the extent that, some people were even glaring at him with killing intent. Some people were extremely jealous and wished they could be with these two women.

“Even though Duan Yu has a blood spirit and has a noble beauty, surprisingly there are two even more beautiful women here in Qing Xin's Restaurant. Duan Yu will marry a genius of the Imperial City while, unfortunately, there are two such beautiful women who will end up with such a tiny little boy.” Said someone in the crowd extremely loudly so that everybody in the restaurant could clearly hear.

“Indeed. Some people say that Wen Ren Yan, was a genius in the Yun Hai Sect. After the extermination of the sect, Duan Tian Lang found out that that Wen Ren Yan had high natural talent and was

immediately been interested in him. Wen Ren Yan made a wise decision and joined the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. It was a brilliant move from his part. If he had stayed with the Yun Hai Sect and remained the most prodigious disciple, his prestige would have been limited, but by joining the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, he will always have opportunities to show his strength in the Imperial City. It was said that Wen Ren Yan has already broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer and is monstrously strong. Besides, his blue bamboo spirit has become abnormally strong. Coupled with Duan Yu's blood spirit, it is definitely a perfect match.

“How could Wen Ren Yan be considered as a genius of the Yun Hai Sect? Back in the days, the real genius was Lin Feng. At the moment when the Yun Hai Sect was being exterminated, every outstanding disciple betrayed the sect except for Lin Feng, whose heart was as unmovable as a mountain. He stuck to his principles. His destiny will definitely be extraordinary.” Said a fifteen year old cultivator contradicting the other person who had just arrogantly spoken out.

Even though Lin Feng was only in the Imperial City for half a year, many people still worshiped Lin Feng. The facts that he had set a city on fire and crossed into another country to save the princess was still the topic of people's conversations. They admired and idolized Lin Feng. They hoped that they would be able to walk on the same path as Lin Feng and become one of the great cultivators of Xue Yue,

“You don't understand anything.” Said the cultivator who had just been contradicted.

He said, sounding cold and detached: “Wen Ren Yan is a genius, he is a genius of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue! Even though he has only broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer, he still has amazing combat ability in real battle, he is extremely strong. He can defeat cultivators of the eighth Ling Qi layer. Concerning Lin Feng, nobody even knows where he went. Maybe he is already dead. How can you even compare a dead man with Wen Ren Yan!”

“Stop talking shit. How could Lin Feng die?” Shouted the other one furiously.

“I said that Lin Feng is probably dead by now, what does that have to do with you? Now go wash out your filthy mouth.” Said the arrogant one sounding ice cold, releasing some his Qi. He was trying to show off his strength in front of the two beautiful young girls.

“Wen Ren Yan could never even touch the shadow of Lin Feng, you’re the one who’s talking shit!” Replied the young cultivator sounding ice cold. Even though his interlocutor was also extremely strong, he was still arguing.

At that moment, the beautiful and voluptuous young woman next to the handsome young man smiled and said in a low voice: “I would never have thought that there would be people who worshiped and adored you so much, that they wouldn’t even care about the consequences when defending you.”

Lin Feng smiled wryly and scratched his head. He had the strange feeling that he had become older and gained a great responsibility.

Since the moment that the Yun Hai Sect had been annihilated until that moment, less than two years had passed. Those days, Lin Feng wasn't even eighteen years old yet was already worshipped by a vast majority of people.

Of course, who else had managed to achieve so much in the short period of two years? He had nearly died so many times. All of his adventures were legendary.

Lin Feng had the feeling that he had already spent a long time in this world.

"I would have never thought that Wen Ren Yan would marry Duan Yu, that's amusing." Said Lin Feng while smiling indifferently. It also seemed that the tension between Lin Feng and Wen Ren Yan had stayed the same over time.

At that moment, the person who was criticizing Lin Feng, was releasing his Qi and it was becoming more cold and violent. He walked towards the young person and said coldly: "Reckless little boy, since you cannot shut your filthy mouth, I will shut it for you."

That person started walking towards the young cultivator, his hand shot straight towards the young man, which made the young man's face change drastically. He was blankly staring at the hand that was rushing towards him.

A whistling sound spread in the atmosphere and the punch was

completely stopped. The man then turned his head and shouted:
“Who dares?”

When he finished talking, he slowly turned around and immediately looked at Lin Feng who was walking towards him.

“You are also a reckless little boy.” Said that person while looking at Lin Feng and smiling coldly.

“I don’t want to kill you, I just wanted to tell you to shut your filthy mouth.” Said Lin Feng indifferently.

“Me? A filthy mouth?” Said that person while smiling coldly and then added: “What makes you think that you are entitled to criticize me?”

“Because... I am Lin Feng!” Said Lin Feng which made the man’s smile turn crooked.

.....“I am... Lin Feng!”

.....”Lin Feng!”

His words echoed through the restaurant and the entire atmosphere became deathly silent.

Chapter 314: Wen Ren Yan's Wedding!

To Lin Feng's side, the young man's eyes started to sparkle. How charismatic! He wouldn't have thought that Lin Feng, the hero he worshiped and adored, would be here!

"I'm sorry, I have made a mistake!" Said the man who had been humiliating Lin Feng. His lips were shaking. His facial expression was completely rigid. He only dared criticize Lin Feng behind his back, but in front of Lin Feng, who was the subject of so many bloody rumours, he didn't dare act aggressively anymore. At that moment, his face was so pale that he looked like a ghost.

"Sorry?" Lin Feng had an evil smile on his mouth. That person had humiliated Lin Feng by saying that Lin Feng didn't deserve to be with such beautiful women, then he insulted him and threatened him, but thought that saying "sorry" would solve the problem?

"Your mouth is completely rotten!" Said Lin Feng. Immediately, he raised his hand and immediately bombarded the atmosphere with a punch.

"BOOM!"

The crowd was gasping in astonishment. That person's body was blown away and heavily crashed onto the floor. Blood was gushing out of his mouth and his teeth were even unceasingly falling onto the floor.

That person violently coughed twice, his eyes were filled with hatred. After that, he lowered his head, he didn't dare look at Lin Feng.

“Such a worthless person, you dare act that arrogantly, how miserable.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold while humiliating the man. Immediately after, he turned to the young man, slightly smiled and nodded, which made the young man's eyes fill with excitement.

Lin Feng walked to the banister of the balcony and continued to look down at the crowd, the atmosphere was bustling with noise and excitement.

In Xue Yue, wedding ceremonies were very particular. People who had no influence could immediately become husband and wife. They didn't even need to organize a ceremony. There were some cultivators who did it that way as well but, of course, people who had strength and influence wanted their wedding ceremonies to be spectacular and grandiose, to show how majestic they were.

This time, the genius young cultivator of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Wen Ren Yan, was going to get married with Duan Yu, who part of the imperial family and possessed the blood spirit. Obviously, their wedding ceremony had to be spectacular. They were noble cultivators. High ranking officials, princes and marquises would all come to congratulate them. Of course, there would be a lot of people of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue who would come as well.

It was said that at that moment, the vast army had already

encircled the Imperial City. everybody was arriving outside of the city.

Concerning the inside of the Imperial City, Duan Lie's family also wanted to make it a spectacular event and make it the talk of the city. In a few months, that wouldn't be possible.

“Duan Yu, Wen Ren Yan!” Lin Feng remembered the first time he had met them both, Duan Yu attempted to make him slap his own face when he first went to the celestial academy and Wen Ren Yan was constantly trying to make a show of his strength in the Yun Hai Sect. He had repeatedly tried to kill Lin Feng in order to try and prove how strong and majestic he was. Lin Feng had a smile on the corner of his mouth, in the past, in his heart, he was swearing that Wen Ren Yan had to die. No matter where he was, no matter what, he would kill him.

Lin Feng didn't have the same feeling anymore. All he was concerned with was getting stronger. If he managed to become extremely strong and reach the peak of the Xuan Qi layer, people like Wen Ren Yan would be unimportant and he could kill them anywhere. Even at the entrance of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

Back in the past, Duan Tian Lang had annihilated the Yun Hai Sect and Wen Ren Yan joined the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

“Let's go.” Said Lin Feng in a low voice. His body flickered and he landed in the middle of the crowd outside.

Meng Qing and Lan Jiao were closely following him and also

landed in the sea of people.

When the crowd saw Lin Feng and his friends leave, the silence was broken and the atmosphere became lively again. He had not been seen for half a year and now, he had come back.

After Lin Feng had been given the title of Marquis, he had gone back to Yangzhou City and now, he had returned to the Imperial City. This would definitely increase the excitement among the population.

Besides, in the Imperial City these days, many unknown or hidden geniuses were making themselves known. They were all particularly outstanding young cultivators. It suddenly seemed like Xue Yue was witnessing the rise of many geniuses. They were also all wondering what kind of spectacle Lin Feng would create this time.

After Lin Feng left the restaurant, a silhouette slowly appeared. That person looked calm and peaceful, just like a pure lotus flower. That was the owner of the restaurant, Qing Xin.

When she saw these three people leave, her eyes revealed relief. She had a strange facial expression. She remembered the last time Lin Feng had come to her restaurant. She remembered that she had found him immature but he was only a little boy of the Ling Qi layer. However, these days, she could feel that there was something profound, unfathomable and enigmatic about Lin Feng. She only felt admiration for him when she saw him now.

It was also a huge relief that they hadn't destroyed her restaurant again!

Outside of the Imperial City, there was a huge palace. It covered a vast area. It was the most imposing palace outside of the Imperial City. It belonged to the Noble, Duan Lie who possessed the blood spirit of the Imperial Clan. Being a member of the Duan Clan, his palace obviously had to be majestic and grandiose.

At that moment, in the garden of the palace, a huge stage was erected. On that stage, there were many people. There were some old men, who belonged to the palace, as well as some wealthy and noble people who had extremely high social statuses.

Apart from these people, on the stage, there were also many young people. They all looked full of vigor and vitality. Considering they were young, they were all gifted cultivators and were all students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They were all Wen Ren Yan's friends.

They hoped that they would be able to do the same as Wen Ren Yan and marry a beautiful woman who had a blood spirit of the Imperial Clan. After all, Duan Yu had quite high natural talent, coupled with her blood spirit and social status, she was definitely suited to marry Wen Ren Yan.

It was easy to predict that Wen Ren Yan's reputation would become even more brilliant in the future. He wouldn't stop moving forwards, one day, he would break through the Ling Qi layer into the Xuan Qi layer. He would become a pillar for Xue Yue.

“Look, Yue Tian Chen and Yu Tian Xing. They have also come. Besides, the Yue Clan and the Yu Clan came together.”

At that moment, in the distance, two handsome silhouettes were coming which made the crowd cry out in alarm.

The Yu Clan and the Yue Clan were symbols of strength and social status, they were extremely arrogant to the extent that Duan Tian Lang even had to give them face, Duan Lie even more so.

It was possible to say that if the Yu Clan and Yue Clan came, Duan Lie should really feel honoured.

Besides, these two people both had the character “Tian” in their names. How scary were their clans! They all had extraordinary social statuses and were expected to one day reach the Tian Qi Layer.

“Yu Tian Xing is a disciple of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and it could be that he is friends with Wen Ren Yan... But Yue Tian Chen, I don’t know why he came. It’s strange.” Thought people in the crowd as they had their doubts. At that moment, they saw Duan Lie take a large step forward. He wanted to greet the two young men and said: “Young Master Tian Chen, Young Master Tian Xing, please come my palace. Your presence brings light to my humble dwelling.”

“Don’t be so polite, Duan Lie.” Replied Yu Tian Xing while smiling indifferently and continued: “Wen Ren Yan and I, are

brothers. Of course I would never miss his wedding. Besides, Tian Chen and Wen Ren Yan are very good friends as well.”

“Wow, Wen Ren Yan really has given Duan Lie a great deal of prestige.” Thought the crowd. It seemed like that time, Wen Ren Yan wasn’t making profit, the one making profit was Duan Lie.

At that moment, Duan Lie’s eyes were twinkling. As expected, he was going to have a fantastic son in law.

“Come Young Nobles, please sit down!” Said Duan Lie very politely while leading the way.

The two young men weren’t polite though. They immediately looked at the highest places on the stage. In the entire Xue Yue country, they were respected and revered. They were the overlords of the country. The young men of the Yu Clan and the Yue Clan had noble blood. Obviously, wherever they were, they expected people to look up at them. They thought that this was obvious.

“Those pieces of trash haven’t made any progress. They are still as arrogant as ever.” At that moment, in the audience beneath the stage, Lin Feng said as he looked at those two young nobles.

It had been a long time since he had seen them. These two people were still as arrogant as before. They were not strong enough because they didn’t train and they just relied on their social status and thought that they were powerful cultivators. If all the juniors of the Yue Clan and the Yu Clan were like that, their clan would disappear and nobody would talk about them anymore.

Of course, the Yu Clan and the Yue Clan were not as monstrous as the Imperial Clan, but they were still very powerful.

“Hypocritical scum.” At that moment, not far from Lin Feng, some people had heard what he said. Lin Feng was surprised, he turned around and immediately looked at the people laughing at him.

He only saw someone who was looking at him and smiling coldly. That person wasn't far from Lin Feng. That person then joked again: “What do you intend to do? You only dare criticize people behind their back. When confronted, you are so scared that you can't do anything.

“Meh....” Lin Feng was a bit surprised. It seemed like Yue Tian Chen and Yu Tian Xing had their own fans.

“Can't I?” Said Lin Feng while smiling indifferently. The expression in his eyes was majestic. An extremely sharp sword energy emerged from his eyes and crashed onto these people's bodies, which made their hearts pound. It was so unbearable that it made them start to move backwards.

One glance had sufficed to make their hearts pound violently.

“Worthless scum.” Said Lin Feng indifferently while glancing at them. Immediately after, he stopped paying attention to them which made hideous expressions appear on their faces. They were all feeling humiliated.

Chapter 315: How Shameless!

That small action didn't draw people's attention. Not a single person around Lin Feng paid attention to it. They were all captivated by the people on the stage.

The prodigies of the Yu Clan and the Yue Clan had come to that place. They were looking at that gathering of heroic cultivators on the stage.

Each and every single student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue looked valiant and heroic. The crowd was silently admiring them. They were all outstanding and handsome young cultivators. They all had high natural talent. The future of Xue Yue was in these people's hands.

They were the most outstanding young cultivators of Xue Yue, they would become the future pillars of the country.

Of course, the majority thought that way. But there were other people who thought that in Xue Yue, there were even stronger prodigies who were not in the limelight.

These really incredible and outstanding geniuses despised such events. Their stage wasn't a wedding stage, their stage was a battlefield, a stage for true glory.

There were also a few people who even despised these so called young geniuses who were on the stage. They despised such people from the bottom of their hearts. For example, Lin Feng despised

these kinds of people.

The atmosphere was, as before, lively and noisy. People were merrily enjoying themselves. In the distance, on a large road, many silhouettes were gathering and moving towards the palace. These people had advertised the wedding everywhere inside Xue Yue, to let everyone know the fact that a prodigy of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Wen Ren Yan, was going to marry the little princess Duan Yu, as if the Duan Clan wanted everybody to know.

Behind these people, there were many people who were following the event. They were all the people who had been tempted to come and watch. They wanted to see the prodigy of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, Wen Ren Yan, marry the little princess Duan Yu. They looked forward to witnessing the event.

The atmosphere was particularly lively. All these people had heard that many outstanding students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue would be there. They had even heard that Yue Tian Chen and Yu Tian Xing were coming which made all these people gasp in astonishment. It seemed like coming to watch the ceremony was definitely going to be worth it. They would be able to see such extraordinary people.

They were especially excited to see Yue Tian Chen and Yu Tian Xing, they were extraordinary young cultivators. They looked so proud. As expected, the prodigies of the powerful clans were extraordinary.

However, people were happy and enjoying themselves but the protagonists Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu hadn't shown themselves

yet.

At that moment on the stage, Duan Lie suddenly stood up and raised his hands indicating that he wanted the crowd to quiet down. The crowd obeyed and finally stopped talking. They wanted to know what Duan Lie wanted to say.

Duan Lie coughed softly and said: “It is an honour for me to see all of you who have come to my palace. Now, I would like to tell you a few things.”

“Wen Ren Yan used to be the most outstanding disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. Even though he was very young, the Yun Hai Sect future was in his hands, he was even being groomed as the next patriarch of the sect. However, the Yun Hai Sect was annihilated by Duan Tian Lang. However, he didn’t kill Wen Ren Yan because he noticed his incredible talent. At that moment, Wen Ren Yan was only seventeen years old. He was young and even dared to refuse Duan Tian Lang’s offer, he wanted to die with the Yun Hai Sect. In the end, Duan Tian Lang’s kindness changed Wen Ren Yan’s decision and he had accepted to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. There, Wen Ren Yan became an outstanding student. Besides, with his skills and ability. He was considered as an outstanding genius, respected by everybody. It is not an exaggeration to say that Wen Ren Yan’s natural talent is extremely high, he is outstanding. All of these are the reasons why I accepted Wen Ren Yan as my son in law, to marry Duan Yu.”

Duan Lie sounded extremely proud and his introduction of Wen Ren Yan described a perfect young man. He had extremely high natural talent, was kind and outstanding. He embellished the story

that way because Wen Ren Yan was going to become his son in law and they would soon share prestige.

All sorts of comments and whispers were spreading in the crowd. How strong! He was the most talented disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. He could have become the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect as well. Unfortunately, the Yun Hai Sect had been destroyed but no matter where he was, he was always considered as a genius. Duan Tian Lang hadn't kill him and actually spared him. Wen Ren Yan, as expected, is a real genius. No wonder that he could marry Duan Yu, who has the blood spirit.

But there were also some people who had suspicions because they knew that Lin Feng, who hadn't shown up in the Imperial City for the last six months, also used to be a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. Was Wen Ren Yan really the most talented disciple of the Yun Hai Sect?

A mocking expression appeared in Lin Feng's eyes, Wen Ren Yan, the most talented disciple?

The most ridiculous part was when he had declared that Wen Ren Yan refused Duan Tian Lan and was portrayed as a kind person.

Duan Lie, in order to not lose face, didn't hesitate and describe Wen Ren Yan as the perfect son in law. Not only was he trying to give face to his daughter but he was also trying to gain some prestige himself.

Another ridiculous thing was the number of people who had actually been fooled and believed these ridiculous words. There were many people who were praising Wen Ren Yan, as if they worshiped him.

“Alright, I will not talk much more. Let’s look at the bride and groom!” Said Duan Lie while smiling and immediately after, sat down slowly. At that moment, in the palace suddenly appeared a thread of brilliant light. It was extremely beautiful. After a moment, that thread of light turned into a vast and brilliant light which invaded the entire atmosphere.

People raised their heads and looked at the sky. They only saw five dazzling lights covering the sky.

At that moment, under that endless light, something slowly descended.

“Huh?” The crowd was astonished. A something was descending but it was composed of two silhouettes. They only saw a handsome young man who was carrying a beautiful woman in his arms. Their two bodies were slowly descending from the sky and finally, they landed on the stage in a dazzling way.

The lights also lost in intensity which made the faces of the two silhouettes distinctly appear before the crowd.

“A hero and a beauty, what a perfect match.” Thought many people as if they were worshiping the couple.

Wen Ren Yan looked brilliant and resplendent, like a hero, natural and unrestrained, while Duan Yu looked beautiful and precious. They perfectly complemented each other.

Lin Feng was also looking at them. He was thinking about Wen Ren Yan two years before. At that moment, Wen Ren Yan looked more mature. It also seemed like he had become extremely strong which made him look lofty and proud.

Concerning Duan Yu, she looked even more beautiful and voluptuous than in the past. She didn't look as childish as before, she looked much more mature. It was rare to find such women. Unfortunately, she hadn't chosen to marry the right person, Lin Feng was there and because of that, Wen Ren Yan was definitely going to die.

“Wen Ren, you heard my words, you should also say a few words to the crowd.” Said Duan Lie while smiling at Wen Ren Yan.

Wen Ren Yan slightly nodded, immediately turned to the crowd and said: “I, Wen Ren Yan, practiced cultivation at the Yun Hai Sect. I became the number one genius there. It's just like my father in law said. I was recognized a genius of the Yun Hai Sect by everyone and was preparing to become the Patriarch. Unfortunately, life is impermanent and this could only be a dream, the Yun Hai Sect was exterminated and as the result of a strange combination of circumstances, I became a student of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue where everybody respects me. I, Wen Ren Yan, always give my best on the path of cultivation. I am constantly seeking improvement. Besides, now, it is the greatest honour for me to be able to marry Duan Yu, I want to marry her,

cherish her and never leave her side.”

“No need to talk about all my qualities, my father in law already said them. I hope that everything is clear in everybody’s eyes. Today, you all witnessed how I will carry Duan Yu in my arms.” Wen Ren Yan’s words came directly from the bottom of his heart which made the crowd nod. Wen Ren Yan was a good choice, he had natural talent and was very modest. He was definitely above average. He was a good match for Duan Yu.

“Alright.” Shouted Duan Lie who was seemingly overjoyed.

“No need to keep talking about how great and talented Wen Ren Yan is. Both of them will be able to accomplish great things together.”

“Indeed, Wen Ren Yan is outstanding, he is a genius. His future is filled with endless opportunities.”

In the crowd, many people were praising Wen Ren Yan. There weren’t many people who had opportunities to meet Wen Ren Yan. He was definitely amazing.

“It is the first time in my life that I see such a shameless person, it’s so disgusting that it makes me feel nauseous.”

At the moment when everybody was praising Wen Ren Yan, a contradicting voice spread in the air making everybody’s voices suddenly lose their intensity. Immediately after, they all stopped

talking.

Surprisingly, there was somebody who dared humiliate Wen Ren Yan on the day of his wedding.

Besides, at that moment, everybody on the stage had a high social status. There were still people who dared disrespect everyone on stage?

People were unceasingly turning their heads looking for the one who had said that. Immediately, the crowd saw a silhouette leave the crowd and then slowly climb onto the stage.

That silhouette was wearing a set of white robes, they didn't look magnificent but they were clean.

That person also had long hair, looked delicate, not arrogant yet natural and unrestrained. It seemed like the ground under such a person's feet, would crack underneath the unbearable greatness of that person.

Chapter 316: Lin Feng is back!

When the crowd saw Lin Feng on the stage, they were stupefied.

“Who’s that? How audacious! Surprisingly someone dare to act aggressively here...” many people in the crowd thought. It was Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu’s wedding. How could Duan Lie tolerate such behaviour? Could it be that that person wanted to die?

There were also some people who had already seen Lin Feng so when they saw him, they had a familiar impression.

Carefree and unconventional, a person that despised these types of people, but because they were all facing Lin Feng’s back, coupled with the fact that he hadn’t shown himself in six months, many people didn’t think that it could be Lin Feng.

However, even though the crowd couldn’t see him, the ones in front of Lin Feng could see him clearly. Duan Lie, Wen Ren Yan, Duan Yu, Yue Tian Chen, Yu Tian Xing and all the others could clearly see Lin Feng, and they all had a strange and familiar impression.

That person, whom they bitterly hated, had appeared before them.

Wen Ren Yan was especially upset when he saw Lin Feng, whom he hadn’t encountered in such a long time. He even started shaking. Back in the past, he considered himself the most talented

disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, to the extent that he assumed that he would surpass Tu Fu, even Ling Hu and He Shan, but Lin Feng had appeared and humiliated him, destroying his pride.

Back then, Lin Feng was still young. People used to call him a piece of trash, but he had defeated Wen Ren Yan in front of everyone, which gave birth to his legend.

His proud brilliance had vanished, so he had chosen to become a traitor and follow Duan Tian Lang. He hated Lin Feng from the bottom of his heart because, out of all the strong cultivators of the Yun Hai Sect, the Yun Hai Sect had chosen to die for Lin Feng and not him. They had given up their lives to save Lin Feng. That tragic event proved that Lin Feng was seen as precious, so he was still receiving all of the glory in the end.

At the time when Lin Feng became a source of hope for the Yun Hai Sect and people considered Lin Feng a hero, Wen Ren Yan had already become a traitor. He didn't want people to see him as a traitor which is why at that moment, on the wedding stage, he was describing himself as perfect. In order to protect his vanity, he didn't want to be known as a traitor.

Besides, he also didn't want to compete with Lin Feng. He had heard that Lin Feng, six months ago, had already broken through to the seventh Ling Qi layer, set a city on fire and had gone into another country to save the princess. Everything about Lin Feng was spectacular and grandiose. Many people were talking about Lin Feng, but Wen Ren Yan could only suffer in silence at the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, practicing cultivation until exhaustion, and even there he would constantly hear Lin Feng's extraordinary

stories.

It seemed like Lin Feng was protected by the gods. If Lin Feng was somewhere, there was no space there for Wen Ren Yan as well. He made Wen Ren Yan seem insignificant.

That god of war had appeared again.

Wen Ren Yan wasn't the only whose thoughts were moving at the speed of light, Yue Tian Chen and Yu Tian Xing were also astonished. Lin Feng was appearing before them once again.

No need to mention the hatred these two people felt for Lin Feng. Lin Feng had humiliated Yue Tian Chen a few times and had prevented his relationship with Duan Xin Yue.

In Duan Xin Ye's heart, there was only Lin Feng, she wasn't interested in Yue Tian Chen at all. What made him extremely angry and ashamed was that he, young master of the Yue Clan, couldn't compete with Lin Feng.

Yu Tian Xing hated Lin Feng even more. He hadn't forgotten that he was beaten by Lin Feng, it was still one of his worst nightmares. A young master of the Yu Clan had surprisingly been beaten to a pulp by Lin Feng in front of everybody. How could he ever forgive such a humiliation?

Seeing Lin Feng made people's heartbeats accelerate.

Besides, the crowd at the bottom of the stage could still only see Lin Feng's back, but they could see the facial expressions of the people on the stage. They had also noticed the terrifying silence. Their eyes started to narrow. Who was that person? That person had surprisingly humiliated Wen Ren Yan but nothing was happening as they would have imagined, nobody was attacking the young man and sending him flying off the stage, the people on the stage were not reacting at all, they all just remained silent.

"It's you!" Said Duan Yu while staring at Lin Feng. She, of course, knew that handsome young man. When she had wanted to slap Lin Feng, Lin Feng had heartlessly slapped her instead.

"It's me." Said Lin Feng indifferently. He looked at Wen Ren Yan and said: "Wen Ren Yan, we haven't seen each other in such a long time. Not only haven't you gotten rid of your arrogance but you have also become more shameless than ever. What you said today left me truly speechless at your lack of shame."

Lin Feng was clearly making fun of Wen Ren Yan, which progressively made his facial expression become hideous.

"Who the hell are you to dare talk in this way? Who do you think Wen Ren is? Since when can a idiot like you can come here and speak like this?"

At that moment, someone looking at the stage said while sounding cold and indifferent. That person was one of the students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He wasn't weak and had already broken through to the fifth Ling Qi layer. After having joined the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, he had become one of Wen Ren Yan's

friends and had decided to follow him. At that moment, there was suddenly a young man who dared humiliate Wen Ren Yan. That guy wanted to die!

That person even immediately started running towards Lin Feng. His Qi was very thick and dense as if he wanted to punish Lin Feng for his offense.

Wen Ren Yan's eyes flashed but he said nothing to stop that person. He could use that person to find out Lin Feng's cultivation level.

"I want to see what cultivation level that idiot relies on, daring to insult my brother Wen Ren Yan!" that person shouted, sounding ice cold. Immediately after, his fist started moving towards Lin Feng at full speed. It created a strong wind which rolled through the atmosphere and made Lin Feng's clothes flutter.

However, at that moment, a cold and indifferent smile appeared on the corner of Lin Feng's mouth. What a pity, this person would die in such tragic conditions.

A powerful sword energy emerged in the atmosphere. It was monstrous. That sword energy covered everything as far as the eye could see. At that moment, Lin Feng seemed like he could pierce anything.

The heart of the person who was running towards Lin Feng suddenly twitched. Surprisingly, his attack also stopped moving forwards as he was clearly hesitant.

Standing in the middle of that sword energy, he felt like he was a small paper boat on a vast ocean during a storm. He couldn't help but be thrown around by the power of the energy.

"How terrifying." That person's heart was pounding. He started to retreat and didn't attack Lin Feng, he started to lower his fist. He couldn't provoke a person who had such terrifying sword energy.

"Too late." Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. Lin Feng raised his finger and immediately pointed at the cultivator's hand. A horrible shriek spread through the air, he hadn't even had the time to pull his fist back and his hand had already been cut cleanly from the rest of his arm. An expression of agony appeared on his face.

Lin Feng's finger had also destroyed the internal blood vessels of the arm, his sword energy was causing heavy damage.

His horrible shriek abruptly came to an end because at that moment, Lin Feng's finger was suddenly pressing against his throat. If Lin Feng moved his finger even slightly, that person would lose his life.

The cultivator seemed like he had forgotten the pain. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng and saw that Lin Feng's eyes were filled with pity. Lin Feng then said coldly: "You wanted to protect Wen Ren Yan, but Wen Ren Yan let you die, how pitiful." Said Lin Feng which made the person surprised, Wen Ren Yan was letting him die?

When he thought about it, his heart started pounding. Indeed, since Lin Feng had come for Wen Ren Yan, it meant that Wen Ren Yan knew him but wasn't warning his fellow disciple about Lin Feng's strength. He let Lin Feng attack him to test his strength. When he thought about it, his face turned deathly pale. A sad expression appeared on his face.

Indeed, how pitiful!

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Duan Lie in the distance. He then said coldly: "Duan Lie, is that the perfect young man you were talking about? Someone is fighting for Wen Ren Yan, but Wen Ren Yan just watches as that person gets killed protecting him. As expected, he is truly rare and outstanding."

Lin Feng's words made Duan Lie's lips twitch and immediately after, Lin Feng turned around and looked at Wen Ren Yan. He looked like he wanted to burst into laughter.

"Wen Ren Yan, I can see that you have found yourself a shameless father in law to match your own shamelessness. You like to shine in front of everybody. I admire you, praising yourself and changing the truth to make it sound spectacular. Wen Ren Yan, could it be that the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue gives lessons on how to act shameless?"

"Oh, you like telling lies..." Said Wen Ren Yan, looking colder and colder.

“Lies?” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly and continued: “Wen Ren Yan, you don’t need to talk to me about such things, you are my fellow disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, yet you acted as if you didn’t know me. You can’t have forgotten our fight during the competition of the sect. You let him rush to attack me, you didn’t tell him that coming to fight against me would lead to his death. How could he stand a chance at defeating me, Lin Feng?”

When the crowd heard the name Lin Feng, their hearts started pounding.

Lin Feng!

That aggressive young man is Lin Feng!

No wonder he behaved that way. No wonder that these people remained silent. That is Lin Feng, Lin Feng is back!

Chapter 317: Provoking Everyone!

The crowd gasped with astonishment while looking at that silhouette on the stage.

Indeed, if that person was really Lin Feng, Wen Ren Yan should have known that the person who wanted to protect him, had no chance of even receiving a single blow. However, Wen Ren Yan hadn't warned him at all. He remained silent. How virtuous and kind was that!

By acting this way in front of such a large crowd, everybody could see that he was not only a bad person, but his behaviour could even be described as detestable.

Duan Lie and Wen Ren Yan's lies were collapsing.

An ugly expression appeared on the face of the person who had just had an altercation with Lin Feng. His eyes were filled with indignation and anger. Wen Ren Yan was really shameless! He had unscrupulously let him fight against Lin Feng.

"Lin Feng, this has nothing to do with me, it's a misunderstanding." Said the person who had just attacked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng glanced at that person indifferently and smiled coldly.

"Nothing to do with you? How amusing! If I had been weaker

than you, wouldn't I have died because of your misunderstanding?" Joked Lin Feng. Then, he said coldly: "When you take action, you have to consider the consequences."

When Lin Feng finished talking, sword Qi immediately shot into his interlocutor's throat. The crowd was astonished.

He died! Lin Feng had killed him without showing even a shred of mercy.

That person's eyes, even though he had just died, were still wide open as if he would never have peace even in death.

Lin Feng's eyes looked to the side. He looked perfectly calm and serene. Had it been a misunderstanding? In that cruel and merciless world, could there be so many misunderstandings? In that world, if a person was weak, a misunderstanding could lead to death. No matter if there was a misunderstanding or not, the other person wouldn't care. Besides, he was planning to murder someone to flatter Wen Ren Yan.

When killing these types of people, Lin Feng didn't need to show mercy.

Lin Feng turned to Wen Ren Yan and mockingly smiled.

"Most gifted disciple of the Yun Hai Sect?" Said Lin Feng, even though he wasn't talking extremely loud, people could clearly hear what he was saying.

When Wen Ren Yan heard Lin Feng, he suddenly looked troubled. A moment before, Duan Lie had said that Wen Ren Yan was the most gifted disciple of the Yun Hai Sect and that it was already unofficially planned to make him the new patriarch. After that, Wen Ren Yan had confirmed that Duan Lie's words were "true". However, at that moment, Lin Feng, who was also a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, was in front of him.

Who was the most gifted disciple of the Yun Hai Sect?

"You are the most gifted disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, I am also a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, could you teach me some things? What do you think?" Said Lin Feng when he saw that Wen Ren Yan remained silent. Lin Feng sounded cold and detached. Lin Feng's words were making Wen Ren Yan even more annoyed.

Besides, the crowd at the bottom of the stage, people all had strange facial expressions. Was Wen Ren Yan really the most gifted disciple of the Yun Hai Sect? At that moment, Lin Feng was challenging him to a battle!

"Lin Feng, let's forget about our past conflicts for the time being and settle this matter later. Today is the day of my wedding, could you please just leave?" Said Wen Ren Yan in a low voice yet sounding cold. Lin Feng had appeared and was ruining everything, besides he was making him endlessly lose face.

"Leave?" Said Lin Feng sounding amused. He then continued: "You are the most gifted disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, you were

going to become the Patriarch, you are extremely kind and have high natural talent. You are perfect. I, Lin Feng, am a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. I used to be and still am a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. I am not like you, Wen Ren Yan, back in the past, when Duan Tian Lang attacked the Yun Hai Sect, who was the first one to betray the Yun Hai Sect?”

Wen Ren Yan remained silent, his facial expression looked glum.

“Wen Ren Yan, you betrayed your own teacher without a second thought. You are a traitor but today, you say, in front of everybody, that you were the most outstanding disciple of the Yun Hai Sect and that you are perfect. Are you not doing this because you think that, because the Yun Hai Sect has been annihilated, nobody will be able to expose all of your lies?”

“That’s enough!” Shouted Wen Ren Yan furiously. “Lin Feng, you are really shameless to dare spout these provocations!”

“Shut the hell up!” Said Lin Feng when he heard that Wen Ren Yan actually dared shout furiously at him. He then took a step forwards and released a deadly Qi which made Wen Ren Yan’s face turn deathly pale. He was rushing backwards as fast as he could. His facial expression was hideous.

“A piece of trash pretending to be a genius... and besides that, he dares to provoke me... Wen Ren Yan, do you still have any face?”

Lin Feng stopped smiling and said: “Wen Ren Yan, you are a shameless traitor and on top of that, you dare talk to me in such an

insolent way.”

“That’s enough!” Said Duan Lie while standing up. He then looked at Lin Feng in a cold and detached way and said: “Lin Feng, get lost!”

“You shut the fuck up!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously.

Get lost? How ridiculous!

“A moment ago, were you not making up lies about the groom? Weren’t you saying that he used to be the most talented disciple of the Yun Hai Sect? Weren’t you saying that he was perfect. Now, what are you afraid of? Why are you so impatient to see me leave?”

“What do you want precisely?” Asked Duan Lie’s whose face was filled with killing intent. Lin Feng was detestable. Duan Lie just wanted to kill Lin Feng on the spot.

It was his daughter’s wedding and Lin Feng dared ruin it.

“What do I want?” Said Lin Feng smiling again. He then said indifferently: “Duan Lie, even though there has been some tensions between Duan Yu and me in the past, I already slapped her for her mistake, but you didn’t send any armed forces to chase me. I, Lin Feng, do not intend at all to provoke you and Duan Yu. Unfortunately, you chose Wen Ren Yan to become your daughter’s husband, but today, I have come to settle accounts with him. However, you decide to act, think carefully before you make your

choice.”

The crowd was slightly shaking. Lin Feng was threatening Duan Lie.

They perfectly understood what Lin Feng meant. He had come to settle accounts with Wen Ren Yan, he could ignore Duan Lie but if he decided to get involved, he would need to think carefully about the consequences.

Lin Feng was threatening Duan Lie, an aristocrat related to the Imperial Family.

Duan Lie, of course, perfectly understood that Lin Feng was threatening him. His facial expression was extremely ugly. That bastard! This day was the day of his daughter’s wedding, a myriad of wealthy and noble cultivators had gathered there to the extent that some people of the Yue Clan and the Yu Clan had come. In such circumstances, Lin Feng dared threaten him.

Lin Feng was standing tall with his head held high. He was alone on the stage facing a myriad of extremely strong cultivators.

Lin Feng looked insufferably confident. He was acting as if these people were nobodies.

Duan Lie wasn’t the only one who looked furious. Each and every single wealthy and noble person was smiling coldly, especially the young men full of youth.

A few students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had seen Lin Feng kill one of their fellow disciples. He was extremely aggressive and kept humiliating them, which made them all bitterly hate Lin Feng.

Besides, Yue Tian Chen and Yu Tian Xing were also glaring at Lin Feng, their eyes were filled with fury. That guy was monstrously aggressive.

“Lin Feng, even though you have become a Marquis, here, there are many other people who have a higher social status than you. Duan Lie has the blood of the Imperial Family. Could it be that you think that, because you are a Marquis, you can defy the divine and human laws?” said Yu Tian Xing, who couldn’t help but open his mouth and make fun of Lin Feng. His eyes were filled with hatred. He hadn’t forgotten the previous humiliation, it was haunting him in his worst nightmares.

Lin Feng raised his head and indifferently glanced at Yu Tian Xing. Lin Feng looked calm and serene and suddenly he started smiling as if he wanted to make a joke again.

“Alright, what about you? What do you plan to do about it?” Said Lin Feng indifferently which stupefied Yu Tian Xing. Lin Feng was insufferable, so what? What did Yu Tian Xing want to do to stop him?

Extremely arrogant, pure arrogance!

Lin Feng didn't need to give these people face. All of them were his enemies. They all hated and despised him, so what? Things would go according to Lin Feng's plans.

At the bottom of the stage, the crowd was gasping in astonishment. Their chests were suddenly being invaded with excitement. They were trying to imagine what it was like to be Lin Feng, looking at all of these extremely arrogant wealthy and noble cultivators and humiliating them, talking down to them. They wanted to have the feeling of asking someone "what do you plan to do about it?".

As expected, when Yu Tian Xing heard Lin Feng, he immediately looked extremely glum and hideous. His lips kept trembling with anger but no words were coming out of his mouth.

That bastard! What an abominable bastard! He didn't know how to answer to Lin Feng. He couldn't compete with Lin Feng so what could he do? He could only remember the hatred he felt for Lin Feng, it was deeply engrave it in his heart.

"You're just trash, apart from the fact that you belong to a prestigious clan, you are nothing. You are worthless." Said Lin Feng, he didn't seem ready to let Yu Tian Xing off. Lin Feng sounded cold and detached as he was making Yu Tian Xing, whose expression became uglier and uglier.

Lin Feng thought that Yu Tian Xing was worthless and that apart from the influence of his clan, he was just a nobody. That was an absolute humiliation.

All these noble and wealthy cultivators, who belonged to the biggest clans, were fixedly and furiously staring at Lin Feng but Lin Feng didn't care.

Since he had come to that place, he was ready to face all of them.

Lin Feng was mockingly looking at that bunch of arrogant cultivators. He then said a few words, sounding indifferent.

“If any of you don't agree with me, you can be the first to stand up and try to stop me. The one who wins can keep on living while the loser dies. If you don't have the courage to fight, then stay there while blankly gazing into the distance and don't act recklessly.”

Lin Feng, alone, was provoking everybody else!

Chapter 318: Wen Ren Yan's Death!

Silence invaded the atmosphere of the palace.

Everybody was fixedly staring at Lin Feng, that carefree young man. Lin Feng's arrogant and despising words were still resonating in their minds.

As expected, Lin Feng was exactly like in the rumors, he considered them beneath his notice.

The faces in crowd at the bottom of the stage all looked hideous without exception. Lin Feng was provoking and humiliating everyone there.

Nobody dared say anything though. Who would be willing to participate in a battle to the death?

Some months before, the rumors said that Lin Feng had already broken through to the eighth Ling Qi layer and that his pride knew no limits. At that moment, Lin Feng could scare them with only one glance. He could scare Wen Ren Yan with only a bit of his strength and force. Lin Feng was terrifying. Nobody dared fight against him.

No one wanted to fight him because Lin Feng was daring enough to kill Duan Han in front of his father Duan Tian Lang. Since Lin Feng had done that, he probably wouldn't hesitate to kill anyone there.

All they could do was try to use influence to persuade Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, do you know what kind of people you are talking about?” Said Duan Lie sounding ice-cold. He hadn’t thought that Lin Feng would be that aggressive.

“No need for you to teach me anything. I have already said it, if you disagree with me, you can come and fight. If you want, you can all come together.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached which made Duan Lie’s Qi surge to the skies.

Nobody could scare Lin Feng away. Nobody could put pressure on him, he was truly a mad man.

The whole scene was amusing though.

Duan Lie belonged to the Imperial Family.

There was also many geniuses of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue there as well. There were also a myriad of noble and wealthy cultivators to the extent that the Yu Clan and Yue Clan, terrifyingly powerful clans, were present as well. They had a lot of influence and usually, nobody dared to provoke them.

But they were facing Lin Feng, that extremely aggressive young man, known for his insane actions. Lin Feng wasn’t scared of anyone and would dare to offend anyone, no matter their status. He was insane but he was also much stronger than all these

outstanding young cultivators on the stage. Besides, the second prince regarded Lin Feng as very important. What could they do under such conditions?

“What do you really want?” asked Duan Lie, his face looked glum.

“What do I want?” Lin Feng smiled and looked at Wen Ren Yan: “Wen Ren Yan, back in the days, you thought that you were the best, compared to everyone else. Because we did not agree with you, you tried to kill me and my friends. How arrogant is that! After that, at the Life and Death Arena, when the Yun Hai Sect still regarded you as a genius, you tried to kill me. But unfortunately, it was a crushing defeat for you. You then betrayed the sect and revealed that you are extremely shameless.”

“You surprisingly dare to stand here and speak such garbage, bragging about the fact that you were the most talented disciple of the Yun Hai Sect and that you are perfect. You already have no sense of integrity anymore. Today, I came here. What do you think I, Lin Feng, want to do?”

Lin Feng’s words made Wen Ren Yan’s heart twitch. He was looking at Lin Feng with killing intent on his face. His face was filled with coldness.

Lin Feng wanted to kill him.

Indeed, Lin Feng definitely wanted to kill him. Back then, when they were still at the Yun Hai Sect, Wen Ren Yan bitterly hated Lin

Feng, from the bottom of his heart. He wanted to kill Lin Feng and Lin Feng wanted to kill him.

In other words, if they ever had the opportunity, they would use it. Wen Ren Yan just couldn't believe that Lin Feng would dare come to the wedding of Duan Lie's daughter to kill a genius of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

Was Lin Feng truly fearless?

Wen Ren Yan didn't understand Lin Feng. In Lin Feng's vocabulary, the word "fear" just didn't exist at all.

At that moment, how could the crowd at the bottom of the stage not understand Lin Feng? All the compliments they had just heard about Wen Ren Yan turned out to be lies. He was afraid of Lin Feng. When facing Lin Feng, he didn't dare open his dirty mouth.

What a crappy genius! He was supposed to be the outstanding and kind hearted prodigy of the Yun Hai Sect, with high natural talent. All of those were pathetic lies. They had even thought that Wen Ren Yan could possibly rival Lin Feng.

A moment before, Duan Lie's introduction of Wen Ren Yan and Wen Ren Yan's self-introduction had been way too exaggerated! The crowd had thought that he was monstrously strong, that he was a real genius.

After Lin Feng had stepped onto the stage, Duan Lie and Wen Ren

Yan had transformed into two different people. Lin Feng was exposing the truth. In front of Lin Feng, Wen Ren Yan was a nobody. Wen Ren Yan could see that Lin Feng was fearless and that he, Wen Ren Yan was a bit weak. For the most talented disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, he wasn't courageous at all.

In front of Lin Feng, Wen Ren Yan was tiny and insignificant.

That day was Wen Ren Yan's wedding day but Lin Feng had appeared and the stage had become Lin Feng's stage. Lin Feng had become the protagonist.

Lin Feng turned his head and looked at Duan Yu. He then said, sounding cold and detached: "Get lost!"

Duan Yu's face turned deathly pale, she almost started to have convulsions. Lin Feng was looking at her and telling her to get lost.... That day was supposed to be one of the most important days of her life. Everybody was supposed to pay attention to her and be happy for her but Lin Feng was there, ignoring her boyfriend and insulting her.

Her boyfriend could only remain silent in spite of the incessant humiliations.

Duan Yu was nibbling her lips. Her pale face kept trembling. She then said, sounding cold and detached: "Don't get too arrogant, Lin Feng."

“I told you to get lost.” Said Lin Feng while taking a big step and releasing a monstrous amount of deadly Qi which bombarded the atmosphere. It was whistling in the atmosphere and created a hurricane which was blowing against Duan Yu’s body.

“Crrr.... Crr.... Cr.....”

Duan Yu feet were sliding backwards under the pressure of that deadly Qi. She had no choice but to move backwards. Otherwise, it seemed that Lin Feng would really kill her.

“Lin Feng, you’re way too arrogant.” Shouted Duan Lie furiously. He then rushed through the air while releasing an incredible quantity of deadly Qi which enveloped Lin Feng’s body. Duan Lie was no longer able to contain himself.

When Lin Feng saw that silhouette rushing through the air, he smiled looking cold and detached. He released sword Qi which immediately invaded the atmosphere.

He jumped into the air and in a flash his fist pierced through the air like a sword.

Lin Feng was using his hand as a sword. It was even diffusing a dazzling sword glow.

“Pssssh”

The light of the sword was piercing everything. In a flash, Duan

Lie gave a horrible shriek and stopped moving forwards. Instead, he was madly retreating and was firmly covering his forearm with the other hand. Blood was flowing through his hand as the wound was clearly deep.

Lin Feng was in the air, he looked swift and fierce. He had nearly cut off Duan Lie's arm and if Duan Lie was any slower, he would have died.

"How strong!" Thought the people in the crowd whose hearts were pounding. Lin Feng was extremely strong. He was arrogant and proud, he could reach the heavens because of his incredible strength.

Duan Lie surprisingly couldn't fight against Lin Feng. A moment before, if Duan Lie hadn't dodged the attack, he would lost his life.

"Next time, I will show no mercy and cut your arm off." Said Lin Feng coldly, while descending from the sky. The crowd was astonished. If Duan Lie still had his arm, it wasn't because he had dodged the attack in time, it was because Lin Feng had let him keep it!

Lin Feng wasn't afraid of fighting or killing. For a while, nobody would dare to move against him again. Unless there was a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, who would dare fight against Lin Feng?

Unfortunately, Duan Lie was also a noble and had the blood of the Imperial Family, but he was just a collateral relative. He wasn't

as powerful as Duan Tian Lang, neither in terms of strength nor in terms of social status. Even though his palace was gigantic, it was outside the imperial city. Besides, there wasn't a single cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer there.

A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer wouldn't follow Duan Lie to protect him, they would only follow stronger nobles of the Imperial City.

In the vast palace, there was only a fearless young man and what was happening before their eyes was absolutely insane.

Lin Feng didn't care about what the crowd thought. He looked at Wen Ren Yan while releasing a deadly Qi and said, sounding cold and detached: "Today, I stand here on behalf of the Yun Hai Sect. You will be punished as a traitor, Wen Ren Yan."

"Wen Ren Yan, you will die today." Added Lin Feng. The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng wanted to kill Wen Ren Yan.

Wen Ren Yan was going to die!

Wen Ren Yan's facial muscles were twitching. Immediately after, he smiled coldly and said: "Stand on behalf of the Yun Hai Sect and kill a traitor? Ridiculous! What gives you the right to represent the Yun Hai Sect!"

"What gives me the right?" Lin Feng laughed. He raised his hand and showed a ring on his index. It was dazzling.

When Wen Ren Yan saw the ring, it seemed like his heart had stopped.

“Before Nan Gong Ling, the Patriarch, went to his final battle, he gave me that ring. I have been the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect for a long time already. Even though it was annihilated, there is still one last person left, me. As before, the Yun Hai Sect still has a patriarch, me, Lin Feng.”

Lin Feng was speaking slowly. He looked at Wen Ren Yan and continued: “Wen Ren Yan, what do you think? Do I have the right to kill a traitor like you? A traitor who betrayed the Yun Hai Sect...”

The crowd was blankly staring at Lin Feng. Surprisingly, Lin Feng was the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect.

Ridiculous! Duan Lie and Wen Ren Yan had surprisingly declared that Wen Ren Yan was unofficially already proclaimed as the new patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect. Lin Feng was actually the patriarch. The actual patriarch had been Lin Feng all the way.

The Yun Hai Sect hadn't been annihilated... Because there was still a patriarch.

It could even be said that Lin Feng's hatred for Duan Tian Lang was as deep as the oceans.

“Could it be that.....” Wen Ren Yan was shaking. Could it be that the fate of the Yun Hai Sect was still in Lin Feng’s hands? So that’s how it was... The Yun Hai Sect had so much faith in Lin Feng that they made him the patriarch.

Wen Ren Yan was ridiculous, an insignificant yet fairly strong disciple, nothing more.

“Alright, enough bullshit, we have already talked too much. Now, I, Lin Feng, the patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, will kill the traitor of the Yun Hai Sect.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. He released a monstrous amount of deadly Qi and he then raised his hand. His body was enveloped by a tornado of deadly Qi.

“Would you dare!”

“Stop!”

Duan Lie and Duan Yu shouted at the same time which made people stare on wide eyed.

However, the person whose heart was shaking the most was Wen Ren Yan. Lin Feng really wanted to kill him and nobody was going to stop him, no one wanted to offend Lin Feng on his behalf.

He could sense the deadly cold pierce through to his bones. His heart was filled with coldness and he was shaking with fear.

“Die!” The deadly Qi invaded the entire and rose to the skies. Nobody could change Lin Feng’s mind. Nobody could prevent Lin Feng from killing Wen Ren Yan.

His terrifying sword light fell through the sky like a shooting star. It was so dazzling that the crowd didn’t dare directly look into the light.

Everybody was holding their breath and blankly staring at the sword light which was falling through the sky straight towards Wen Ren Yan.

While the sword light was descending from the sky, the crowd remained silent, there was not a single sound that broke the silence.

Then a red mark appeared on Wen Ren Yan’s body, it started at the top of his head, then the red line expanded down between his eyebrows, then the red line continued down the middle of his nose, and it gradually continued down his body until it was cleanly divided into two parts. That red mark was the blood from the wound and Wen Ren Yan was cut in half.

Wen Ren Yan’s eyes were wide open. His skin had lost all its vitality. Immediately after, his body slowly collapsed backwards and landed in separate places.

Wen Ren Yan had just died! Lin Feng had killed him!

Everything seemed too farfetched to be reality.

It was Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu's wedding day. Duan Lie had prepared a spectacular ceremony and had managed to make many people come but the crowd ended up not seeing a wedding ceremony, instead, they saw the groom, Wen Ren Yan being cut into two halves.

In front of everybody and on the day of Duan Yu and Wen Ren Yan's wedding, Lin Feng had killed Wen Ren Yan. He had humiliated Duan Lie's family as well as the other influential people on the stage!

Chapter 319: The Terrifying Lin Feng

Suffocation.

At that moment, the sight of Wen Ren Yan's corpse, everyone felt like they could not breathe.

Wen Ren Yan had died, killed by Lin Feng, on the day of his wedding.

Lin Feng was proud and aloof, the crowd at the bottom of the stage were looking at him while breathing quietly with fear and trepidation. They had only heard about the fact that Lin Feng had set a city on fire and had crossed into another country to save the princess. At that moment, they could witness with their own eyes how uniquely proud and daring Lin Feng was, as well as how unconventional and unrestrained he was. Their hearts and feelings had really been stirred.

People as bold and daring as Lin Feng were rare. He was very courageous and daring. All these things made him seem extremely aggressive.

For having said that he was the most talented disciple of the Yun Hai Sect and that he was the future patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, Lin Feng simply showed his ring which proved that he was the patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect and then killed Wen Ren Yan. As the patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, Lin Feng had to punish him for his lies.

If he was the most talented disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, why was he killed in one hit?

If he was kind and was the future patriarch, why would he betray the Yun Hai Sect? Why was the ring of the patriarch on Lin Feng's finger?

All the lies that Wen Ren Yan said would have been true if he was speaking about Lin Feng. Lin Feng used to be the most talented disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. The future of the Yun Hai Sect had been put in Lin Feng's hands. Even though the enemies were extremely strong, Lin Feng hadn't betrayed his sect.

Lin Feng killed anyone who would prevent him from moving forwards, even if those people were Duan Tian Lang's relatives, because his heart was filled with endless hatred for these people.

The crowd was convinced that if there was one day where Lin Feng was powerful enough, Duan Tian Lang would be punished as well.

Duan Yu was wearing her wedding dress and she was looking at the corpse with her eyes wide open. She was in complete shock.

He had died. Her soul mate had been killed by Lin Feng with a single strike. Besides, Lin Feng revealed all of their lies which trampled the pride of the thought to be extinct, Yun Hai Sect. What kind of person was Duan Yu?

Duan Lie stood up, he was breathing heavily. His eyes were filled with fury and wrath. A moment before, he was still flattering Wen Ren Yan by calling him a genius, an outstanding disciple, but at that moment, the only thing left of Wen Ren Yan the two halves of his body. Lin Feng had easily dealt with him.

The students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue also stood up and glared at Lin Feng.

Wen Ren Yan was from the Holy Courtyard but Lin Feng , to their surprise, still killed him. It was making the students of the Holy Courtyard lose face.

They were also releasing a deadly Qi which enveloped Lin Feng's body.

Lin Feng raised his head and glanced at the crowd. He looked calm and serene yet also strangely fierce. The crowd started shaking when looking at him. That guy gave the feeling of infinite coldness. He looked extremely proud and majestic.

The crowd started to move, the sounds of their steps filled the atmosphere, one after the other. At that moment, the crowd was still looking at the stage, but if looking from above, the stage was now surrounded on every side.

The crowd was still moving. Lin Feng had killed Wen Ren Yan, how could Duan Lie just give up? The crowd was convinced that Duan Lie would try to kill Lin Feng.

Very quickly, the gigantic area was surrounded by people.

On one side, there was a marquis, who had his own army at his disposal, while the other was Duan Lie, who was a noble of the Imperial Family. His social status was higher than that of marquis. Besides, the district outside of the Imperial City was under Duan Lie's jurisdiction. Within his territory of jurisdiction, he obviously had his own large army. Besides, he was also involved in slave trading, which gave him powerful slaves.

At that moment, everybody in the crowd wanted to attack and kill Lin Feng. Lin Feng could see that he was surrounded by millions of people yet he still looked calm and serene. There weren't many people in Xue Yue who weren't scared of his purple spirit.

Besides, Lin Feng would even dare to kill everyone here.

Duan Lie was standing on the stage. He coldly glanced at Lin Feng and said: "You will pay the price for what you have done."

"Duan Lie, I will offer you a piece of advice. You should be very careful and think about the consequences before taking unnecessary action. Those who try to kill me usually end up dead." Replied Lin Feng.

Lin Feng made himself clear and was completely honest, if Duan Lie tried to kill Lin Feng, Lin Feng would kill him.

The corner of Duan Lie's mouth was trembling. He looked glum. He wanted to kill Lin Feng more than anything else.

"Today, you will die." Said Duan Lie coldly. If Lin Feng didn't die, he would lose face.

His future son-in-law had been killed on the day of the wedding. If Lin Feng, was allowed to walk away, word would spread that Duan Lie and Wen Ren Yan were lying. In a short time, everybody would learn about it. How could he let Lin Feng leave without punishment?

"Arrows!" Duan Lie raised his hand and in a flash, his personal troops started to grab their bows and arrows and got ready to attack Lin Feng.

Arrows were practical because they were a long-range weapon, so many people could attack at once. There were ten thousand personal troops at the front of the crowd, they looked absolutely majestic. These troops were ready to attack at any moment. They had all readied their bows.

The sound of stretching bow strings filled the atmosphere. They were releasing a sharp Qi which covered the stage. The sight of ten thousand people, ready to shoot arrows with such a sharp Qi, was enough to scare anyone away.

But Lin Feng looked as calm and serene in this situation. He was indifferently looking at Duan Lie.

Duan Lie just had to give the order and the ten thousand troops would release their arrows and Lin Feng would die.

Life and Death would be decided in an instant.

When Duan Lie looked into Lin Feng's eyes, he understood. That calm and serene facial expression was a sign of Lin Feng's confidence in his own ability. At the same time, it was also the indication that Lin Feng was daring Duan Lie to act. The best action was for him was to think carefully before giving the troops the next order.

However, his daughter's future husband had just been killed on the day of their wedding, could Duan Lie lower his head and tell the troops to stand down? Did he have the choice?

He was looking into Lin Feng's eyes which were filled with confidence and started hesitating. He was a bit scared. Lin Feng had become so strong that he wasn't even scared of an army of people anymore.

What should he do? Duan Lie was puzzled.

Would Lin Feng let him off?

"Duan Lie, if Lin Feng doesn't die, you will be humiliated for your entire life."

At that moment, Yu Tian Xing whispered these words to Duan

Lie which made Duan Lie shake. Immediately after, he heard something else.

“Don’t worry, Duan Lie, no matter how strong Lin Feng is, there are so many people here, we will all protect you.”

Duan Lie’s pupils started to shrink. He glanced at Yu Tian Xing and immediately after looked more determined than ever.

He slowly waved his hand.

Everybody was staring at Duan Lie’s hand. He waved his hand, Lin Feng would die.

“Die!” Said Duan Lie in a low voice. Deadly Qi invaded the entire atmosphere, the bowstrings emitted a buzzing noise and arrows whistled as they pierced through the air.

A sea of arrows was flying through the sky and moving straight towards Lin Feng.

Besides, at the moment when all these people released their arrows, in the air above Lin Feng, a purple light suddenly invaded the atmosphere.

The gigantic sea of arrows dissolved when they encountered the purple light, that purple lake floating through the air was incredibly corrosive.

“What a scary spirit!” The crowd was astonished. The arrows had been absolutely useless, not a single one even touched Lin Feng’s shadow.

When Duan Lie saw that, his eye started twitching violently but now, the arrows had already been released, he had no choice anymore.

“Kill him! Everybody kill him!” Shouted Duan Lie. In a flash, thousands of troops were attacking Lin Feng. They were all the troops that served his palace. Weak ones were at the Qi layer while the strongest ones were in the early Ling Qi layer. Duan Lie wanted to defeat Lin Feng by using his overwhelming numbers.

But the sea of people didn’t get near Lin Feng yet that the purple lake turned into what seemed to be an endless number of purple snakes which all moved straight towards the troops.

In a flash, a thousand people were instantly tied by the snakes. A thousand snakes had already rushed forwards and tied up a thousand people, how incredible was that!

“Those who want to die will die.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. The snakes suddenly opened their mouths and swallowed the troops they were constricting. In the blink of an eye, a thousand people had been swallowed.

A thousand people had disappeared in an instant.

They had all died!

People's hearts were violently pounding. How terrifying! Lin Feng's spirit was truly terrifying!

He did not even need to move and could easily kill a thousand people, who could stop him?!

Within the troops who farther back, everybody was panic-stricken. They were just blankly staring at the place where there was just a thousand troops who were swallowed in an instant. They all started feeling dizzy. They couldn't stop shaking. They wanted to kill Lin Feng but... Could they?

Lin Feng was a monster, a god of death.

"Kill him! Kill him!" Shouted Duan Lie furiously, he had no choice anymore. In a flash, more people started to rush forward but just when they started to moved forwards, another thousand purple snakes curled around them and swallowing them. Another thousand people had just died.

How hard was it to kill him? Even ten thousand people wasn't enough to kill Lin Feng.

"I can't kill him." Said a scared voice. Some of the army started to run away. Trying to kill Lin Feng was courting death. Even though they were soldiers, why would they die for nothing?

When the crowd saw the soldiers running away, the crowd also started to run away. None of them wanted to die for Duan Lie.

Lin Feng was too terrifying. They couldn't kill him. Trying to kill him was just courting one's own death. There would be no benefit at all. Besides, Duan Lie clearly knew it was impossible but was still trying to convince them to go and fight Lin Feng. Why the hell would they give their lives for Duan Lie!

Chapter 320: Death of a Noble!

In a flash, millions of people had dispersed and were running away in panic which made Duan Lie's eye twitch.

"It's over... It's really over..." said Duan Lie. Lin Feng was extremely strong. What he had feared most had finally come to pass, what everybody had feared. People were astonished, dumbstruck, stupefied.

That spirit surprisingly could turn into thousands of purple snakes which swallowed people. How terrifying! When Lin Feng used that ability, who could fight against him? Even if there were millions of people, they still couldn't kill him.

Lin Feng was a death god, a spirit of death.

All these people weren't the only ones who were stupefied, Lin Feng, was stupefied at his new power as well. He could now understand why the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer had first given him the surplus souls technique, it was monstrously powerful!

That technique had been excruciatingly painful to learn but at that moment, Lin Feng could make a thousand surplus souls appear with his soul strength. These thousand surplus souls could use the power of his purple dragon spirit and then turn into a thousand purple snakes. He could control them individually without a problem. In an instant, he could kill a thousand people.

Therefore, Lin Feng wasn't afraid of fighting against an army of

people any longer. No matter how many people came to attack him, he could kill them.

Besides, he hadn't practiced the technique for a long time but if there was a day where he could create ten thousand surplus souls, that would make him even more terrifying. If he could make ten thousand purple snakes appear, he would be able to kill ten thousand people in the blink of an eye. Who would be able to stop him?

The crowd had the impression that they were caught in a nightmare, Lin Feng was too frightening.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Duan Lie which made Duan Lie's heart start pounding. Lin Feng looked calm and serene but in Duan Lie eyes, he looked like a demon.

"You want to kill me?" Asked Lin Feng coldly, which made Duan Lie's heart jump.

This time, Lin Feng would really kill him.

A moment before, Lin Feng had warned him that before he acted, he should think carefully about the consequences, but he still gave the order to kill Lin Feng.

At that moment, the millions of people had dispersed themselves. They were all unable to compete with Lin Feng so now Lin Feng was probably going to settle his issue with Duan Lie.

“I am a noble of Xue Yue and part of the Duan Clan.” Said Duan Lie sounding cold and detached as if he was trying to convince Lin Feng that he could not kill him.

“I am a Marquis of Xue Yue, the Chi Xie Marquis, Marquis of Yangzhou.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and indifferent. He then continued: “But you, a noble, when you wanted to kill me, it seemed like you forgot about my status!”

Duan Lie was shaking. What Lin Feng meant was that even though Duan Lie was part of the imperial family, if a noble tried to kill a marquis, why would the marquis spare him?

Lin Feng still wanted to kill him.

“All in all, the status of marquis is something that was given to you whereas the title of a noble is something that flows in my veins and blood. If you want to kill me, it is a severe offense against the Imperial Family.” Said Duan Lie using his connection to the Imperial Family which would make other people shiver at the mere mention of it. He was afraid, he was afraid that Lin Feng would really kill him.

He was afraid of Lin Feng. Duan Lie couldn't compete with Lin Feng.

“The blood of the Imperial Family?” Said Lin Feng while laughing.

He then calmly smiled and said: “Duan Han also had the blood of the Imperial Family flowing through his veins, but he tried to kill me, so I killed him. I am still standing here alive and well.”

Duan Lie’s pupils were trembling. Indeed, Lin Feng had killed Duan Tian Lang’s son, he had dared to kill a member of the Imperial Family. Duan Tian Lang was also a noble, but his status had much more value than that of Duan Lie. Lin Feng looked down on Duan Tian Lang so he wasn’t going to care about the insignificant Duan Lie.

A light flashed in Duan Lie’s eyes, he was looking at Yu Tian Xing. He could only rely on him.

Yu Tian Xing didn’t even spare a glance at Duan Lie. He slowly moved away from Duan Lie which made Duan Lie’s heart start to pound.

Yu Tian Xing, a moment before, had promised Duan Lie that he would help him but in the end, nobody could stop Lin Feng, so Yu Tian Xing was moving away and leaving Duan Lie to fight Lin Feng alone.

At that moment, Yu Tian Xing was making fun of Duan Lie in his heart. “How ignorant! Kill Lin Feng? If Duan Tian Lang couldn’t kill Lin Feng, could Duan Lie kill him?”

Lin Feng had killed Duan Lie’s future son-in-law, but he had also killed Duan Tian Lang’s son. Who hated Lin Feng the most? It was

clear at a glance that it was Duan Tian Lang, but Duan Tian Lang wasn't trying to get his revenge on Lin Feng.

The first reason was because Lin Feng had extremely strong companions at the Xuan Qi layer. Duan Tian Lang was not their match.

The second reason was that the second prince of Xue Yue had made it clear that Lin Feng was part of his faction. If anyone dared to provoke Lin Feng, wouldn't it have been the same as provoking the second prince?

If Yu Tian Xing tried to kill Lin Feng, he would at least try to do it secretly but at that moment he wasn't thinking about killing Lin Feng anymore. Becoming one of Duan Wu Ya's enemies wouldn't be wise.

Concerning the promise that Yu Tian Xing made to Duan Lie, there were two reasons, the first one was that a stroke of luck could have happened and Duan Lie could have killed Lin Feng, and the second was that even if he didn't manage to kill Lin Feng, it didn't matter because Lin Feng would be infuriated and would kill Duan Lie.

If Lin Feng killed Duan Lie, another member of the Imperial Clan, everybody would be furious, the Imperial Clan would not be able to take it. Everybody would see Lin Feng as an enemy. For Yu Tian Xing who had always wanted Lin Feng dead, that was a great opportunity.

Only a moron like Duan Lie would have believed Yu Tian Xing. He really thought that they were going to kill Lin Feng if he failed, how stupid!

At that moment, he only had to stay back and patiently watch the situation progress. No matter who died, for Yu Tian Xing, the result would always be the same and it would lead to his true goal.

On that day, Lin Feng had come to the wedding and was really aggressive. Yu Tian Xing was overjoyed because Lin Feng had, once again, offended people who belonged to an important sphere of influence.

Yu Tian Xing wasn't the only one thinking this, Yu Tian Chen's eyes were twinkling as well. Lin Feng was way too monstrous, if there was an opportunity, they definitely had to kill him.

If they waited too long and Lin Feng broke through to the Xuan Qi layer, it would be way too dangerous for them to act against him. They had to kill him before that. Lin Feng had already broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer and was only one step away from the Xuan Qi layer.

Therefore, Yu Tian Xing, Yue Tian Chen and other people's sinister plan was to use Duan Lie, because he was a fool.

Lin Feng obviously didn't care about these people's sinister motives. The only thing he knew was that Duan Lie was a dead man.

He took a step forward while releasing a deadly Qi. He was slowly moving towards Duan Lie.

“Lin Feng!” Shouted Duan Lie, whose face had twisted, he looked extremely hideous. He had already understood that Yu Tian Xing wouldn’t help him, he was set up.

“I warned you a few times and told you to think carefully before you act, but you still gave the order to kill me. Since it cannot be taken back, you will die for giving the order to kill me.” Said Lin Feng indifferently, while releasing sword Qi which invaded the entire atmosphere. The sword Qi enveloped Duan Lie’s body, it was extremely painful.

He finally understood something, the focus of the ceremony was Lin Feng. Nobody could stop Lin Feng.

Amongst cultivators under the Xuan Qi layer, nobody was able to defeat Lin Feng. But, Duan Lie didn’t know that at all, the crowd didn’t know that either. Were cultivators who had just reached the Xuan Qi layer the ones who could defeat Lin Feng?

In Celestial River, Lin Feng had killed a several cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. Besides, that was already some time ago. Lin Feng, at that moment, could already make a thousand surplus souls appear compared to his previous one hundred. If he used all of his terrifying techniques and coupled them with the power of his purple spirit, how terrifying would that be?

Nobody knew because Lin Feng had not come across a reason to

use it.

“No need to run, the situation is hopeless now. From the moment when you gave the order to kill me, you were already a dead man. Duan Lie, I already gave you enough chances.”

Lin Feng was looking Duan Lie in the eye. His voice was cold and indifferent. Immediately after, his legs moved and he jumped through the air straight towards Duan Lie.

“Would you dare?” Shouted Duan Lie furiously. He was frantically moving backwards. However, at that moment, a storm of purple snakes moved towards him, it seemed like there were countless purple snakes surrounding him and attacking from every single direction. Immediately, Duan Lie was completely consumed by the snakes.

That move made people’s hearts stop. It was over. They were looking at the purple light where Duan Lie was. The crowd understood that Duan Lie had already died.

As expected, when the purple snakes dispersed, Duan Lie’s body wasn’t there anymore. It had vanished without trace.

Duan Lie had died.

People’s hearts were pounding. Yu Tian Xing and Yue Tian Chen had a cold smile. Their hearts were rotten and pumped venom instead of blood. They definitely wanted to set a trap for Lin Feng

to get rid of him once and for all.

Chapter 321: The General

On the vast road outside of the Imperial City, three people on horses were galloping at full speed against the wind.

They were wearing bamboo hats, long chang paos and kept their heads low and their faces were hidden.

Besides, two of them seemed to be wearing bronze masks under their bamboo hats, making their faces completely hidden.

Then finally, these people arrived at the external part of the Imperial City and stopped in front of Qing Xin's restaurant.

The Qing Xin restaurant's staff took their horses to the stable and let the three people enter the restaurant.

The three people remained silent and immediately went to a table. They looked calm and serene.

“Hello, how may I help you?” the waiter asked. The one who seemed to be the leader raised his head. He looked clean and handsome, but on his clean and handsome face, one could see a mysterious and profound expression in his eyes. He also gave off the impression that he was very mature, that he had already experienced many things in this world. The expression in his eyes almost seemed like it was filled with the arrogance of a cultivator.

“We would like a pot of tea, two jars of alcohol and a plate of

pickles.” the middle aged man said in a soft and friendly tone.

“Understood.” the staff member replied and immediately left.

“General, should I make some discreet inquiries?” the person next to the middle aged man asked. The middle aged man just slightly shook his head and said in a low voice: “Wait a while.”

The other person slightly nodded but didn’t add anything.

At that moment, the atmosphere in Qing Xin’s restaurant became very lively and noisy. Many people started talking unceasingly and sounded very excited.

“Your Excellency, what is so exciting?” At that moment, a voice spread in the restaurant. Someone replied: “Haha, you shouldn’t stay in the restaurant forever, otherwise you will miss out on all the spectacular events, like Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu’s wedding ceremony.”

“Too many people went to see Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu’s wedding. Even if I did go, what was there to see?” the other person said while shaking his head.

“What was there to see? Let me tell you something, the people who were there will not be able to stop talking about it! Such an event is amazing and unforgettable, don’t you think?”

“Amazing? Unforgettable? Are you not exaggerating too much!”

“Indeed, a wedding is a spectacular event, but after a few days, you will forget about it.”

“Spectacular, but you can quickly forget about it? Well, you guys should go there and you will see. Everybody is there. Everyone who went there is still in shock right now, today is Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu’s wedding ceremony, but Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu’s father, Duan Lie both died. Someone killed them.”

Wen Ren Yan and Duan Lie had been killed!

When people heard that, their hearts started to pound and their faces became rigid. In the restaurant, many people stopped talking. But immediately after, these people burst into an uproar.

“What happened? Speak more clearly, what really happened?”

“Yes, how could Wen Ren Yan and Duan Lie die? Who would dare to kill them? Who even has the strength to kill them?”

These questions were bursting forth from people’s mouths, but they were only wondering how they died and if the information was false. How could Wen Ren Yan and Duan Lie die? Who had the courage and strength to kill them?

The three people with bamboo hats also seemed interested. When the two masked people heard that Wen Ren Yan had died, their hearts started to race. The man was speaking in riddles to

make it sound more exciting.

But at that moment, the man was keeping his interlocutors in suspense and did not tell them the most interesting details. He was just smiling indifferently.

“Your Excellency, the pickles are on me today.” Said a voice breaking the silence. The one called “Your Excellency”, smiled and said: “Alright, since everyone wants to know, I will tell you.”

“You might remember that in the past, there was a person who set a city on fire, killing hundreds of thousands of enemy soldiers and also crossed into another country to save the princess.”

“Of course, I remember. It was Lin Feng. Who could forget his name?”

“Hehe.” That person smiled wholeheartedly and immediately said: “Lin Feng is back. He came back to the Imperial City.”

“Lin Feng is back.” The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng had disappeared for such a long time and had finally returned.

“Your Excellency, the fact that Lin Feng came back... Does it have anything to do with Wen Ren Yan and Duan Lie?” another person asked.

“Of course it does! Don’t you all know? Lin Feng was a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect just like Wen Ren Yan, but when Duan Tian Lang

exterminated the Yun Hai Sect, Wen Ren Yan chose to betray the sect while Lin Feng remained true. In the end, they surrounded him and tried to kill him, but he battled his way past the army. He was then made the new patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect. This is why Lin Feng hates Duan Tian Lang and went to kill his son as revenge. Besides, this time, he went and personally punished Wen Ren Yan for his betrayal of the sect. Duan Lie wanted to avenge Wen Ren Yan's death but Lin Feng killed him in retaliation.

It sounded like that middle aged man was talking about a legendary hero which made everyone grow even more excited. They could imagine Duan Tian Lang surrounding the Yun Hai Sect with an army and Lin Feng, alone, brandishing his sword and carving a bloody path through his enemies, like a hero.

They could also imagine Lin Feng in Duan Lie's palace, killing a traitor, like a hero of justice.

Their hearts were beating faster and faster. Surprisingly, on the day of Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu's wedding ceremony, Lin Feng had killed Wen Ren Yan and Duan Lie. As expected, his actions were insane.

Unfortunately, they hadn't gone to watch and they had missed the show, what a pity.

The man called "Your Excellency" by the others saw that the crowd seemed satisfied. However, at that moment, a few silhouettes appeared. Two ice cold and blood thirsty eyes were staring at him. That person was releasing an extremely dense and deadly Qi.

“When did that happen?” that person asked, sounding cold and detached which made the man surprised. He quickly replied: “Not long ago, now the news is spreading in the external part of the city. Very quickly, everybody will come to know about it. I did not lie about anything at all.”

The person’s silhouette flickered and they immediately moved back to where they were. He looked at the man with the bamboo hat and said: “General, it just happened recently.”

“Let’s go.” the middle aged man said while standing up and finishing his cup of tea. Immediately after, he left Qing Xin’s restaurant and walked towards Duan Lie’s palace, but when they arrived, there was nobody in sight. It seemed like the man was telling the truth. The news that Lin Feng had returned and killed Duan Lie and Wen Ren Yan was spreading quickly throughout the external part of the city and would soon reach the interior of the Imperial City.

Duan Lie was a Noble of Xue Yue. The death of a noble wasn’t a normal affair. It was a very serious thing which would draw the attention of the Xue Yue elites.

The storm could not be suppressed this time because Lin Feng had killed another member of the Duan Clan. He wouldn’t be able to remain unscathed for much longer. Lin Feng’s enemies wouldn’t let him have any peace.

For example, Yu Tian Xing and Yu Tian Chen had left Duan Lie’s

palace and after that, they had already started spreading rumours about what had happened, trying to plot against Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was incredibly gifted. They couldn't let him continue to live.

Lin Feng hadn't thought about the series of events and the people plotting against him. He had just followed his heart, he killed Wen Ren Yan because he had betrayed the Yun Hai Sect and then sullied its name, if he let him live, Lin Feng wouldn't be able to find peace in his heart.

Lin Feng didn't regret killing Wen Ren Yan. Then, Duan Lie, in order to avenge Wen Ren Yan, tried to kill him, Lin Feng was, of course, not going to show mercy on anyone who tried to kill him.

It had caused trouble but Lin Feng had no regrets at all.

Lin Feng was entering the Celestial Academy for the first time in a while.

These days, Lin Feng was already famous, especially since he had also cruelly beaten the fourth ranked disciple of the academy, Du Gu Shang. He had forced Du Gu Shang to kneel down in front of him. That was a cruel and heartless humiliation.

It was said that Lin Feng had even cut off Du Gu Xiao's arm in Yangzhou City.

Coupled with the fact that he had accomplished many great accomplishments, it was possible to say that everybody had already seen Lin Feng's portrait. There were even many people who considered Lin Feng as the pride of the Celestial Academy. Even if, from the beginning to the end, Lin Feng had never considered himself as a student of the academy, he had only gone there to practice cultivation, nothing more.

“It's Lin Feng.”

“Look, Lin Feng came back to the academy!”

Inside the Celestial Academy, voices were crying out, one after the other. They had seen Lin Feng! That incredible person who was already well known within Xue Yue had returned and was at the academy.

Chapter 322: The Era of the Geniuses

At the moment Lin Feng arrived at the Celestial Academy, two pieces of information reached the ears of the elites. Rich and powerful people in the Imperial City liked to gather information.

The first thing was that Lin Feng, on Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu's wedding day, had killed Wen Ren Yan and Duan Lie. He was extremely audacious. Everybody knew about the events that occurred.

The second thing was that Liu Cang Lan had almost been executed, but was saved thanks to Lin Feng, and he was now back in the imperial city.

Of course, not many people knew about these things. Only those who had a high social status were able to receive the information.

Liu Cang Lan had almost been executed by Duan Tian Lang, but Lin Feng arrived at the most crucial moment and saved Liu Cang Lan; however, Liu Cang Lan's cultivation had been sealed. Besides, the mutual hatred that Liu Cang Lan and Duan Tian Lang shared was endless.

Duan Tian Lang's son, Duan Han, had died because of it.

Even though Duan Tian Lang created false charges against Liu Cang Lan and was at the origin of a conspiracy, he couldn't control his hatred for Liu Cang Lan and Lin Feng. It was clear that if he had the chance to kill Lin Feng and Liu Cang Lan, he wouldn't

hesitate.

Under such circumstances, Liu Cang Lan surprisingly wasn't scared of coming back to the Imperial City. Wasn't he scared of dying?

This information was spreading behind the scenes, silently and secretly; it was extremely dangerous.

Many people wanted to put Lin Feng in a fatal position. Besides, this time, he had killed Duan Lie, which was one of the worst offenses possible. Lin Feng had given people an excuse to get rid of him.

.....

Lin Feng knew nothing about that. At that moment, he had come back to the Celestial Academy.

At that moment, he was in the palace, which hosted the living quarters, and there were many familiar faces: Jing Yun, Yi Xue, Duan Feng, Yuan Shan... They were all there. After Lin Feng left, they had stayed at the Celestial Academy, enhancing their cultivation. Besides, because Lin Feng hadn't been there, they hadn't invited anyone else because nobody was as strong as Lin Feng. Besides, Wen Ao Xue also came by once in a while.

These peoples' cultivations increased very quickly.

Jing Yun had already broken through to the third Ling Qi layer, Yu Shan to the fifth Ling Qi layer, and then Duan Feng, who was the fastest amongst them. Duan Feng had become much more mature than back on the road. He had surprisingly already broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer. He had extremely high natural talent, which greatly shocked Lin Feng.

Duan Feng had progressed way too quickly. Maybe it was due to the strength of his blood spirit. Duan Feng's body was filled with extremely strong blood vessels; therefore, his natural talent was also extraordinary.

When Lin Feng saw those few old friends, he felt a little bit relieved. In the past, these people wanted to follow him, but he had refused. They had stayed at the academy, which turned out to be very beneficial.

They were still very young; they were not extremely strong. Calmly staying at the academy to practice was obviously the best thing for them.

But considering the level they had reached while Lin Feng was away, they could start going outside to practice. Above the third Ling Qi layer, a cultivator wasn't considered as weak anymore, especially when it came to such young people with elevated backgrounds.

"Brother, Lin Feng, what is your cultivation level?" asked Duan Feng with impatience flashing in his eyes.

Lin Feng had accomplished great things in Xue Yue, so he was probably extremely strong already. He had maybe broken through to the Xuan Qi layer!

When Duan Feng asked Lin Feng that question, everybody started impatiently staring at Lin Feng.

“Young Master must have broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.” said Yi Xue.

“I’m not very far from breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer.” nodded Lin Feng. He could already feel that his cultivation level reached the very peak of the Ling Qi layer. Breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer would happen at the right moment.

Lin Feng was convinced that he was going to break through to the Xuan Qi layer very soon.

When the crowd heard Lin Feng’s confirmation, they were stupefied. As expected, they had guessed right. Lin Feng was soon going to break through to the Xuan Qi layer. His natural talent was monstrous.

Jing Yun had known Lin Feng for a while already, and no matter what Lin Feng did, she wasn’t surprised much anymore. With Lin Feng, it seemed like miracles were a common occurrence.

But Yuan Shan didn’t remain indifferent. The muscles on his face were twitching. That guy had monstrous natural talent!

Lin Feng had only broken through to the third Ling Qi layer when he had joined the academy. He had progressed step by step, and at that moment was only one step away from the Xuan Qi layer.

How mighty did the words “Xuan Qi Layer” sound? For Lin Feng, it was like a dream.

Lin Feng had dreamed of breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer for a long time.

In the past, a disciple had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer at the Celestial Academy, but they were much older than Lin Feng and didn’t have the same talent as him.

Apart from him, nobody else could rival Lin Feng in the entire academy. The second ranked disciple, Qiong Bi Luo, couldn’t compete with Lin Feng either.

“Hahahahahaha.....” At that moment, a loud laugh rolled through the atmosphere and pierced through their ears. Yuan Shan was in shock.

“What a strong Qi! Could it be that someone else has broken through to the Xuan Qi layer?”

Yuan Shan was stupefied. In a short time, after having broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, a person’s Qi would become

monstrously strong. Besides, the powerful Qi fell onto the academy again.

“Let’s go and see.”

Lin Feng could clearly sense that the Qi was strong. Leaving the Ling Qi layer and breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer was like penetrating into a completely different world.

They left the room and went to the central cultivation tower. That loud laugh had come from the central cultivation tower.

At that moment, Lin Feng wasn’t the only who was going to see what was going on there. People were equally coming from all directions and walking towards the central cultivation tower.

At the top of the cultivation tower, there was a silhouette, and a strong wind was blowing around them, which made them look majestic.

Looking at the person’s body, a vast quantity of pure Qi was orbiting it. It was dazzling to the eyes. That was exactly the symbol of a cultivator who had just broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.

“Qiong Bi Luo has advanced!”

The crowd was shaking. The second ranked student of the academy, Qiong Bi Luo, had followed his senior’s steps and was the second person to break through to the Xuan Qi layer. It was

incredibly majestic.

“It seems like the modern geniuses of Xue Yue are all starting to rise.”

The crowd had the impression that they were in a dream. The Celestial Academy had another genius. Besides, in the Imperial City of Xue Yue, many people had also broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. These all represented a potential strength for Xue Yue in the future. Cultivators at the Xuan Qi Layer all had unique skills which made them remarkable.

People firmly believed the rumors that a new era would start because of the Xue Yu Competition.

That era would be called the “Era of the Geniuses.” There would be an endless quantity of geniuses who would constantly surpass other geniuses, becoming unparalleled geniuses. The only words which could describe such an event were: the Era of the Geniuses.

Chapter 323: Bi Luo's Insanity

In the air, that proud silhouette was arrogantly smiling.

“Blue Void Spirit, appear!” Said the silhouette in the air. In a flash, his spirit appeared.

The Blue Void Spirit was blue and looked pure and clean like water. It was as clear as the sky. It transformed into a storm of raindrops but the raindrops weren't falling towards the ground, these raindrops seemed like they were illusionary as well.

“What a marvellous spirit! I had never seen Qiong Bi Luo use his spirit before. I wonder how strong his Blue Void Spirit is?”

When the crowd saw that clear blue spirit which looked like water, they were thinking that it must be incredible. They were also very curious.

“Blue Void Spirit!” When Qiong Bi Luo sensed his spirit, he smiled arrogantly and said: “From today, I, Qiong Bi Luo, am the best disciple of the entire Celestial Academy. Du Bi or Wen Ao Xue are no match for me anymore. Besides, concerning Lin Feng, even if he breaks through to the Xuan Qi layer, in my eyes, he is just a nobody.”

Qiong Bi Luo was full of confidence but the arrogance contained in his voice rose to the heavens, it shocked many people.

Qiong Bi Luo was the second ranked disciple of the Celestial Academy. He was saying that Wen Ao Xue couldn't compete with him, they could understand that, then he was saying that Lin Feng was a nobody in his eyes, they could also understand that, but Du Bi... He had been the top disciple of the Celestial Academy for such a long time. He was extremely gifted, but Qiong Bi Luo, who had just broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, dared say that Du Bi couldn't compete with him anymore. The crowd didn't know how Qiong Bi Luo suddenly became so arrogant.

At that moment, Qiong Bi Luo was looking down at the crowd with an arrogant smile on his face.

He, of course, knew what the crowd was thinking. These last couple of years, he had always been ranked second, oppressed by Du Bi.

“I, Qiong Bi Luo, will prove what I say. In three days, here, I will challenge Du Bi, Wen Ao Xue and Du Gu Shang... Oh and if the so called genius, Lin Feng, wants to come, I don't mind either.

Qiong Bi Luo smiled coldly and said: “Tell everyone about it. In three days, I will respectfully await them all here.”

When he finished talking, Qiong Bi Luo started walking through the air. In a flash, he had disappeared and nobody knew where he had gone. The crowd was just standing there, dumbstruck.

Qiong Bi Luo surprisingly wanted, to challenge Du Bi, Wen Ao Xue, Du Gu Shang and Lin Feng, how arrogant! After having

broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, Qiong Bi Luo had become overconfident, considering everything and everyone beneath his notice.

“Could it be that Qiong Bi Luo’s spirit has something special which enables him to become the first ranked student in the academy? Could he even rival the eight high officials?”

Many people had similar thoughts, because none of them had any idea what caused this. However, Qiong Bi Luo’s confidence was really giving them a feeling of power, it was shaking their soul.

At that moment, Lin Feng was also standing in the crowd and observing the vanishing silhouette. Lights were flashing in his eyes.

A moment before, Lin Feng, using his earth fusion, was able to investigate Qiong Bi Luo’s spirit. He found out that the raindrops of the Blue Void Spirit actually sealed the atmosphere. The air inside and outside of that blue matter was not entirely the same.

“That Blue Void is almost like another world. Could it be that Bi Luo had obtained his name because of his spirit?” thought Lin Feng but he immediately shook his head. Qiong Bi Luo seemed to be very interested in becoming the first ranked disciple of the academy. He is even trying to prove to everyone that he is the best, immediately after having broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.

Note: Bi Luo = Blue Void

Besides, what annoyed Lin Feng was that without any provocation, someone had involved him again. Qiong Bi Luo had said Lin Feng's name. He despised Lin Feng's rise to fame so much that he even called him a nobody.....

“How rude! When Young Master Lin Feng breaks through to the Xuan Qi layer, he would easily teach him a lesson on manners.” Said Yi Xue angrily. Qiong Bi Luo had said that Lin Feng was a nobody, how rude!

Lin Feng hadn't broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, but he was much younger than Qiong Bi Luo. Lin Feng, at the same age as Qiong Bi Luo, would be much stronger than him!

Lin Feng didn't care and smiled. He glanced at Yi Xue to show her some support. She was really bright, intelligent and full of compassion.

She didn't say that Lin Feng was weaker than Qiong Bi Luo, instead, she said that Lin Feng would eventually be stronger than Qiong Bi Luo. At the same time, she was advising Lin Feng not to be swayed away by personal feelings and to avoid the challenge. Yi Xue's sentence, which sounding simple and innocent, actually contained many hidden meanings.

Yi Xue looked at Lin Feng with her head slightly lowered. Her face was slightly red as well. When looking at Lin Feng's eyes, she had the feeling that she was a tiny and powerless person, she felt that she couldn't escape from Lin Feng's eyes.

“Let’s go.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. However, they hadn’t even started walking when Lin Feng stopped again. In front of him, a girl was standing and slightly lowering her head. Both her fists were firmly clenched.

“Yun.... Xi! Lin Feng vaguely remembered this young girl. Her name was similar to Yun Xi whom he had met in Celestial River but the second character wasn’t the same.

“You still remember me.” Said Yun Xi while raising her head, her face was completely red and she looked a bit shy.

Lin Feng surprisingly remembered her name.

“Yes.” Said Lin Feng while smiling and nodding.

When they met, a girl was trying to convince Yun Xi to have a one night stand with Du Gu Shang in exchange for a cultivation room, however Yun Xi said that she liked Lin Feng, but she didn’t have any perverted thoughts and was still pure. After that, Du Gu Shang threatened Yun Xi, he was extremely aggressive. Lin Feng wasn’t able to ignore it and humiliated Du Gu Shang, making him kneel down in front of him. After that, he accompanied Yun Xi to a room in the central cultivator tower.

Lin Feng could obviously remember these things.

“Lin Feng.....” When Yun Xi saw that Lin Feng was nodding, excitement appeared on her face. She wanted to say something but

her lips weren't moving, she was just blankly staring at him.

“Are... you ...alright?” After a moment, Yun Xi could only say three words.

“I'm fine, thank you.” Said Lin Feng with a warm smile on his face. Yun Xi felt a bit dizzy. She was usually very extraverted but now, she was quiet and introvert.

“I'm leaving. Keep practicing hard.” Said Lin Feng while nodding at Yun Xi. Immediately after, he left.

Yun Xi raised her head and saw the people leaving. She couldn't help but feel hopeless.

She would try to leave the tower to walk around more in the future and see if she could meet Lin Feng again. She hadn't expected to meet Lin Feng at that moment. Unfortunately, she hadn't been able to say anything.

“There are such beautiful women by his side.” Thought Yun Xi with a strange feeling in her heart. All the girls around Lin Feng were very beautiful.

“Yu Xin, don't think too much. They don't belong to the same world as us.” Said a young girl next to Yun Xi trying to cheer her up. She was Yun Xi's friend. In the past, she had also seen everything and it was clear to her that Yun Xi liked Lin Feng, especially after that day. She had become obsessed with Lin Feng.

But the gap between her and Lin Feng would always be monstrous. They didn't belong to the same world.

Yu Xin looked at her friend and her friend noticed that she had tears in her eyes. They had a brief encounter but they lived in separate worlds, they would always be able to meet for a brief moment, but they would always be separated again. Yun Xi was sad. Lin Feng was the only one for her.

Lin Feng wasn't keeping track of their meetings. That girl didn't occupy any special place in Lin Feng's heart. However, he had noticed the girl's feelings.

"Lin Feng, it seems like she likes you." Said Lan Jiao with a smile yet not a smile on her face.

"So what?" Said Lin Feng while looking at Lan Jiao.

"Do you think that it's dull and uninteresting? Why wouldn't you accept a girl who likes you? For people like you, having several women is normal." Continued Lan Jiao with a teasing smile on her lips.

What she said surprised the few other girls who were there as well. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, cultivation was the most important thing but relationships were also important. There were some men who felt that three or four women still weren't enough, it was the same for all cultivators, some extremely strong female cultivators also had multiple men. Of course, the first case was the

most common, the second was more rare.

Lin Feng looked at her with a twinkle in his eyes and said: “So what are you are trying to say is that even if someone like you wanted to become my girlfriend, I should accept, right?”

When Lan Jiao heard Lin Feng, she was stupefied. She immediately glared at Lin Feng and swore in a low voice: “Who would want to become the girlfriend of a bastard? Stupid fool.”

Chapter 324: Heaven and Earth Are Cruel!

Two days had passed and the news of Qiong Bi Luo's challenge to Du Bi, Wen Ao Xue and Lin Feng was already widespread.

Many people were discussing it, which meant that Lin Feng was included in their conversations. However, at that moment, he was calmly lying on a bench made from stone in a courtyard. On his side was Meng Qing who, as before, looked neither cold nor warm. She was gazing into the distance but it was impossible to tell what she was thinking.

At the same time, Lan Jiao, Jing Yun and Yi Xue were also in the courtyard. Lan Jiao was showing the two other girls what problems hindered the efficiency of their cultivation practice. Lin Feng was glancing at the girls once in a while, and he could see that they were getting along really well.

At that moment, someone, outside, was knocking at the door.

“Come in.” Said Lin Feng and immediately after the door opened and a silhouette with a bamboo hat appeared.

That person raised their head and looked at Lin Feng. A bronze mask appeared in Lin Feng's field of vision. Under that mask were twinkling eyes.

“Lin Feng, brother!” Shouted the person. Lin Feng looked surprised and then stood up.

“Po Jun!”

“Lin Feng, brother, it’s me!” Said Po Jun while entering the courtyard. The door then slowly closed itself.

“Po Jun, when did you come to the Imperial City?” Lin Feng was surprised. He walked towards Po Jun. Liu Cang Lan had told the elite troops to stay with Lin Feng but Po Jun and Han Man left with Liu Cang Lan and not Lin Feng.

Po Jun should have been in Duan Ren and not in the Imperial City. How come he was in the imperial city?

“Lin Feng, brother, we came back to the Imperial City three days ago. It’s just that the Celestial Academy doesn’t allow other to enter. The last two days, I’ve been trying to find a solution.

“We?” Whispered Lin Feng. “Who else is in the Imperial City?”

“Han Man and the General are here as well. Lin Feng, the general wants to see you as well.” Said Po Jun sounding serious which worried Lin Feng. Liu Cang Lan had rushed from Duan Ren to the Imperial City because he wanted to see Lin Feng. It seemed like he had something important to tell him, otherwise, Liu Cang wouldn’t have taken such risks and personally come back to the Imperial City.

Lin Feng, of course, understood that the Imperial City was

dangerous place for Liu Cang Lan.

“Let’s go.” Said Lin Feng. He didn’t feel like talking there anymore.

“Alright.” Said Po Jun while nodding and immediately turned around. Then they left at top speed.

In the middle of the courtyard, the girls were a bit surprised. Besides, Meng Qing calmly and peacefully stood up, and then followed Lin Feng.

“Meng Qing, you can stay here. If there’s no problem, I will be back quickly.” Said Lin Feng while turning around and looking at Meng Qing. Meng Qing looked surprised and then nodded.

Lin Feng and Po Jun left together. These days, Lin Feng was catching up with Meng Qing in terms of strength. If there was a great danger and he was unable to ensure his safety, maybe the situation would be dangerous for Meng Qing as well.

Po Jun brought Lin Feng to a restaurant. The decoration of that restaurant was very simple but it was very calm and peaceful. There were only a few clients.

At a table which was in the middle of the restaurant, two people wearing bamboo hats were calmly sitting and watching people entering the restaurant. They raised their heads.

“Lin Feng, brother!” Shouted Han Man while standing up!

“Han Man.” Lin Feng glanced at Han Man and then looked at the other person. Liu Cang Lan looked thinner and paler than before.

“Uncle Liu!” Shouted Lin Feng.

Liu Cang Lan slightly nodded and said: “Lin Feng, come here and sit down.”

Lin Feng slightly nodded and then immediately sat down facing Liu Cang Lan. He then asked: “Uncle Liu, why did you come to the Imperial City?”

“I came to talk to you.” Said Liu Cang Lan and continued: “Lin Feng, how are Qing Kuang and the others doing?”

“The three of them are fine. They are all in Yangzhou City.”

“That’s good. Too bad that the Chi Xie army is not here anymore.” Said Liu Cang Lan. He then sighed: “Maybe I should go and join Jiu Chi Xie.”

“Uncle Liu, you....” Lin Feng was smiling wryly. He didn’t know what to say. Last time, the consequences of the plot against Liu Cang Lan had been too serious. Even though he was wearing a bamboo hat, his hair was greying more and more each day. Liu Cang Lan looked much too old.

But Ren Qing Kuang's experience when it came to military strategy etc. couldn't compare with that of Liu Cang Lan. Liu Cang Lan's friend, who was like a brother to him, had died and Liu Cang Lan's cultivation had been sealed.

Besides, all the accusations against him were false. Liu Cang Lan had devoted his life to Xue Yue and this is how he was rewarded.

“Lin Feng, Mo Yue's crown prince, Mo Jie, broke through to the Xuan Qi layer after the war. It is said that he has already broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer. He's much stronger than before. A short time ago, he also sent some troops to Duan Ren City. People there are old, weak and some are even wounded. Besides, the city was set on fire last time but we haven't been able to repair it, so it's in ruins. Besides, I am useless now. If Mo Jie is willing, he can easily attack the Duan Ren Border.”

When Lin Feng heard Liu Cang Lan, he was stupefied. Mo Jie had attacked Duan Ren again!

“Xue Yue didn't send troops as reinforcement?”

Liu Cang Lan shook his head and said: “After what happened, I became a high ranking official but they still refused my requests to send me reinforcements. They even refused aid to help reconstruct Duan Ren City. In other words, Xue Yue has already given up Duan Ren City and the vast Duan Ren Border. Whether it be the people or the city, the country doesn't care about any of them. Mo Yue could just dive straight in and slaughter everybody.”

Lin Feng was astonished. They had refused to send reinforcement troops and refused to repair the city. They had given up Duan Ren City and they were almost delivering it to Mo Yue.

“But I am afraid for the people of Xue Yue. If Mo Jie, on the other side of the Duan Ren Border, gave the order, the Mo Yue troops can cross the Duan Ren Border but they must pay attention to whom they kill and which cities they attack, it cannot be random slaughter.” Said Liu Cang Lan making Lin Feng grow surprised. Mo Jie could give the order to cross the Duan Ren Border but then the troops couldn’t destroy cities as they wished.

Everything sounded like a joke.

“Lin Feng, it must also sound like a joke for you as if the Imperial Family doesn’t care about its people. They are giving their people to Mo Yue, but Mo Yue is a person who gives the order not to randomly kill, it’s simply ridiculous.” Said Liu Cang Lan while laughing to himself, he then grabbed his glass of alcohol, raised it and drained it down in one gulp.

“Cough cough!”

Liu Cang Lan coughed. He was shaking and looked very weak. Lin Feng wanted to help him but Liu Cang Lan stopped him with his hand.

“Come Lin Feng, drink some alcohol. There is no other issue that

I need to tell you about. I just wanted to tell you these things and drink some alcohol with you.” Said Liu Cang Lan. He felt lonely. During the war, he had lost over a hundred thousand of his soldiers and their bones littered the ground. The last remaining soldiers had followed Lin Feng and were in Yangzhou City. The only person left by Liu Cang Lan’s side was Liu Fei.

But there were some things which Liu Cang Lan wasn’t willing to talk about with Liu Fei so he didn’t have someone with whom he could share his burden.

That proud general, who had reached the clouds, ended up bitterly emotionless with no remaining brilliance or glory. An endless sadness had invaded his heart.

“Let’s drink!” Said Lin Feng while raising his glass and then downing it. Immediately after, he filled Liu Cang Lan’s glass back up. He didn’t what to advise to Liu Cang Lan, he also had nothing to advise Liu Cang Lan about.

They were just downing glasses one after the other. Liu Cang Lan’s face was becoming paler and paler but he wasn’t showing any signs that he wanted to stop drinking. He was still downing glasses.

“Lin Feng, when I die, I hope that you will take good care of Fei Fei. She’s never had parents since childhood. She has been through many hardships while growing up, because of me. She also has a bad temper... I hope that you can forgive her.”

Even though Liu Cang Lan had drunk a lot of alcohol, he was still conscious. He was looking Lin Feng in the eyes while talking.

“Uncle Liu, otherwise you could stay in the Imperial City, don’t go back.”

Liu Cang Lan shook his head. A deep and profound smile appeared on his face and he said: “There is something which must be done, besides, before leaving, there is something which I would like to help you with.”

“Help me with something?” Lin Feng didn’t understand what Liu Cang Lan meant.

“Someday, you will understand. I will just tell you one sentence.” Said Liu Cang Lan and then made a pause. Immediately after, he intensely and fixedly stared Lin Feng straight in the eyes and said slowly: “Heaven and Earth are cruel to treat its creatures like straw dogs!”

Lin Feng’s heart suddenly started shaking. He had, obviously, already heard these words. He had never thought that he would hear these words from Liu Cang Lan.

Such words coming from the general, who was a soft and friendly person, was astonishing!

Chapter 325: Perilous Encirclement!

“Heaven and Earth are cruel to treat its creatures like stray dogs!”

In that and cold and cruel world, cultivation was based on one heartless principle, one had to constantly become stronger. That was the only way to way to handle the heartlessness of heaven and earth. Giving up and dying because of the cruel rules of the world was easy.

When Liu Cang Lan finished talking, he stood up, he immediately walked towards the exit.

“Follow me, we’re going back to Duan Ren City.”

Po Jun and Han Man glanced at Lin Feng, nodded and immediately left, following Liu Cang Lan.

Lin Feng was still sitting and remained silent. No matter what reason had just pushed Liu Cang Lan to leave, he had just come to drink a few glasses of alcohol with Lin Feng and chat, nothing more.

However, were the meaning of his words as simple as that?

Lin Feng raised his glass, downed it and put it back on the table. He was sitting at that table in the restaurant, alone and thinking about the meaning of those words.

Liu Cang Lan had rushed from Duan Ren City over to the Imperial City because he wanted to tell that to Lin Feng, “Heaven and Earth are cruel to treat the creatures like stray dogs!”

Did it contain a hidden message?

After what seemed to be a long period of time, Lin Feng stood up and immediately left.

But Lin Feng wasn't in a hurry to leave, he had only taken a few steps and he stopped again. He gazed into the distance and said indifferently: “I've been here for such a long time, I should probably leave now.”

The atmosphere was calm, it was slightly raining and there was a slight chill in the air.

In the distance where Lin Feng was looking, there was a silhouette. That person was looking at Lin Feng. How powerful! He hadn't shown any signs of his presence but Lin Feng knew he was there.

“Who are you?”

Lin Feng looked in the distance in a detached way, his eyes looked cold.

“Lin Feng, you are only the officer of the Chi Xie troops and you dared to kill Duan Lie. This is an unforgivable crime. Today, you must come with me.” Said the person sounding cold and detached which made Lin Feng narrow his eyes. A cold light filled that person’s eyes.

“Show yourselves. Since you have all come, what’s the point in hiding?” Said Lin Feng indifferently. Immediately, in the distant darkness, some silhouettes appeared and all started to fill the rooftops one after the other. They were looking at Lin Feng with cold glares. They all had fierce glares, none of them seemed to be weak.

Then they all jumped through the air until they arrived near Lin Feng, and then surrounded him.

“You still haven’t told me. Who are you?” Asked Lin Feng.

At the start, he thought that these people’s target was Liu Cang Lan, but Liu Cang Lan had already left and nobody stopped him. However, now people were blocking Lin Feng. Besides, it had to do with the Duan Lie issue.

“No need to ask us who we are. You just need to know that we are in charge of enforcing the laws of the Imperial City.” Said the original person who spoke. His voice was filled with coldness. “Lin Feng, no need to resist, you will have no chance of resisting us, if you try to resist, you will die.”

“Resist? Die?” Lin Feng was a bit surprised and he was releasing

some cold energy. However, at that moment, the sound of galloping horses could be heard. It seemed like some a large group of people were rushing over to that location.

A short moment later, they could distinctly hear the rumbling sounds caused by horses. The person who seemed to be the leader of the people on horses was a cultivator who looked extremely strong and cruel.

Lin Feng knew that person, it was the officer of the Imperial Guards, Yu Ji, who was also one of Duan Wu Ya's friends.

The imperial guards encircled them which stupefied those who were encircling Lin Feng. They were staring at Yu Ji and said: "Yu Ji, what are you doing?"

"Huo Qing, I should be the one asking you that question, I, Yu Ji, am the Officer of the Imperial Guards and the Imperial City is a territory under my control, but now you are here, what is that supposed to mean?"

Yu Ji sounded cold and detached, yet serious, which made Huo Qing stupefied. He then smiled coldly and said: "The Imperial City is under your control? Lin Feng killed a noble of the Imperial Family and he is still free to walk around. What do you think that you, the Imperial Guards, are doing?"

"I will handle that when the time comes, however, since when are you allowed to exceed your status and meddle in other people's affairs, including my own?" said Yu Ji as cold and detached as

before.

Huo Qing's eyes twinkled and he glanced at the Imperial Guards. They were extremely strong these days. If Huo Qing decided to attack, they would suffer serious losses.

Besides, everybody knew that the Imperial City Guards were now part of Duan Wu Ya's faction, who would dare to not give him face?

“Lin Feng will come with us today!”

However, at that moment, another cold and detached voice emerged in the atmosphere. In the distance, two silhouettes appeared on a building, along with others hiding in the shadows. They all looked ice-cold. These two people were releasing a monstrously strong Qi which made people shiver.

“Xuan Qi layer! That Qi has the strength of the Xuan Qi layer.

Besides, the other one who hadn't spoken had only one arm.

“How young!” Lin Feng glanced at the person's missing arm, which made his heartbeat accelerate. It was said that the prodigious student of the Celestial Academy, who had broken through the Xuan Qi layer a short time before, was called Du Bi and only had one arm, his left arm.

“Lin Feng killed a noble and thinks that he is better than

everyone. We will take Lin Feng with us.” Said the cultivator of the Xuan Qi Layer that had spoken. His Qi was abnormally monstrous.

It seemed like these people had come well-prepared and determined to kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had said that he could rely on his own strength to ensure his safety, if he left with them, would his statement still be valid?

“They must be from a dark league, right?” Said Yu Ji sounding ice-cold. Dark leagues were influential and were also a way to increase connections.

The dark leagues all represent small spheres of influence. They were divided according to the numerous high ranking officials of Xue Yue’s Imperial City.

Dark leagues were usually created with the sole purpose of hiring assassins. When high-ranking officials had the impression that someone was threatening them and their functions, they sent dark leagues to apply their own justice.

These two people seemed to belong to a dark league.

Du Bi had broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer. He was recognized as a genius of the Celestial Academy. He was obstinate and unruly, there weren’t many people who could help him channel his darker emotions.

“What if I don’t agree!” Said Yu Ji. Immediately, an incredibly oppressive energy emerged from Du Bi and the other person and invaded the entire atmosphere.

“You have no choice, Lin Feng must leave with us.” Said the cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer in an ice-cold tone while staring at Yu Ji. He didn’t even care about making Duan Wu Ya, the second prince, lose face!

It was still raining and Lin Feng was gradually getting soaking wet. Besides in the atmosphere, the oppressive energy was getting denser and denser!

Chapter 326: The Death God

Lin Feng was calmly standing in the rain, surrounded by those people.

There were two strong cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer who belonged to a dark league. These people even dared disrespect Yu Ji and the Imperial City Guards. It seemed like someone of extraordinary status was ordering them.

That person wanted to kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was trying to analyze the situation. Apart from the Yu and Yue clans, the Du Gu Clan also wanted to kill him.

Of course, it could also be some of Duan Tian Lang's people.

“Who gave you the order?” Said Yu Ji in a cold tone. These people were imposing and aggressive, if they were there, they would take Lin Feng.

Yu Ji didn't wait for them to reply and said: “I heard that the Yu Clan had close connections with leagues. You must be a dark league sent by the Yu Clan.”

“What about you? Why are you here?” Said Yu Ji to Du Bi. Yu Ji was wondering what Du Bi was doing there because according to the latest news, Du Bi was supposed to be practicing his cultivation.

“My goal is very simple, if he can grant me a duel, I will leave.” Said Du Bi indifferently which made the crowd stupefied. Du Bi had come because he wanted to see how strong Lin Feng was, he wanted a duel against Lin Feng?

Yu Ji looked at Lin Feng and saw that Lin Feng was looking at Du Bi, as if he had noticed something. Lin Feng slightly nodded and said in a low voice: “Alright, you start!”

The crowd was a bit surprised. Lin Feng surprisingly agreed to Du Bi’s request.

Du Bi suddenly released a terrifying blade energy, sharp, brutal and ice-cold. Pure Qi was unceasingly being absorbed into his body. A bright light was glowing around Du Bi. The only arm which Du Bi had wasn’t an arm anymore, it looked like a blade. His arm was his blade.

“Energy attack!”

Lin Feng was a bit surprised. What a monstrously sharp energy. Du Bi’s blade abilities had already reached the energy dimensions. He could condense all his blade energy into his arm and transform it into a sharp blade.

Coupled with his strength of the Xuan Qi layer, his blade was terrifying.

When Yu Ji sensed the sword energy, a light flashed in his eyes. Du Bi definitely deserved to be called the top disciple of the Celestial Academy. His force and Qi were terrifying. Yu Ji was wondering if the situation would become dangerous for Lin Feng.

A white light started shining around Lin Feng's body. Pure Qi was revolving around his body. At that moment, Lin Feng hadn't broken through to the Xuan Qi layer yet but could already condense pure Qi. Besides, some terrifyingly sharp sword energy had also invaded the atmosphere.

His powerful sword energy was extremely sharp and vast but seemed calm. The crowd had the feeling that Lin Feng, at that moment, wasn't Lin Feng anymore but had become his sword, as if he had fused with his sword.

It was still raining but there were no raindrops around Du Bi and Lin Feng's bodies. The rain couldn't get near them because they were already surrounded by the pure Qi which was emitting a dazzling light.

Du Bi slowly raised his arm. It was like he was slowly raising a blade. At the same, Lin Feng stretched his hand and an incredible amount of Qi filled the atmosphere. It transformed into a terrifying amount of pure Qi. Suddenly, his hand was filled with a sword made entirely of pure Qi, filled with a mixture of battle energy, deadly Qi and Sword Qi.

"I'm ready. After breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer, I have used my blade eighteen times, eighteen people died. I hope that you will be the first to survive." Said Du Bi arrogantly.

But Lin Feng ignored him. The atmosphere was dark and rainy. Lin Feng slowly closed his eyes and used his consciousness to sense the surrounding area.

At the same time, in Lin Feng's mind appeared a sword. It was a black sword. It was the fatal sword of a Death God.

Each time Lin Feng saw that sword, his heart started pounding. It was filled with an endless quantity of pure battle Qi and pure deadly Qi which could slowly be absorbed into his sword.

The stronger Lin Feng became, the more he could control the black sword and the more terrifying his sword made of pure Qi became.

“Huh?” When Du Bi saw that Lin Feng was closing his eyes, releasing an even more powerful Qi, but that incredible battle energy was terrifying. It seemed like it would never stop growing stronger and more powerful as it burned through the atmosphere.

Du Bi was curious to see the final stage of that sword. How powerful could Lin Feng's sword get? But at the same time, he had the feeling that the power of that sword wouldn't stop increasing and would always become more powerful.

“Lacerate!” Shouted Du Bi. He didn't continue to wait. His arm turned into a powerful blade which illuminated the atmosphere. In the air, a gigantic blade illusion appeared. Immediately after, Du Bi attacked. That gigantic blade descended from the sky and seemed

like it could lacerate the atmosphere. The pure Qi that it contained was monstrously powerful.

Lin Feng suddenly started to move. His sword made of pure Qi rose into the air and his sword energy turned into an illusionary sword which started unceasingly attacking the gigantic blade. Metallic sounds were uninterruptedly spreading through the atmosphere. These sounds were loud and distinct as if they were real.

“My sword can annihilate everything.”

Lin Feng's body started to absorb an incredible amount of battle energy. His body slowly rose into the air but his move didn't look flashy at all. Actually, the energy was just moving towards that blade. The sword was fighting against the gigantic blade.

At that moment, people raised their head and saw that gigantic blade as well as the sword collide with each other. A monstrously oppressive Qi flooded the area.

It was very difficult to imagine the gigantic blade and the sword doing battle. There weren't any terrifying explosions, there wasn't any flashing lights. There was only energy fighting against energy, each unable to defeat the other.

“How terrifying! These people are really geniuses.” Thought people in the crowd. Du Bi's blade skills were obvious but Lin Feng, with his strength of the Ling Qi layer, was able to resist Du Bi's attacks. Lin Feng was slightly being pushed back. He was absorbing

battle energy which kept burning around him. The crowd was gasping with astonishment.

At that moment, lights flashed and Du Bi's blade disappeared. At the same time, Lin Feng's sword made of pure Qi also disappeared. These two people had stopped fighting at the same time.

“You can compete with me to a certain extent. Unfortunately, I have to fight against Qiong Bi Luo tomorrow. Let's stop for today. I hope that you will still be alive come tomorrow.”

When Du Bi finished talking, he turned around and left through the curtain of rain. Du Bi's lonely and solitary silhouette looked as lonely and solitary as his single arm, his heart was filled with killing intent.

Just as he had said, if Lin Feng accepted to have a duel with him, he would leave.

On the day after, he would fight against Qiong Bi Luo and he could not refuse.

“I can only compete with you to a certain extent, that's what you think?” Said Lin Feng while smiling coldly and opening his eyes. Immediately after, he closed his eyes again. His sword made of pure Qi appeared in the sky and battle energy started burning around his body again.

“Huh?” People in the crowd frowned. What did Lin Feng want to

do?

“Die!”

At that moment, Lin Feng said only one word, which sounded ice-cold. Lin Feng's silhouette flickered. He didn't even need his eyes to see, everything around him was appearing clearly and distinctly in his mind.

The sword descended from the sky. Immediately after, a deadly light illuminated the area. Two silhouettes were struck down by that sword without even having the time to give a horrible shriek.

Lin Feng was extremely ruthless!

He surprisingly hadn't said much the whole time, but he immediately killed his opponents, two cultivators of the Xuan Qi Layer who were hidden in the shadows were instantly killed.

The people of the dark league had come to take Lin Feng, but it wasn't to invite Lin Feng for dinner. Instead, they wanted to kill him. Therefore, as always when somebody threatened Lin Feng's life, he killed them without restraint.

Kill or be killed was Lin Feng's philosophy.

In a cruel world, such as the cultivation world, when someone wanted to kill him, he would not be merciful and benevolent, his enemies would eventually kill him when they had the chance. If he

was aggressive and ruthless when killing the people who wanted to kill him, he would live much longer. Why would he chose the first option? If someone wanted to kill him, he would just kill them first.

It was an easy principle and Lin Feng was determined to stick to it.

The other people's facial expressions drastically changed. Before arriving, they hadn't thought that Lin Feng's power was so terrifying. Everyone there would die if attacked by Lin Feng's sword. Lin Feng was like a death god.

“Try if you dare!” Said another cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer in the crowd, whose facial expression drastically changed. An endless amount of pure Qi started spinning around his arm. That arm full of pure Qi was bombarding the atmosphere towards Lin Feng but Lin Feng's sword pierced straight through the pure Qi and into his opponents heart.

Back in Celestial River, Lin Feng was able to kill cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. Since then, a good deal of time had passed and Lin Feng had reached the peak of the Ling Qi layer. Coupled with his terrifying sword made from pure Qi, how could Lin Feng be scared of cultivators at the first Xuan Qi layer?

Even if Lin Feng didn't use his purple spirit, he could still defeat a cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer.

Every time his sword descended from the sky, it could instantly

end several lives!

Chapter 327: Startling and Shocking

It was pouring with rain, with blood dyeing the water red.

Lin Feng's sword was unceasingly moving. It was dazzling and uninterruptedly killing the people who had come for him, after which they collapsed into a river of blood.

However, in the distance, Some ferocious looking men wearing gray clothes were unceasingly rushing towards Lin Feng. They were fearless and it seemed like they didn't care about offering their lives to Lin Feng's sword.

When they saw the countless corpses on the ground, they looked unaffected. The people of the dark league had died, the fact that such people had been killed was terrifying.

Even if a cultivator was stronger than them, a little slip of attention and some carelessness could give the dark league a good opportunity to attack by surprise and kill him.

Lin Feng looked expressionless and emotionless. It was as if he was alone with his sword. His sword was dazzling and welcomed death, it was unceasingly slaughtering people.

When Lin Feng was in fusion with the earth, it was impossible for him to be careless or get distracted. He could clearly and distinctly perceive every potentially fatal attack which was coming towards him as if it was in slow motion. Lin Feng's mind was like a super computer as he controlled his sword, he looked extremely

mysterious.

What scared Lin Feng was the occasional strong cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer who were carrying out surprise attacks on Lin Feng. They were not getting close to him, they were just using the dark league's human wave tactics to compete with Lin Feng, it was a diabolic plan.

Not so far in the distance, Yu Ji was watching the dead dark league people who Lin Feng had killed. Yu Ji looked absolutely unaffected but his heart was beating a bit faster than usual. According to the second prince, Lin Feng was extremely strong.

Besides, the second prince had also said that he didn't know what would happen if Lin Feng used all his strength, but one thing was sure, defeating people of the first Xuan Qi layer wasn't a problem at all for Lin Feng.

Therefore, Yu Ji wasn't worried about Lin Feng. He had only come because he wanted to see how strong Lin Feng really was.

At the same time, he could also see how Lin Feng killed his opponents. Besides, Lin Feng and his attackers were diametrically opposed in terms of power and influence. They were from completely different backgrounds.

“Rooooaarr....”

A purple light suddenly invaded the atmosphere. The dark league

cultivators were not all strong cultivators at the peak of the Ling Qi layer, there were also many people in the lower Ling Qi layers. From the first to the ninth Ling Qi layer, every level was present amongst the attackers. They were unceasingly attacking Lin Feng and unceasingly being slaughtered.

The purple light was soaring through the air. In an instant, many people disappeared into the purple light and were melted into nothingness. They all vanished without leaving a trace.

A strong cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer narrowed his eyes. Lin Feng was stronger than they had expected. Fortunately, they had prepared a perfect plan, Lin Feng was definitely going to die.

In the vast area surrounding Lin Feng, the cultivators who were near him had all been swallowed by the purple light but enemies continued to charge at him from every direction.

It seemed like they wanted Lin Feng to run out of Qi in a prolonged battle.

“Die!” Shouted a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer in a deep voice. Immediately, the whole crowd threw themselves at Lin Feng and attacked him. A rumbling noise started to fill the atmosphere. An endless ocean of attacks was moving from the distance towards Lin Feng.

The purple lake was still surrounding Lin Feng. Lin Feng took a huge step forwards, his silhouette flickered and in a flash, two silhouettes were consumed by the purple light surrounding him.

Another group of people didn't wait for Lin Feng to take the initiative and attack them, they were rushing towards him. They were rushing towards Lin Feng as if they didn't care about dying. At the same time, a few silhouettes jumped into the air and unleashed a gigantic silver net. The threads of that net were extremely solid and extremely sharp, just like a multitude of sharp razors. If someone got captured in that net, their body would end up tragically torn apart.

“Rise!!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. The purple lake turned into a storm of purple snakes which blocked the net. At the same time, many snake silhouettes flickered and moved towards the people who were holding the net.

On the ground, there were many other people attacking Lin Feng.

At the same time, the cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer attacked as well. A sickle illusion appeared behind his back while pure Qi was fluctuating in the atmosphere. His body transformed into an illusion and an incredible quantity of deadly sharp Qi emerged.

“Moonlight Hook!” Shouted the Xuan Qi layer cultivator while swiping his hand towards Lin Feng. In a flash, what seemed like countless crescent moons appeared in his hand and started moving towards Lin Feng as they sliced through the atmosphere.

Each of the crescent moons contained a terrifying Qi. If they came into contact with someone, they would easily slice that person's body in half.

“Psssch”

“Psssch”

The sickle edges came into contact with the bodies of members of the dark league between the cultivator and Lin Feng. These crescent moons passed by two people, blood filled the air and they let out horrible shrieks. They had just been killed. These subtle yet terrifying sounds were piercing into people's eardrums.

“A blade made of pure Qi. Besides, it's a perfect match for his spirit. He's extremely strong.” Thought Lin Feng while shivering. The terrifying purple spirit wouldn't be able to block these sharp crescent moon attacks.

“Pierce!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. His sword started emitted a dazzling light. The sword in Lin Feng's hand seemed like it could pierce anything.

“Psssch”

Many people in front of Lin Feng were being sliced by the crescent moon sickles but Lin Feng didn't pay attention to that. At that moment, he was releasing an incredible quantity of deadly energy and it seemed like his body had gone rigid.

A poisonous snake was right behind him, it was moving towards him with the clear intention to kill.

“They are so good at hiding, they are really skilled assassins.”

Lin Feng could sense all these things distinctly. He could also feel that something sharp, like a dagger, was getting nearer and nearer to his back. The cultivator at the Xuan Qi layer behind him just required a few seconds and he would be able to pierce Lin Feng’s heart.

“Shadow!” Said Lin Feng silently to himself. His body transformed into a shadow and vanished from sight. He then started to move through the darkness.

“Come back!” Furiously shouted the Xuan Qi layer cultivator, who was in front of him as he started running. The light of his blade was still invading the atmosphere. He wanted Lin Feng to come back and continue fighting. At the same time, the dagger behind Lin Feng’s back was also getting nearer. Even though Lin Feng was using his shadow skills, he was unable to avoid their fatal attacks.

In such circumstances, he couldn’t run away, running away would also lead to his death.

“Roaaar.”

A terrifying roar invaded the atmosphere. From Lin Feng’s back, purple snakes were moving around in a frenzy. They continued to rush through the air.

At the same time, Lin Feng was still rushing forwards. Even in front of him, the atmosphere was filled with countless crescent moon blades.

“Crrr... Crrrrr.....” His clothes were ripped apart. Under the terrifying crescent moon blades, blood started pouring from Lin Feng’s body. It was so shocking!

But at the same time, Lin Feng didn’t have time to pay attention to his injuries. His body transformed into an incredibly sharp sword and rushed towards the cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer who was in front of him.

He moved extremely quick like a shadow. His body transformed into a sword.

“Die!” Said Lin Feng with a terrifying shout. The cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer suddenly started gasping with astonishment. Immediately after, Lin Feng’s body was about to crash into him. Lin Feng launched his body towards the cultivator of the Xuan Qi Layer and surprisingly Lin Feng’s body pierced straight through him! That cultivator was realizing that both his eyes were moving farther away from each other. His body was also gradually separating itself in two parts. Lin Feng had cut his body into two!

“Ahhhhh.....” A terrifying shout emerged in the air. Blood burst out and immediately after, the body split into two pieces and collapsed. The crowd was astonished.

The cultivator at the Xuan Qi layer who was behind Lin Feng suddenly stopped and looked on in shock. He looked at the body that had been cut into two and his heart started pounding.

Lin Feng had cut that body into two, not using a limb, but by using his whole body as a sword.

Lin Feng, a moment before, wasn't a human, instead, he became a sword, an extremely cruel sword!

"Sword Fusion!" Whispered the cultivator. His heart was violently shaking. A cultivator at the Ling Qi layer was in a frenzy of slaughter, constantly attacking and defending himself, and he was killing so many people, it had become a bloodbath, the ground was littered with corpses. Besides, he had used his entire body to cut another cultivator's body in two, and that cultivator was at the Xuan Qi layer. That move had been way too amazing and shocking. The other person could hardly believe it.

He only saw Lin Feng who slowly turned around and whose body was covered with deep wounds. Blood was unceasingly flowing from his body but it seemed like Lin Feng didn't even realize how severe his injuries were.

Lin Feng's two piercingly cold eyes were staring at the other Xuan Qi Layer cultivator.

His heart was brutally shaking. It was the first time that he had ever felt terror when faced with a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer.

Chapter 328: He Hasn't Died!

“Who sent you to kill me?” Asked Lin Feng with an ice-cold tone. He was oppressing his interlocutor.

It was such a precise and accurate plan. So many cultivators of the Ling Qi layer had come to kill Lin Feng. One cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had attacked him directly while another one, an assassin, was trying to kill Lin Feng from the back, with such a precise attack, it could have been fatal. Besides, it clearly proved that they wanted to kill Lin Feng. However, it wasn't easy to capture or kill Lin Feng.

That group of strong cultivators, didn't want Lin Feng alive, on that day, he definitely had to die.

Fortunately, Lin Feng had more than one card up his sleeve. Even though that group of people was extremely strong, it was the same result, they hadn't been able to kill Lin Feng. The ones who thought of that plot probably would have never thought that things would happen the way they did.

After all the monstrous planning and powerful traps. Lin Feng, against all expectations, was still alive. He was severely injured because of all the crescent moon sickles. The blades had injured him, none of them were illusions and all contained incredible attack power. The attack had sliced through Lin Feng's flesh and muscles. If he hadn't used his spirit to slow the attack and if he didn't have a quick reaction, the injury would have been even more serious. At that moment, he didn't know if he could still fight.

That cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was narrowing his eyes, which were twinkling, as if he was thinking about something.

“Die!”

When Lin Feng saw his interlocutor’s eyes, a monstrous amount of deadly Qi rose into the air. A distinct sword light appeared and he immediately rushed forward.

At that moment, he had become a sword, a sword which could annihilate anything in its path.

“It seems like my sword skills have become much more powerful.” Thought Lin Feng. Even though he had already reached the sword fusion dimension, Lin Feng was still able to improve his visualizations. He could also try to understand his Celestial Book in greater detail. Lin Feng’s cultivation level was much too weak for him to understand the sword that was in suspension. He still had much to learn.

What it meant was that he could explore sword force, energy attacks, sword fusion, and swords in general to gain a deeper understanding, which would enable him to become stronger. He still didn’t have a very high cultivation level, therefore, he still had to put a great deal of work into his understanding. He could use this to increase the power of his sword energy and attacks.

After having fought with so many opponents in the battle from a moment before, Lin Feng had the impression that his sword fusion

had become more powerful, as if he had broken through to another layer in his sword dimension.

The assassin at the Xuan Qi layer could sense Lin Feng's terrifying sword energy. His heart was shaking. At the moment when Lin Feng had killed his partner at the Xuan Qi layer, his heart had already lost hope. Deep in his heart, he had the feeling that he wasn't as strong as Lin Feng. His vitality, ardour and battle energy had weakened a lot. Even if Lin Feng's strength was about the same as his, defeat was already in sight.

“Yu Clan, Yue Clan or Du Gu Clan?”

Lin Feng took a step forwards while releasing more of his sword energy which whistled as it pierced through the air.

“If I told you, would you let me go?” Asked that cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer who couldn't stand the pressure any longer. He had surprisingly voiced his thoughts, It was clear that he thought that Lin Feng was stronger than him, so he surprisingly asked if Lin Feng would let him go.

On the corner of Lin Feng's mouth appeared a mocking smile. He said, sounding cold and detached: “A moment ago, you tried to kill me, for that, I will require an arm, then, after you tell me you can leave with your life.”

While he was talking, his sword energy didn't disperse. It was still as piercingly-cold as before as it pressed against the cultivator.

That cultivator's heartbeat slightly accelerated. He needed to pay the price of an arm?

"You only have three second to make up your mind!" Said Lin Feng still sounding cold and detached.

"One!"

"Two!"

Lin Feng counted up to two and took a step forward, as if he was about to attack.

"I will tell you!" Yelled that person who couldn't bear the terrifying pressure. Immediately after, he gave a horrible shriek, the sound of cracking bones spread in the air while he forcefully crushed all the bones in his arm into dust, his arm started hanging loosely. He had destroyed the use of that arm.

Sometimes, the stronger a cultivator was, the more he was afraid of death. Even if they couldn't advance their cultivation anymore, they could at least enjoy the pleasures of a long life.

"The other people from the dark league are sent by a few high ranking officials. I don't know who sent them though. This time, I just came to help, my task was to kill you. If I knew that they couldn't defeat you, I wouldn't have come." said the man very reluctantly. While gnashing his teeth, he added: "The person who hired me belongs to the Yu Clan, he's the fifth master, and he

ordered your death.”

“Who’s the fifth master?” Asked Lin Feng.

“Yu Tian Xing!” Replied Lin Feng’s interlocutor and immediately after added: “I answered to all of your questions. Now, can I leave?”

“Get lost!” Said Lin Feng.

The cultivator was happy, he quickly turned around and his silhouette flickered into the distance.

But at that moment, a deadly energy suddenly emerged and made his heart vibrate.

He abruptly turned around and wanted to move his right hand, but at that moment, he realized that he had crushed his right arm and couldn’t use it, he could no longer absorb pure Qi.

“Crrr.... Crr....”

A silver spear penetrated into and pierced through his chest. Suddenly, someone, who looked extremely calm and cold appeared, it was the officer of the Imperial City Guards, Yu Ji. He had just killed him.

“Are you also an assassin from the Celestial Academy?” Asked

that person while staring at Yu Ji, blood was flowing from his body.

“People who come from the Celestial Academy, obey His Highness’ orders but you, instead, obey the orders of the Yu Clan, why would we let you off?”

That voice pierced through his ears and immediately after, the silver long spear moved and destroyed his internal organs. The internal organs of the cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer were crushed. He died a miserable death. Besides, Yu Ji still looked calm, he then calmly pulled his spear out from the corpse. He turned around and immediately looked at Lin Feng.

“If the Chi Xie Marquis cannot kill his enemies, I am willing to do it for you.” Said Yu Ji calmly but his eyes looked like that of a venomous snake. That venomous side rarely appeared but Lin Feng had seen him twice. He had also only seen the spear twice.

The first time he had seen that spear was when he killed Meng Han.

The second time was a moment ago when he had killed the cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer.

“Thank you.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. Immediately after, he turned around and started walking away, slowly because of his exhaustion.

“Cough cough!”

Coughing sounds filled the air. Blood dripped from Lin Feng’s wounds and his blood mixed with the rainwater.

When Yu Ji saw Lin Feng walk slowly because of exhaustion, a light flashed in his eyes. He was still wondering if, a moment before, Lin Feng had purposely given everything to scare away his last opponent. At that moment, Lin Feng wasn’t capable of battling against a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, however, an assassin of the Xuan Qi layer was just so scared of Lin Feng that he destroyed the use of his own arm. In the end, he ended up as a corpse on the ground.

Someone whose greatest fear was sent to his next life.

.....

At that moment, in the Lovesick Forest, some young people were calmly sitting under the pavilion on the lake. Once in a while, they were drinking some Lovesick alcohol.

“Now is the right time, I think.” said Yun Tian Xing while throwing a rock into the water, which created small waves which moved in all four directions.

“Don’t worry, with all the troops that you sent, Lin Feng will definitely die.” Said Yue Tian Cheng with a detached attitude. He was the one who had had the idea to assassinate Lin Feng and Yu

Tian Xing was the one to create the plan. At the same time, they had used their influence to recruit some people from the dark leagues to kill Lin Feng for them.

After Lin Feng had met Liu Cang Lan and because Meng Qing wasn't by Lin Feng's side, they had decided it was the right time to assassinate Lin Feng.

"You're right, Lin Feng is already dead." Said Yu Tian Xing while nodding. He sounded like he was convincing himself of Lin Feng's death from the trap.

At that moment, in the distance, they heard some steps approaching which made Yue Tian Chen's heartbeat accelerate. He turned around and saw someone moving towards them at full speed.

"Is Lin Feng already dead!" Asked Yue Tian Chen while standing up.

That person raised their head, looked at Yue Tian Chen, who looked so impatient, and the person's facial expression rigidified itself. They were afraid to speak out.

"Huh?" When Yu Tian Chen saw his interlocutor's silence, he had an ominous prediction and shouted: "I asked you a question!"

"Master Yu, Lin Feng hasn't died yet. He escaped alive but he was severely injured." Said that person trembling with fear which

stupefied Yu Tian Xing who said: “He’s only injured?! How come he’s not dead? What are you guys doing, damn?! Surprisingly, not one of you bothered to chase and kill him!”

“Everybody is dead, they were all slaughtered.....!” Said that person in a low voice while lowering their head. Yu Tian Xing’s heart started pounding. They had died.... and Lin Feng was only injured!

He had just assumed that Lin Feng had only managed to escape while injured, but then...

A terrifying feeling invaded his heart. Lin Feng wasn’t dead.

Considering Lin Feng’s temperament, if Lin Feng learnt that the one who had had sent people to kill him was Yu Tian Xing, he would never let him off!

From that moment on, he had to be extremely careful.

Chapter 329: The Blue Void Underworld!

Lin Feng was sitting cross-legged in a cultivation room of the central tower. Pure Qi was unceasingly filling the atmosphere and penetrating into Lin Feng's body.

Cultivators could recover from injuries much faster with the help of Qi. Besides, the higher their cultivation level was, the less time they required to recover. After having broken through to a higher cultivation layer, even if a cultivator had their arm cut off, they could recover it with enough time. There were even some rumors which said that even if the emperor wanted to die, unless every part of him was completely destroyed, he would come back to life.

Lin Feng was severely injured but since he had penetrated into the earth dimension, things had changed. His muscles were stronger and he could recover much faster. In just one day, the Qi of heaven and earth could heal his wounds, he was already healed from his wounds. Besides, he had consumed a lot of his Qi during the battle. After having been healed by the pure Qi, his body continued to absorb insane quantities of refined pure Qi which penetrated directly into his body through his blood vessels.

At that moment, Lin Feng's body was enveloped, from head to toe by a bright and dazzling white light. That dazzling white light was the Qi which Lin Feng condensed into pure Qi.

Lin Feng had already finished the process of transforming his Qi into pure Qi which he could control. Once all the Qi inside his body was completely transformed into pure Qi, he would be able to learn a skill which he could use once he broke through the Ling Qi layer

and entered the Xuan Qi layer.

The moment when Lin Feng would break through to the Xuan Qi layer was growing closer.

Besides, in the room above Lin Feng's room, the Qi of heaven and earth was pouring into the atmosphere. The door of the room was slowly opening itself and a silhouette was emerging. That person was precisely Qiong Bi Luo.

Immediately after, he jumped up in the air and used pure Qi to propel his body forward. Qiong Bi Luo then glanced at the crowd with an arrogant expression in his eyes.

At that moment, in the square, a crowd had already gathered. Today was precisely the day of his challenge to Du Bi.

“Qiong Bi Luo is so confident. How come he is so certain that he is going to win?”

People raised their heads and looked at the silhouette moving through the sky. The expression in Qiong Bi Luo's eyes was sharp as if he was certain that he was going to become the top ranked disciple of the Celestial Academy.

“Du Bi, where are you?” Said Qiong Bi Luo. His voice was unceasingly rolling through the atmosphere in all directions. It resonated to every single corner of the academy so that everybody could hear it.

After a short moment, the atmosphere became silent again. In the distance, a terrifying blade energy burst forth. In the sky, there was a bright and gigantic blade illusion that was slicing through the sky.

Immediately after, the crowd noticed that in the middle of that blade illusion, there was a single silhouette, it was Du Bi. His facial expression looked extremely sharp, like a blade.

Du Bi soared through the air and eventually arrived at the public square where everybody had gathered. That gigantic blade illusion surrounded him as he moved, he had fused with his blade and was one with the gigantic blade.

The crowd who was on the ground could feel the terrifying blade energy on their skin, it was extremely brutal.

“Seems like the battle is going to be extraordinary.”

Everybody in the crowd looked impatient to watch the battle. Qiong Bi Luo was arrogant and confident in his abilities, Du Bi was swift, fierce and extremely aggressive, that battle was definitely going to be a battle to the death.

In the frame of that unavoidable confrontation, people wanted to see who was going to become the first ranked disciple of the academy.

Who would end up in the top position, Qiong Bi Luo or Du Bi?

“Du Bi, after this, you will not be the best disciple of the academy anymore.” Said Qiong Bi Luo while looking at Du Bi’s blade. As before, he was full of confidence.

“Whether this will happen or not doesn’t depend on your big mouth. Today, if you defeat me, you will become the first in the ranking, of course, I wouldn’t get ahead of yourself.” Said Du Bi in an extremely aggressive tone. He had been the first ranked in the academy for such a long time, losing the top position would be a humiliation.

“Not only will I defeat you today but I will also defeat Wen Ao Xue, Du Gu Shang and Lin Feng. I will fight against all of them and I let everyone know who the best student of the academy is!”

“No need to waste time. Last time, Du Gu Shang fought against Lin Feng and couldn’t withstand a single blow. Du Gu Shang cannot compete with us. Wen Ao Xue isn’t weak but he is still at the ninth Ling Qi layer, he has not grown stronger and is still weaker than us. The only one who represents a real threat for us is Lin Feng, but yesterday I went out to have a battle against him. He was the first person to resist my blade. He is not far from us in strength but he can only resist a single strike, that’s all. If you can defeat me, you don’t need to defeat anyone else in the academy.” Said Du Bi arrogantly and egocentrically. In his eyes, amongst the three others, none of them could hold a torch to the two on stage. Even though Lin Feng was quite skilled, with the strength Bu Di saw, Lin Feng still couldn’t compete with them.

When the crowd heard Du Bi, they were stupefied. Indeed, before Lin Feng left for Yangzhou City, he had defeated Du Gu Shang in one move. Even though much time had passed, Du Gu Shang still couldn't compete with Lin Feng.

Besides, amongst these people, Lin Feng was the only person who Du Bi held in esteem. However, he still thought that Lin Feng could only resist a single blade attack.

Only one blade, the second would kill him.

If Qiong Bi Luo defeated Du Bi, he could defeat everybody else. He didn't need to fight anymore. He could immediately become the top disciple of the Celestial Academy and enjoy all of the glory it entitled.

"It's better this way, I won't need to waste my time." Said Qiong Bi Luo in an ice-cold way and then added: "Du Bi, let's fight!"

"Fight! Fight! Fight!" Shouted Du Bi furiously, as if he had turned into a madman. His blade twinkled in the air and an endless amount of blade energy emerged.

A gigantic blade spirit appeared behind Du Bi who was in fusion with his blade. Blade force and Qi invaded and bombarded the atmosphere, moving straight towards Qiong Bi Luo. However, Qiong Bi Luo wasn't moving at all!

"What a terrifying strength." Thought people in the crowd as

their hearts started shaking. It wasn't surprising that Du Bi had been the top ranked disciple of the academy for such a long time. His reputation was well deserved.

“Even if you use stronger blade energy, so what?” Said Qiong Bi Luo while smiling coldly. His Blue Void Spirit appeared as random raindrops.

These raindrops slowly started to envelop Qiong Bi Luo's entire body. It was a cloudless and sunny day but not around Qiong Bi Luo's body, it seemed like rain was pouring around him, but it did not reach the ground.

The blade energy was approaching the raindrops, but when they collided the blade energy disappeared. All the raindrops suddenly looked like a rippling lake.

“How can he do that? Qiong Bi Luo's spirit is so complex!”

The people watching felt their hearts slightly twitch for a second. Qiong Bi Luo hadn't moved, the blade energy penetrated into the raindrops and disappeared.

“Just a coincidence, that's all.” Said Du Bi while smiling coldly. In the air, he slowly raised his arm and condensed all his blade energy and his blade spirit's power into his arm. At that moment, Du Bi transformed into a gigantic blade, a gigantic deadly blade.

He started walking swiftly through the air, whistling noises were

spreading through the atmosphere. Du Bi was just like a blade that was flying towards Qiong Bi Luo. At the same time, his arm slashed down with the illusion of a gigantic blade, lacerating the atmosphere.

“Blue Void Raindrops!” Said Qiong Bi Luo quickly. Raindrops suddenly started emerging from his spirit and invaded the atmosphere as if it had started to rain.

The gigantic blade crashed against the rain. The blade felt a surge of resistant force inside the rain, the blade could only slowly move forwards. That endless Blue Void Rain seemed to provide amazing protection.

At the same time, Qiong Bi Luo started running forwards and shouted coldly: “Blue Void Underworld!”

In a flash, a blue void with raindrops fell down from the sky and immediately appeared in the air above Du Bi and then shrouded his body in rain.

Du Bi’s body appeared could be seen surrounded by raindrops.

He looked astonished. Du Bi transformed into a blade which whistled through the air, however, when it collided with the curtain of rain, his body started shaking violently.

He was prisoner inside the Blue Void raindrops as if it was a cage.

“Rain of the Underworld! Die!” Shouted Qiong Bi Luo coldly. When he said the word “Die”, the raindrops suddenly started to change. These raindrops weren’t rain anymore, they had turned into razor-sharp blades.

“Cut!” Shouted Du Bi furiously. His body started shining with an infinite and dazzling light. A bright blade light filled the atmosphere around him, so people couldn’t see clearly what was happening inside.

But in a flash, Du Bi’s silhouette appeared again. He was still standing in the sky, but blood was unceasingly flowing from wounds all over his body. He was covered with blood from head to toe.

“How terrifying!” People in the crowd were shaking. That Blue Void spirit was extremely powerful. Du Bi couldn’t compete with it.

Qiong Bi Luo was the best disciple of the Celestial Academy.

Chapter 330: Bullying Lin Feng?

“I lost.” Said Du Bi while looking at Qiong Bi Luo, who looked extremely proud and arrogant. Du Bi’s voice was low. He had been defeated and it had been a crushing defeat.

Qiong Bi Luo’s Blue Void Underworld and Blue Void spirit were monstrously strong. He could firmly seal parts of the atmosphere. His Blue Void Raindrops could form into a cage of raindrops. Besides, once there was a prisoner inside that cage, it could transform the raindrops into razor shape blades that attacked the prisoner. If Du Bi had been a little bit weaker, he would have died.

“From now on, the best disciple of the Celestial Academy is you, Qiong Bi Luo.” Said Gu Bi sorrowfully. He had always been first in the ranking of the Celestial Academy. Besides, he was also one of the first students to break through the Ling Qi layer and enter the Xuan Qi layer. He used to think that if he couldn’t do something, other people would be even less capable.

However, Qiong Bi Luo had also always been a genius and had always been a close second. Qiong Bi Luo had always been introverted, discreetly practicing cultivation, but after he had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, he had become a completely different person. He had become extremely arrogant, and right after breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer, he had immediately challenged Du Bi to a battle.

Du Bi had just thought that Qiong Bi Luo had grown arrogant with success but reality had been different from expectation, Qiong Bi Luo had defeated Du Bi very easily. He hadn’t even taken

the battle seriously.

People had the same thoughts as Du Bi. Du Bi couldn't compete with Qiong Bi Luo. If Qiong Bi Luo wasn't the best student of the academy, who else could it be?

“Wen Ao Xue, Du Gu Shang, Lin Feng, where are they?” Said Qiong Bi Luo coldly and arrogantly while glancing at the crowd on the ground. If these people had come, Qiong Bi Luo wouldn't have minded fighting against them, that was a way for him to show people how strong he was.

However, nobody replied. Du Gu Shang couldn't even withstand one of Lin Feng's attacks, how could he have the courage to come and fight? Wen Ao Xue just hadn't bothered to go.

Concerning Lin Feng, he was still in his cultivation room.

“They're just a bunch of nobodies. As expected, apart from Du Bi, the others cannot even compete with me anymore. They are all tiny little insects, they are worthless”

When Qiong Bi Luo finished insulting the other strong disciples, he started walking away. After a short moment, his silhouette disappeared from the crowds field of vision.

While looking at the vanishing silhouette, people's eyes were twinkling. The Imperial City was really lively and animated. Even though Qiong Bi Luo had just broken through to the Xuan Qi layer,

with his amazingly strong spirit, he could definitely rival the eight high officials.

Finally, there was someone who was as monstrous as the eight high officials in the Celestial Academy.

While looking at the disappearing silhouette, Du Bi's eyes were filled with disappointment. They were both of the Xuan Qi layer, besides, he had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer before Qiong Bi Luo, but there was still a big gap between them, Qiong Bi Luo was monstrously strong.

Qiong Bi Luo's spirit gave him a huge advantage in battle, it was clear with only a glance. Du Bi's blade spirit was also extremely strong but Qiong Bi Luo's spirit had confined him so easily that he hadn't even had the opportunity to bring his blade spirit into play.

At that moment, a rumbling noise emerged in the atmosphere and broke the silence. People could only see a room of the cultivation tower open itself. Immediately after, a handsome young man appeared.

He was wearing a long white chang pao, his hair was fluttering in the wind. The expression in his eyes looked profound, deep and proud.

“Lin Feng!”

The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng had come out of the

cultivation room. Precisely at the moment that Qiong Bi Luo left!

“Did he do that on purpose?” Thought the crowd. Qiong Bi Luo had challenged Lin Feng and the others, it was unlikely that Lin Feng hadn’t heard the news, but he didn’t appear. Could it be that he had waited for Qiong Bi Luo to leave and then came out, as if he wanted to avoid Qiong Bi Luo.

But the crowd could understand why Lin Feng would want to avoid Qiong Bi Luo. Lin Feng only had the strength of the Ling Qi layer, fighting against a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer would have been the same as committing suicide. Qiong Bi Luo was monstrously strong and that was a fact.

Lin Feng could already put pressure on Du Bi which was already impressive!

When Lin Feng came out of his cultivation room, he had also noticed the crowd who was looking at him. He couldn’t help but be surprised. However, he ignored the crowd and started leaving.

“Wait, wait!” At that moment, a voice emerged in the atmosphere which made Lin Feng stop.

“What do you think, are blade and sword spirits strong or not?” Asked Du Bi. His spirit was a blade spirit and Lin Feng was a sword cultivator, to a certain extent, they belonged to the same category of cultivator.

Of course, that was just Du Bi's opinion. Even though Lin Feng practiced sword skills, he didn't have a sword spirit.

"Of course." Replied Lin Feng without even turning his head.

"Well then, why did Qiong Bi Luo defeat me so easily? I didn't even have the slightest chance." Asked Du Bi towards Lin Feng yet it sounded like he was questioning himself. His faith in blades had been shaken.

"Strength, no matter the result of a battle, is not only connected to the spirit. If Qiong Bi Luo defeated you, it's not only because of your spirit. Determination and one's skill level is also important to win a battle." Said Lin Feng indifferently.

The spirit was only one of the things that could influence the flow of a battle. It wasn't an absolute indicator of who would win a battle. For example, a cultivator of the first Ling Qi layer would never be able to defeat a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. Even when it came to cultivators of the same level, an extremely strong determination, willpower, courage, focus and level of skill were all factors which could determine the outcome of a battle. Besides, these factors didn't have anything to do with the spirit.

That was Lin Feng's opinion which corresponded to his personality. Even though he only had the strength of the Ling Qi layer, he would still use his sword to fight a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer such as Du Bi. Did it mean that Lin Feng's sword spirit was stronger than Du Bi's blade spirit? Of course not. He had no sword spirit!

“What you mean is that I, as a person, cannot rival Qiong Bi Luo, and it has nothing to do with our spirits?”

Du Bi's voice sounded a bit cold and a blade energy started floating around Lin Feng's body. He was asking Lin Feng only because he was doubting himself and his spirit. Besides, he had been defeated by Qiong Bi Luo, but he couldn't tolerate such words coming from Lin Feng's mouth.

“You asked me and I gave you my answer. I am just telling you from what I have experienced.” Said Lin Feng when he noticed Du Bi's anger. Lin Feng didn't refute Du Bi's words and instead his voice started to grow colder.

Du Bi had been defeated by Qiong Bi Luo and was using Lin Feng to vent his anger, could he humiliate and bully him as he wished?

Du Bi had asked Lin Feng a question and Lin Feng didn't even feel like replying but still gave him an honest answer.

“Hmph. How arrogant! Don't think that because you are a little bit popular, you can let it go to your head. The fact that you can resist one of my blade attacks doesn't mean that you can resist a second one.” Said Du Bi in an ice-cold way. He was clearly threatening Lin Feng.

“Arrogant?” Lin Feng was smiling coldly in his heart. On that day, Lin Feng had stopped his blade attack, but could it be that Du Bi thought that Lin Feng could only survive one attack? And on top

of that he thought Lin Feng could not attack him in return?

Du Bi sounded arrogant and threatening. He wanted to regain the prestige that he had lost a moment before and was using Lin Feng as a stepping stone. He had just gone through a crushing defeat against Qiong Bi Luo and needed to regain his image.

“In three days, I, Lin Feng, will be waiting for you here. At that moment, we will see if I can survive a second attack.” Said Lin Feng indifferently. Immediately after, he started to leave.

However, when the crowd heard Lin Feng, they were stupefied. Lin Feng was just like Qiong Bi Luo, he was challenging Du Bi.

Du Bi had said that Lin Feng was arrogant and that he wouldn't be able to survive a second blade attack, but now Lin Feng was challenging him.

.....

The Dong Ling district was situated in the most eastern place of the Imperial City. The hill of Dong Ling also had an altitude of a few thousand meters. From there, people could look into the distance.

At that moment, Lin Feng's silhouette appeared on the Dong Ling Hill but he wasn't enjoying the view at all. Instead, he was just standing there, looking up at the sky.

A moment before, Lin Feng could have fought against the injured Du Bi, but he chose to wait. When Lin Feng was still in the cultivation room practicing, he was asking himself what new skill he should learn. He was only an inch away from breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer. What skill should he practice to battle with the Xuan Qi Layer and above?

Lin Feng was confident that breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer wouldn't be an issue. At that moment, his problem was choosing a suitable skill to learn. The cultivator of the Zun Qi layer had given him many extremely strong skills from his memories. There were a lot of Xuan level skills, and even Tian level skills but the problem was, would Lin Feng ever break through to the Tian Qi layer?

There was also no problem in the type of skills he could learn. Lin Feng could learn all types of skills and techniques, his Celestial Spirit granted him the power of advanced comprehension.

He could practice different hand skills to increase his power during unarmed combat.

He was already an expert at using swords and was already stronger than most sword cultivators, should he pick a sword skill?

He could basically practice any sort of skill. That wasn't the problem, the only problem was that he could not decide what type of skill to learn.

Chapter 331: Cosmos Burning Sun

Amongst the memories of the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer, there were many extremely powerful skills, which belonged to different categories.

There was one sword skill called Sword of the Dead Tree, it's pure Qi left a path of devastation. It was a skill which was specifically used to slaughter people.

There was also an ice skill, which freeze the entire world. It would freeze opponents along with their pure Qi.

There was a medical technique which could bring the dead back to life. A cultivator who knew that skill could bring someone who had recently died back to the world of the living. The skill came down to condensing pure Qi to heal all injuries of the body. Those who learnt that skill were very few, the people who learnt it were revered.

Those who knew such an incredible medical technique were appreciated by other cultivators. Many people tried to gain their favour as it may save their lives.

After all, when getting wounded in battle, especially because of a monstrously strong attack, it was normally impossible for a cultivator to completely recover. Even if the external body seemed to have completely recovered, it could have caused injuries to the cultivation.

But Lin Feng wasn't interested in a medical technique. He didn't have the heart of a saint.

This skill would affect his entire future, and could even change his destiny. Lin Feng took that matter extremely seriously.

All the memories of the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer were of extremely high level skills. It was possible that Lin Feng wouldn't need to learn a new skill before breaking through to the Zun Qi layer. Lin Feng was extremely far from that cultivator's level, the strong cultivator of the Zun Qi layer was a legend.

Such strong cultivators could flatten mountains.

The sun was once again rising into the sky, but on the Dong Ling Hill, there was a motionless and lonely silhouette. His eyes had remained closed throughout the whole period.

The scorching sun was progressively getting higher in the sky and heating the world beneath. At the top of the Dong Ling Hill, the temperature was rising as well. There was absolutely no place to go to avoid the scorching hot sun.

The sun was obviously incredibly powerful. The sun would always rise and set, no matter how strong people were, they couldn't stop the sun from rising.

At that moment, Lin Feng opened his eyes and a realisation flashed through his eyes. He raised his head and looked at the sky.

Surprisingly, Lin Feng was looking directly at the scorching sun that was high in the sky.

“Alright, it will be you.” Said Lin Feng looking calm.

Cosmos Burning Sun. Lin Feng would be able to practice under the scorching sunlight and absorb the pure Qi of the sun, then he could unleash his power and burn the universe.

Lin Feng had made up his mind, forgetting the other skills. The Cosmos Burning Sun skill wasn't an extremely high level, it was a Di level skill of lower quality but it could be improved. The stronger the pure Qi of the sun was, the stronger the attack. The more powerful the pure Qi of the sun was, the more brutal the attack was. If a cultivator managed to master the technique to an extremely high level, they could ignite the sky into a sea of flames.

That skill became more and more powerful with time, but it was very hard to meet the requirements to practice it. Absorbing the pure Qi of the sun would cause an intense heat to constantly burn inside the body, it required a lot of perseverance and determination.

But Lin Feng had already made up his mind and didn't hesitate. He immediately sat down cross-legged on the top of the Dong Ling Hill. He started practicing the skill according to the instructions in his memories.

Pure Qi was revolving around his body. Sunlight was moving towards Lin Feng's body, suddenly, there were many threads of

hot light which started to move towards him. Immediately after, he quickly absorbed these threads of sunlight into his body.

Not long after, Lin Feng's body was already dazzling. It seemed like his body had transformed into a pool of water, absorbing all of the hot sunlight from the heavens. An endless stream of sunlight continued penetrating into his body and merging with the Qi inside his body. The pure Qi inside his body was starting to burn with an intense heat.

At the same time, Lin Feng's body was enduring the terrifying temperature. The scorching sunlight was mixing with the pure Qi and at the same time, it was also penetrating into his flesh and muscles.

The Cosmos Burning Sun was a skill which required sunlight. Therefore, while learning and practicing the skill, the more scorching hot the sun was, the better it was to practice. Besides, when it was cloudy and rainy or even during the night. There was always sunlight present, but it was much weaker. Unless a cultivator could master the skill to an extremely high level, it was very difficult to constantly attract the sunlight from the surroundings and make it flow steadily into the body.

Two days flowed by, Lin Feng had spent three days on the Dong Ling Hill. Three days also meant Lin Feng's battle against Du Bi was near.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and a resplendent light, as dazzling as the sun could be seen.

Besides, around Lin Feng's body was his pure Qi. It already contained small threads of sunlight inside, therefore it was magnificent.

“Cosmos Burning Sun... it took me a while to understand it clearly!” Thought Lin Feng. That skill was monstrously powerful. It was an amazing skill but Lin Feng still thought that it took too long to learn. Actually, nobody else would have been able to learn it any faster than Lin Feng, he was too quick.

In just a very short time, two days, Lin Feng's pure Qi already absorbed a great deal of sunlight and he was now able to passively absorb the power of the sun.

Lin Feng stood up and looked at the sun. It was dazzling. Finally, Lin Feng would one day be as dazzling as the sun. Even the sky and the earth had to fear the power of the sun.

Lin Feng's body moved and he started rushing down the Dong Ling Hill. In a flash, his silhouette disappeared and he appeared at the foot of the mountain moving towards the Celestial Academy.

After Lin Feng left, two silhouettes rushed to the top of the Dong Ling Hill. They had come to see where Lin Feng was practising his cultivation. They both took a breath and their eyes were suddenly filled with wonder and amazement.

“What skill did he learn?” Asked one of them in a low voice looking astonished. At the place where Lin Feng was sat, the

ground was scorched and flames were starting to rise. The mark was clear and distinct, besides, the Qi was strange. At that moment, smoke started to rise from the top of Dong Ling Hill.

Lin Feng had no idea of what was happening after he left. He hadn't paid attention to the place where he was sitting and hadn't seen that it was now on fire.

At the Celestial Academy, on the vast and broad public square, outside of the cultivation tower, many people had already gathered and were waiting.

The crowd hadn't forgotten that Lin Feng and Du Bi's battle was going to happen on that day.

The other day, Qiong Bi Luo had defeated Du Bi magnificently. Qiong Bi Luo had become the top ranked in the academy.

However, the one who used to be the best disciple of the Celestial Academy couldn't accept his crushing defeat against Qiong Bi Luo, who had used him as a stepping-stone. He had asked Lin Feng if he had lost because of his spirit but Lin Feng had said that it was more the weakness of the person than the weakness of the spirit which had infuriated Du Bi. He then insulted and threatened Lin Feng. All of these things had led to the challenge.

It resembled Lin Feng and Hei Mo's battle. People had seen Lin Feng for the first time back then and had noticed how carefree he was.

Not much time had passed yet Lin Feng was already well-known within the academy. However, his opponents were not people like Hei Mo, who were at the bottom of the rankings of the academy, instead, his opponents were those at the top of the rankings such as Du Bi, who had already broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.

People were looking forward to that battle, it was definitely going to be incredible.

Du Bi had threatened Lin Feng and said that just because he could survive one blade attack, it didn't necessarily mean that he would be able to survive a second. Very quickly, there would be an answer to this.

In the sky, brutal and violent blade energy emerged. It was extremely sharp and had enveloped everything single thing in the atmosphere. That blade energy made people's hearts feel extremely cold as if they were being forced to kneel before it.

The crowd was gazing into the distance and saw that Du Bi was riding on a blade of pure Qi. That blade was emitting whistling sounds in the air and it looked majestic.

At that moment, Du Bi didn't look dispirited like when he had fought against Qiong Bi Luo. He looked arrogant and again but his eyes were filled with hatred. He was using Lin Feng to wipe away the humiliation he had endured. He wasn't the best in the academy anymore, but it didn't mean that he had to lose all of his prestige and reputation.

Du Bi was moving towards the cultivation tower, in the sky above the crowd.

He coldly glanced at the crowd, smiled coldly and said: “Since he doesn’t dare to show his face, it means that Lin Feng, from the very beginning, is just a coward who likes to talk big. It seems like I overestimated him and it was a mistake to come here today.”

The crowd glanced right and left and then everybody started whispering. Lin Feng really hadn’t come. Could it be that Du Bi was right? Lin Feng was just a coward?

Last time, he didn’t fight against Qiong Bi Luo and now, he wasn’t fighting Du Bi either.

“Your cultivation and lack of skill is disappointing, it no wonder that you lost against Qiong Bi Luo.” Said a voice which filled the atmosphere and stupefied him.

He turned around and saw a figure at the top of the cultivation tower, Lin Feng could be clearly seen atop the cultivation tower, smiling coldly, he said: “I’ve been here since the beginning but surprisingly, you weren’t even able to sense my presence... yet you surprisingly have the courage to say such arrogant things. You just like to show off, nothing more. It’s not surprising that you lost the first position in the rankings.

Chapter 332: The Sword of Sunlight!

Lin Feng was standing at the top of the cultivation tower. Lin Feng despised Du Bi. He definitely occupied a commanding position which perfectly matched his manner of speaking. Lin Feng sounded like he was reprimanding Du Bi.

The crowd and Du Bi were a bit surprised. Lin Feng had surprisingly been at the top of the cultivation tower the entire time. The fact that the crowd hadn't noticed him was excusable but Du Bi surprisingly hadn't noticed him either. Even though he was at the Xuan Qi layer, it seemed like he lacked many things. Besides, Lin Feng was only a cultivator at the Ling Qi layer.

Du Bi's facial expression was hideous. He raised his head and glared at Lin Feng. He then said in an ice-cold way: "Arrogant or not, let's fight!"

"Hmph." Lin Feng smiled coldly. His sword energy was swift and fierce. Suddenly, a sword illusion appeared under Lin Feng's feet, he used the sword to fly through the sky. That sword was made from condensed pure Qi. Lin Feng could already condense pure Qi in such a brilliant way.

"Could it be that Lin Feng broke through to the Xuan Qi layer?" Thought the crowd. That sword made from condensed pure Qi wasn't something that a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer was able to use. Even if Lin Feng hadn't broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, he was only a small step away. He was already at the very peak of the Ling Qi layer.

At that moment, Lin Feng and Du Bi were staring at each other. In the same way, Du Bi was also standing on a blade. They were both standing in the sky while releasing swift and fierce Qi.

“A tiny little cultivator of the Ling Qi layer, that’s all... and yet you dare to talk big all the time. Today, I will carry out the second blade attack and you will understand that you are just an arrogant fool.” Said Du Bi sounding cold and detached.

He raised his arm into the sky and the pure Qi in the air started whistling and moving straight into the palm of his hand. He condensed the Qi into a gigantic blade. It looked strong and sharp as if it could cut through anything in its path.

Lin Feng was standing in the sky, motionless. He wasn’t even taking out a sword.

Du Bi had an obvious mocking smile on the corner of his mouth. He wanted everybody to know that even if he had lost against Qiong Bi Luo, not anybody could humiliate him. Nobody could despise him even if he had lost. It had been his first defeat and would remain the last one.

“Lacerate!”

His arm started rushing down towards Lin Feng. The gigantic blade was lacerating the atmosphere. The air was slightly being split apart like a parting sea.

Lin Feng looked calm and serene, he was just observing the gigantic blade moving towards him. When it arrived just above his head, Lin Feng finally moved, as fast as the wind.

It had just been a faint movement and Lin Feng had vanished from his initial position. There wasn't any sign of him on the ground either.

Whistling sounds filled the air as the blade cut through the atmosphere. The gigantic blade had chopped down but hadn't come into contact with Lin Feng, but the blade force was still rushing down without stopping.

“He dodged so quickly!” The crowd on the ground was gasping with astonishment, especially when they sensed the oppressing blade energy. They were so scared that they were shaking from head to toe, The crows was unceasingly dodging the energy.

“BOOM!” The blade made from pure Qi continued to send its strength down which crashed into the ground making a cloud of dust rise into the air. On the ground, a huge and deep fissure appeared, people couldn't believe their eyes.

However, Du Bi didn't look proud of himself at all, his face was just filled with endless coldness.

Lin Feng had dodged his blade attack so easily. That blade had been completely useless.

He had attacked Lin Feng but wasn't even able to touch him, wasn't that attack pointless?

Du Bi shouted furiously and condensed his pure Qi again. A strong wind emerged and rolled through the atmosphere emitting fluttering sounds. It was as quick as lightning.

Lin Feng's silhouette slightly shook. A moment before, when that blade had moved towards him, he had sensed it because of his earth fusion. Even the tiniest grain of sand couldn't escape from Lin Feng's senses. At the same time, his agility techniques were extremely well developed. Unless the opponent's speed became monstrous and didn't give Lin Feng enough time to dodge, the opponent wouldn't be able to touch him.

Besides, Du Bi was using pure Qi to make his blade even more brutal which greatly influenced his speed, therefore, he wasn't able to touch Lin Feng.

"Your words sound great yet lack substance. Is that the blade you are so intensely proud of? Do you think that, in a life and death battle, an opponent would stand still so you can unleash your blade attacks? If you can't touch me, how is this even considered a battle?" Said Lin Feng making fun of Du Bi which made him grow even more furious.

The crowd was shivering. Indeed, during a battle, cultivators could use any number of skills and fought in different ways. Du Bi had a blade spirit, which was extremely powerful and other people couldn't resist its power. There could only be one winner and one loser. Even though his blade was extremely brutal, if it always

missed his opponent, it was useless, it was just a crappy blade. Of course, it was also due to the fact that Lin Feng was particularly quick with his acute senses. In fact, Du Bi's blade wasn't actually that slow, otherwise, becoming a blade cultivator would have been pointless.

“Are you just going to dodge my attacks?” Joked Du Bi.

“I only dodge? Why don't you just simply admit that you are a crappy blade cultivator? Do you never dodge when you fight? Alright, we will see if you will take my attacks head on?” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. Immediately after, he raised his hand the Pure Qi in the atmosphere started to spin. Battle energy as well as some deadly Qi rose into in the sky.

A sword, made of multiple types of pure Qi, condensed in Lin Feng's hand. He looked like a deadly god of war. The sunlight started moving towards his body. A dazzling and resplendent golden light started to revolve around his sword, as it started to absorb sunlight. A scorching heat invaded the atmosphere and completely dominated the area.

“What a terrifying skill!”

People raised their heads and looked at the sword in Lin Feng's hand. It was as dazzling as the sun and it was so bright that it blinded them. The battle energy was dazzling and burning bright, but the scorching light was even more painful to the eyes.

Lin Feng took a step forwards and his sword energy filled the

atmosphere. It was monstrously violent as it pierced through the air.

“Du Bi, the other day, I withstood your first blade attack, after that you became arrogant and said that I could only withstand only one of your attacks. I don’t understand what gives you the right to say such arrogant words. You’re a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer and you are still unable to reach me with your blade even though I am only at the Ling Qi layer. Surprisingly, you are not ashamed of spitting out such insanities. I really admire you for your shamelessness.”

Lin Feng stepped forwards again and his swift and fierce sword energy bombarded the atmosphere. His energy was becoming more brutal with each passing second. At that moment, Du Bi sensed an extremely sharp and oppressive energy, as if his body was going to be ripped apart.

He slightly frowned and suddenly had the sensation that Lin Feng’s sword wasn’t a single bit weaker than his own blade.

“You are weak and yet consider yourself as a genius cultivator. You are unable to make any progress with your attitude. You lost against Qiong Bi Luo which is normal, but the most shameless thing you did was to refuse my advice and take it as a humiliation when actually it could have greatly benefitted you to heed my advice. Actually, it was because of the previous humiliation of losing against Qiong Bi Luo, because you cannot defeat the person who humiliated you, you directed your hatred towards me. You have already lost your determination on the path of cultivation. You are considered as a genius but it is just an undeserved title.”

Said Lin Feng. These words bombarded Du Bi's heart. Indeed, he had lost against Qiong Bi Luo and had been strongly affected by that defeat. Therefore, when he had heard Lin Feng, he had become furious, wanted to kill him and threatened him.

Du Bi's energy was getting weaker and weaker.

When the crowd saw that, they were astonished. Lin Feng's energy was becoming more and more powerful while Du Bi was losing his determination because of Lin Feng's words.

“Du Bi, if you want to use me to prove something, I will show you that the so-called best disciple of the Celestial Academy is an undeserved reputation. You are just a trashy cultivator who put too much effort into breaking through to higher layers, nothing more.”

Lin Feng jumped in the sky and released an incredible amount of deadly sword energy. His sword was dazzling as it pierced through the sky and moved nearer to Du Bi.

Du Bi raised his head and saw Lin Feng's sword which was blinding to look at, it seemed like looking at Lin Feng's sword was like looking into the sun. It really looked like a small sun, so dazzling that he couldn't keep his eyes open and therefore couldn't look at Lin Feng.

“Ahhh!” Shouted Du Bi. His arm transformed into a blade and slashed through the air. Once again, his attack had missed its target.

“Pierce!”

At the moment when Du Bi had launched his blade attack, at the same time, Lin Feng also attacked. His sword pierced the sky, it was incredibly sharp and contained a scorching hot sunlight.

The crowd was astonished. The smell of burning filled the atmosphere. That sword had pierced the atmosphere and it seemed like solar flames were burning the atmosphere itself.

That dazzling sword had set the air on fire and a long trail of flames appeared in the sky. It looked incredible.

Besides, at the same time, Du Bi's blade was slowly vanishing inside that dazzling light.

Chapter 333: The Flames at Dong Ling!

People in the crowd had their mouths wide open and were left breathless. They were only staring at that dazzling sword.

Such a sword attack had surprisingly been carried out by a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer, Lin Feng. Suddenly, they understood that Du Bi was not a match for Lin Feng.

Under that sword, a horrible shriek of agony filled the air. It was shocking.

That horrible shriek had obviously been emitted by Du Bi. The crowd only saw that incredibly proud young man, Du Bi, slowly fall from the sky. Besides, his body was surrounded by flames; that sword attack had set him on fire.

Du Bi no longer had any arms left attached to his body. He would never be able to use his blade again.

“Ahhhhhhh!” shouted Du Bi furiously while glaring at Lin Feng with hatred in his eyes.

“You say that I cannot withstand your second blade attack, but I just cut off your arm with my first attack. You only have yourself to blame,” said Lin Feng coldly.

While looking at Du Bi, he said: “I will not kill you. You came here to prove to everyone how extremely strong and powerful you

are, but your arm is the price you pay for being insufferably arrogant and threatening me.”

Du Bi had been defeated by Qiong Bi Luo and had wanted to use Lin Feng to regain his reputation. Nobody would have ever thought that he would end up losing his arm because of it.

Du Bi wasn't the best disciple in the Celestial Academy anymore, and on top of that, he wasn't even the second best either. Lin Feng had easily defeated him and could easily take his life.

Qiong Bi Luo and Lin Feng were incredible geniuses.

The only question was between Lin Feng and Qiong Bi Luo: who was the strongest?

Initially, everybody already considered Qiong Bi Luo as the strongest in the Celestial Academy. That was because nobody, not even Du Bi, could rival him. However, that day's battle had just shown them that being at the top in the ranking didn't necessarily mean they were the strongest, and also that rushing into a higher cultivation level, before you were ready, didn't necessarily increase a cultivator's battle power either.

The one who used to be the top ranked disciple of the academy, Du Bi, had already lost two battles. On top of that, Lin Feng had cut off his remaining arm, making him completely armless, yet Lin Feng had been merciful and spared his life.

“As expected, it’s the era of the geniuses,” said people in the crowd while sighing. Each and every hidden genius was now starting to reveal their power. Lin Feng and Qiong Bi Luo were both good examples of people who had more power than originally believed.

However, the so called geniuses who didn’t advance and give it their all were doomed. For example, Du Bi had lost his reputation and lost his last remaining arm.

Being a genius was a perpetual fight; if geniuses could rise, others could fall. For example, in Xue Yue, who knew if the eight high officials would be the same in the following year? Who would become the genius of the geniuses? Who had what it took to shock the masses?

“Get lost,” said Lin Feng to Du Bi, which made Du Bi’s facial expression go rigid. The expression on the corner of his mouth seemed to indicate that he found himself to be ridiculous.

He had thought that he was amazingly strong; that Lin Feng was the same as an insect before him. But at that moment, Lin Feng was dominating the entire situation and talking to him as if he didn’t even matter anymore.

Besides, if Du Bi didn’t leave, it would mean that even though he had lost his last arm, he still wanted to fight.

He turned around, stepped on an extremely weak blade made from pure Qi and left. His silhouette vanished into the sky, which

made many people look disappointed. On the vast public square, various comments were spreading through the crowd.

After that battle, the news would spread very quickly, and everybody would quickly know that Lin Feng had cut off Du Bi's arm.

People were even trying to figure out what the new ranking list could look like. Everybody agreed on the fact that Qiong Bi Luo was the top ranked in the academy.

Lin Feng was a bit weaker than Qiong Bi Luo, so the crowd thought that he would be ranked second.

Wen Ao Xue's ranking, as before, wouldn't change; he was still the third best in the academy.

The crowd had been completely dumbstruck by Lin Feng's performance, but they still considered Qiong Bi Luo as stronger than Lin Feng because he had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. His cultivation level was higher than that of Lin Feng. Besides, his Blue Void spirit was monstrously powerful. Nobody was able to escape his Blue Void Underworld. If he wanted to kill Du Bi, he could have done it very easily. Because of all of this, people estimated that it would be extremely difficult for Lin Feng to defeat Qiong Bi Luo, who was monstrously strong.

But the crowd also admittedly thought that even though Qiong Bi Luo was the best in the academy at the moment, that would probably change in the future. After all, Lin Feng was younger

than him by a few years. Lin Feng had huge potential. When Qiong Bi Luo was at the same age as Lin Feng, he wasn't nearly as strong as Lin Feng.

Qiong Bi Luo was monstrously powerful and best in the academy.

Lin Feng had extremely high natural abilities and had the greatest future potential.

However, potential couldn't be used to determine a cultivator's strength. For example, after Qiong Bi Luo had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, he had immediately challenged Du Bi and easily defeated him. He had thus become the best in the academy. It seemed like Qiong Bi Luo had become an entirely different person after breaking through. Even though Lin Feng had high potential, would he follow the same path as Qiong Bi Luo in the future? Nobody could predict the future.

"If Qiong Bi Luo could fight against Lin Feng, that would be the best," thought the people of the academy. They were thinking that in the past, when Lin Feng had come out right after Qiong Bi Luo had left, it was a pity. If the two of them had fought, wouldn't it have been an inspiring battle?

Qiong Bi Luo knew nothing of the comments, which were spreading in the crowd. After defeating Du Bi and becoming the top ranked disciple in the academy, he had confined himself for a few days to strengthen and consolidate the power gained from breaking into the Xuan Qi layer. At that moment, he had just come out and was walking through the public square. He heard peoples' comments and whispers and learned that Lin Feng had also

defeated Du Bi and that he, on top of that, had cut off Du Bi's last arm, making him unable to wield a blade.

At that moment, everybody was comparing Qiong Bi Luo with Lin Feng.

Qiong Bi Luo was walking unnoticed through the crowd, which showed the power difference between him and them. He then took off his bamboo hat, and a strange smile appeared on his face.

“Lin Feng is amusing. He is just a weak cultivator of the Ling Qi layer. Could he really overturn the heavens!” said Qiong Bi Luo mockingly. He then smiled coldly and said: “Du Bi is really worthless, he cannot even compete with a cultivator at the Ling Qi layer. If I had known that, I would have crippled his cultivation to help avoid him making a fool of himself again.”

When people around him heard his words, they turned around and looked at him. They couldn't help but be astonished.

Qiong Bi Luo. Surprisingly, it was Qiong Bi Luo!

Some people were gasping with astonishment. Immediately, more and more people started turning around and looking at him. Qiong Bi Luo was really there!

Qiong Bi Luo glanced at the crowd with an extremely arrogant look. He enjoyed the sensation of being observed and worshiped by tens of thousands of people. He just had to show himself and he

could draw everybody's attention.

Lin Feng would never be able to steal his grandeur; he wasn't as charismatic.

“It seems like on that day, when Lin Feng and I didn't fight, you all have misunderstood something. Since you want to compare Lin Feng and me, I will show you who, between Lin Feng and me, the real genius of the academy is. I want everybody to clearly understand that Lin Feng, the one that you describe as a genius, is, in front of me, as worthless as Du Bi,” Qiong Bi Luo sounded extremely arrogant.

Immediately after, his silhouette flickered and shot through the sky, which made people shiver. Their eyes were twinkling. From what Qiong Bi Luo had said, it seemed like he wanted to fight against Lin Feng. He wanted to crush Lin Feng and be considered the sole genius of the academy. He wanted to be the only person at the top.

Lin Feng also didn't know what was going on within the academy.

Something incredible had occurred in the Imperial City recently. In the eastern part of the city, there was a hill called the Dong Ling Hill. It seemed like the sun was shining on that area much more than usual, especially towards the top of the hill. It was particularly pleasant to go there to observe the sunset because the temperature was surprisingly much nicer than in other places.

At that moment, at the top of the Dong Ling Hill, the atmosphere wasn't filled with warmth; instead, flames were invading the atmosphere. These flames were aggressive and blazing. These flames were incredibly monstrous and unyielding.

Around the Dong Ling Hill, many people were astonished. Surprisingly, there was a fire. They were wondering what kind of strong fire cultivator would have set such a fire. Or maybe it had been caused during a battle between two extremely strong cultivators. It was possible that they created some flames made from pure Qi, which ignited Dong Ling Hill.

Besides, no matter what caused the fire, the cultivation strength must have been monstrous because, at this moment, the ground and the atmosphere itself were catching on fire.

However, nobody noticed that when the flames rose, there was a person covered with sweat who seemed exhausted. That person was walking away, and with Dong Ling Hill to their back, they didn't even look back at the fire behind them.

Chapter 334: Burn and Die!

Lin Feng was slowly approaching the palace where the military students of the Celestial Academy lived.

At that moment, his hair was extremely messy and he had dark stains all over his clothes. He also didn't smell too good because he was sitting in the intense heat for a long period of time, which was why people were not fond of approaching him in his current state.

But Lin Feng's eyes were just as resplendent as before and still showed that profound unfathomable expression.

"Lin Feng!" Said a voice which was filled with excitement. Lin Feng raised his head and saw a smiling man coming towards him.

"Is there a problem?" Asked Lin Feng. He didn't remember having ever met that man before. He didn't know him.

"No, I just thought that we could talk about cultivation together. How do you practice cultivation? You are so young yet you are so terrifyingly strong already." Asked the man while smiling. Lin Feng slightly frowned but he immediately smiled.

"I just close my eyes." Said Lin Feng while smiling.

"Huh?" That man's eyes twinkled, he didn't understand what Lin Feng meant.

“I close my eyes, this is my strategy when I practice cultivation.” Said Lin Feng with the same warm and friendly smile as before.

The man looked like he was lost in thought for a moment but immediately after, he nodded, smiled and said: “Alright.”

When he finished talking, he slowly closed his eyes.

But at the moment when he closed his eyes, a strong whistling sound pierced through his ears. That man, whose eyes were closed, suddenly violently rushed backwards, a monstrous pure Qi was flowing around his body. Such a technique was dazzling to behold.

People who were around started shaking. It was another cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. Since when were there so many cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer? They could be seen everywhere.

“Die!” Said Lin Feng in a low voice. Deadly energy spread through the atmosphere. A sword immediately pierced the pure Qi and penetrated into the opponent’s chest.

The man opened his eyes, he was blankly staring at Lin Feng. He couldn’t believe his eyes.

“You... How did you know?” Asked the man with a husky voice. Dark-red blood was unceasingly flowing from his wound.

“You asked me to give you some advice but from the beginning to the end, you were not paying attention and just kept on the same

fake smile on your face, don't you think that it looked incredibly strange?" Said Lin Feng coldly and detached still holding the dagger. If that person had really been one of Lin Feng's followers, he would have shown some excitement or confusion, he would have at least shown some type of emotion.

Instead, that person had a fake smile and his emotions did not change at all.

"You kill me by relying on something as unimportant as my facial expression?" said that man, who, as before, couldn't believe it.

"Of course not, your smile looked extremely fake indeed but also, when we were talking, some deadly Qi targeted me from behind, it was very well hidden before that, but they slightly lost focus and released some deadly Qi, that, at least, gave me a reason to kill you." Said Lin Feng sounding ice-cold. When he finished talking, in a flash, a brutal and oppressive energy appeared around his body.

Lin Feng's sword slightly moved and scorching hot fire Qi attacked the opponent's vital organs and blood vessels. At the same time, he abruptly turned around.

A spear which looked like a long dragon was rushing towards him, it was another cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer.

Lin Feng was wondering how it was possible that cultivators of the Xuan Qi Layer to keep appearing in groups to trap him. When he had only just broken through to the Ling Qi layer, he also

considered cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer as gods. He even almost never had the occasion to meet cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. After breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer, he would possibly meet more of them.

“You’re an assassin and you can’t even control your deadly Qi. As an assassin, you are doomed to remain a failure forever.”

Lin Feng abruptly moved back as he critiqued his assassin. It was precisely because of him releasing a small amount of deadly energy that Lin Feng had understood what was going on, otherwise, he wouldn’t have immediately attacked.

If he hadn’t attacked first, the opponent would have been able to attempt their trap. With one cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer attacking from the front while the other was attacking him from the back, the situation could have been fatal for Lin Feng.

But these two cultivators had only broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer so basically, Lin Feng didn’t really care too much.

When that assassin saw that one attack hadn’t been enough and that he was unable to touch Lin Feng, the spear made of pure Qi vanished, he turned around and started to retreat.

Those who were trained to be assassins weren’t good at fighting face-to-face. If their surprise attacks failed, they would retreat and try again, that was one of the assassin’s rules. If the assassin stayed there and didn’t manage to kill Lin Feng, it would draw the attention of the strong students.

“You want to go?” Said Lin Feng while smiling. Lin Feng took a step and rushed forward. In his hand appeared a sword made from pure Qi which pierced through the atmosphere.

“Stop!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. His sword was releasing a resplendent pure Qi which was moving towards the opponent.

That person could sense the powerful sword Qi moving towards him. His facial expression went rigid, he then turned around and released an extremely strong pure Qi to stop Lin Feng’s sword.

However, the pure Qi collapsed immediately and the pure Qi dispersed into the atmosphere, but that person used the force of Lin Feng’s attack to propel his body further away from Lin Feng.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. Lin Feng’s sword rushed towards the assassin and its light was dazzling as the sun.

If others could see Lin Feng’s sword, they would have the impression that they were looking directly into the sun.

That assassin’s facial expression drastically changed. He tried to condense more pure Qi to block the attack but Lin Feng’s dazzling sword instantly reached the assassin, annihilating everything in its path. Once Lin Feng was infuriated, nothing could stop him.

“Psssh”

Blood slashed into the atmosphere as the dazzling sword struck the assassin, he had been killed by the sword, but the moment his sword pierced his opponent, the opponent's body caught fire. The flames violently rose into the sky. In a short moment, that assassin was nothing but ashes in the wind.

Not only did Lin Feng's attack have the same dazzling light as the sun but it also contained the sun's scorching heat, it could burn anything.

“What a terrifying sword attack!” Thought the people who had gathered around. Lin Feng was monstrously strong. Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer couldn't even withstand a single one of Lin Feng's attacks. Even in their dreams, the crowd would have never imagined such a scene.

As far as they were concerned, cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were like gods and it was their dream to become one someday, but Lin Feng was shaking their beliefs. One sword attack had been enough to defeat the cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer.

In a very short amount of time, two assassins of the Xuan Qi layer tried to kill Lin Feng and both ended up dead.

They didn't even have an opportunity to fight back. They had just been killed on the spot. For trying to assassinate Lin Feng, they were killed.

When Lin Feng saw the burning corpse, he still looked cold and detached, he was even still releasing a small amount of deadly Qi.

Last time, he had been ambushed by two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer but had been injured severely. He had even taken a few days to recover. It wasn't long after that two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer had appeared again using the same tactic.

Apart from a few people with an incredible social status, Lin Feng had no clue as to who could send so many cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer to kill him.

“Yu Tian Xing!” Whispered Lin Feng with a murderous expression on his face. One of the people who had started everything and helped with the original assassination attempt was Yu Tian Xing. That was enough.

Lin Feng turned and started walking. He entered the residence palace and went back to his living quarters.

When Yi Xue saw Lin Feng, she was surprised. At that moment, Lin Feng looked like he had been having a tough time and he even smelt like smoke.

“Master, I will help and prepare some hot water.” Said Yi Xue while walking towards the bathroom. She was smart and knew what she had to do.

“I don't need hot water. Cold water is enough for me.” Explained Lin Feng to Yi Xue. It seemed that he really did need a bath.

“Alright.” Said Yi Xue. She didn’t turn around and kept walking towards the bathroom.

“What’s going on?” Asked Meng Qing while opening the door and coming in. She couldn’t help but ask when she saw Lin Feng’s appearance.

“Nothing, it happened while I was practicing.” Replied Lin Feng while waving both hands to reassure Meng Qing. He then started walking towards her room.

“Oh, that’s all.” Said Meng Qing. Immediately after, she closed the door in Lin Feng’s face which stupefied Lin Feng and stopped him in his tracks. A wry smile appeared on his face.

He was a bit annoyed. It was clear that Meng Qing was angry with him for some reason. Why was she acting so cold again? Will that ice goddess ever let her heart melt?

“Hmph!” Someone groaned by Lin Feng’s side. It was Lan Jiao, she was sitting on a chair made of stone. She looked proud of herself as if she was gloating at Lin Feng’s misfortune.

Lin Feng looked at Lan Jiao and she immediately avoided his eyes, and looked somewhere else. She didn’t want Lin Feng to meet her eyes.

But immediately after, Lin Feng shook his head and said nothing. He immediately walked towards the bathroom.

That move surprised Lan Jiao who gnashed her teeth and furiously stamped her feet.

She used to be extremely proud and arrogant but since she was following Lin Feng, she kept being bullied and ignored by that shameless bastard!

Chapter 335: A Speechless Lin Feng!

Lin Feng entered the bathroom and Yi Xue had already prepared the water. When she saw Lin Feng arrive, she said in a low voice: “Master, do you need me to help undress you and wash you while you bathe?”

While talking, Yi Xue slightly lowered her head and an expression of shyness appeared on her face.

Lin Feng was a bit surprised and scratched his head. A beautiful woman wanted to take off his clothes and wash him? He hadn't ever had such an offer before.

But Lin Feng shook his head and said: “No need, thank you, you can go back to what you were doing.”

“Alright.” Said Yi Xue while nodding. She then left while still looking at the floor and closed the door behind her.

Lin Feng smiled and immediately entered the huge bathtub. In a flash, a cool and refreshing sensation spread through Lin Feng's body and he couldn't help but moan.

When using his Cosmos Burning Sun skill, Lin Feng absorbed sunlight which penetrated into his body and then turned into pure fire Qi. Lin Feng clearly sensed the scorching heat of these flames and even started to feel his blood vessels burning.

Last time, he had set the entire Dong Ling Hill on fire which proved how scorching hot his flames were.

Therefore, when Lin Feng entered the cold water, he felt like he had just left hell and arrived in heaven. His body had finally cooled down, his pores opened and he felt extremely comfortable.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and as if he was intoxicated with that refreshing and comfortable feeling, he fell asleep. Lin Feng had surprisingly forgotten that he was in the bath and fell sound asleep. These days, Lin Feng was exhausted and needed to relax.

After some time, Lan Jiao and Yi Xue were outside and suddenly felt a scorching heat against their face. They couldn't help but be stupefied, they both looked at each other and immediately looked towards the bathroom.

“Yi Xue, is he still in the bath?” Asked Lan Jiao perplexed

“Yes, besides, he was having a cold bath.” Nodded Yi Xue. She didn't understand what was going on either.

“Go and have a look.” Said Lan Jiao to Yi Xue, who immediately blushed and replied: “I think you should go and see.”

“No way.” Said Lan Jiao while shaking her head. Immediately after, she stopped looking in that direction but the heat was growing more and more intense and violent. Both of them were extremely curious.

What is Lin Feng actually doing?

“Yi Xue, we could go together.” Said Lan Jiao but Yi Xue, as before, shook her head: “I’m not going.”

“If you don’t want to go, I’ll go.” Said Lan Jiao who couldn’t control her curiosity any longer. She was taking triumphant strides as if she was heroically sacrificing herself.

Yi Xue looked at her back with sparkling eyes. She was also very curious.

Lan Jiao passed through the main door and then arrived in front of the bathroom. At that moment, a rich fragrance spread through the air and blew over her face, surprisingly, it contained a burning heat, which stupefied her, besides, from there, she could feel the scorching heat much more distinctly than outside. Even if someone had boiled water, it wouldn’t have ever been that hot, would it?

“Could something have happened?” Thought Lan Jiao and she immediately opened the door and entered the room.

When she arrived in the room, she was stupefied. She only saw Lin Feng topless in the water, sleeping against the edge of the bathtub.

The most shocking thing was that on Lin Feng’s body, there was

a sun pattern which seemed like it was alive. It was unceasingly absorbing the sunlight from the atmosphere along with the pure Qi of heaven and earth.

“What kind of skill is this guy practicing!”

Lan Jiao was looking at Lin Feng who was sound asleep. Surprisingly, he was practicing his cultivation while sleeping and his body was facing the great dangers of that scorching heat. Besides, the water in the bathtub was boiling and it had almost entirely evaporated.

Lan Jiao was observing Lin Feng and progressively looking downwards. Suddenly, her pupils became rigid. Because the water was evaporating, Lin Feng's completely naked body was revealed to her eyes. A moment before, she had been so fascinated by the sun pattern that she hadn't focused on anything else, until that moment. She suddenly felt extremely embarrassed and just wanted to find a hole to crawl into and hide.

At the same time, Lin Feng suddenly opened his eyes and saw Lan Jiao who was staring at him while he bathed.

“What are you doing?” Asked Lin Feng which made Lan Jiao shiver. She raised her head and looked Lin Feng in the eyes, he was unceasingly blinking out of confusion.

“AAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHH!....”

Lan Jiao screamed at the top of her lungs. She immediately turned around and ran towards the exit. She felt like her body was burning with embarrassment, she just wanted to hide away.

What was she doing? She was staring at Lin Feng's body and the most horrible part was that he had woken up when she was fixedly staring at his naked body. She felt like a pervert, a peeper.

When Lin Feng heard Lan Jiao's scream, he was dumbfounded. Then, he lowered his head and noticed that the water of the bathtub had evaporated. In a flash, his face turned entirely red as well, he remained completely silent.

The most horrible thing was that Lan Jiao had screamed in such a way that people would think that Lin Feng had done something to her...

“What's wrong?” Shouted Yi Xue from outside of the bathroom.

“Get in and you will see!” When Lin Feng heard Lan Jiao's reply, he was stunned. Before he could react, he only saw Yi Xue run into bathroom. After she entered, she then screamed at the top of her lungs and also ran out of the room, leaving Lin Feng, who was still silent.

Why were they screaming and running away? Who was the real victim here?

“What an abominable woman.” Lin Feng gnashed his teeth. Lan

Jiao had already seen him, but that hadn't been enough, she sent Yi Xue in after her. Lin Feng would definitely have his revenge.....

The Cosmos Burning Sun skill was way too violent and brutal. It could even make the water in a bathtub evaporate into nothing.

Concerning the sun pattern which had appeared on his body, Lin Feng had no idea what it was. He was just thinking that his body had become like this because he was practicing the Cosmos Burning Sun skill and it enabled him to radiate his own heat.

As expected, after having a bath, Lin Feng was feeling much better. However, he wasn't hurrying to leave. Instead, he poured some more cold water and washed himself a second time, that was the only way for him to feel absolutely comfortable before he put on his clean clothes. Immediately after his bath, he walked towards the courtyard.

At that moment, Lan Jiao and Yi Xue were once again in the courtyard.

Yi Xue had her head lowered and was unceasingly twirling her fingers out of anxiety. She didn't dare raise her head and look at Lin Feng. Her head was lowered but her cheeks and ears were extremely red.

Concerning Lan Jiao, she was calmly standing on the bench made of stone, her eyes were closed, she even ignored Lin Feng which made him gnash his teeth.

Lin Feng was a virgin, in his previous life as well as in that new life. Having been seen naked by Lan Jiao was an abomination, besides, she had even tricked Yi Xue into looking, Lan Jiao was really detestable.

“Don’t you have something to say to me?” Asked Lin Feng coldly.

Lan Jiao opened her eyes and looked at Lin Feng: “What do you want me to say?”

“You could at least apologize.” Said Lin Feng while looking at Lan Jiao who looked extremely arrogant and carefree, she wasn’t shocked at all.

“Why would I apologize?” Said Lan Jiao while frowning. “I just glanced, did you lose something?”

“Besides, haven’t you already seen me naked?”

“.....” Lin Feng was speechless. He then said coldly and detached: “And when did I see you?”

“You don’t want to admit it? On that evening, try and dare say that the illusion didn’t affect you! You also wanted to take my clothes off.” Said Lan Jiao fearlessly while staring at Lin Feng. She then added: “Or maybe what you mean is that you want to see me naked for real, in person, if that’s what you mean, just tell me and I will compensate you. Don’t hesitate and quickly tell me if that’s the case, I will not get offended.” Said Lan Jiao in a seducing tone.

Her body was moving nearer and nearer to Lin Feng. Lin Feng could already sense her voluptuous chest pressing against his body which suddenly made his heat become even more intense, he like he was going to burn.

“Say something! If you want to see me naked, I will show you. Do you want to see” said Lan Jiao sounding more and more sensual, she looked extremely alluring. Lin Feng’s mouth was extremely dry, she was truly bewitching.

Lin Feng gnashed his teeth and glanced at Meng Qing’s room. Immediately after, he looked at Lan Jiao with a cruel glance. He then turned around and walked towards Meng Qing’s room.

“You win!” Said Lin Feng. He had no way to win against her. What if he really wanted her to take off her clothes?

“You know it, that’s the most important thing.” Said Lan Jiao while looking at Lin Feng who was walking towards Meng Qing’s room. She sounded like she was proud of her victory. While looking at Lin Feng leaving, she sat down again, she no longer looked proud. Instead, her eyes revealed a lonely girl who felt ridiculous at herself, a wry smile appeared on her face.

In Lin Feng’s heart, there was only Meng Qing.

Yi Xue raised her head and when she saw Lan Jiao’s facial expression, she shivered. Immediately after, she lowered her head again. In Lan Jiao’s eyes, there was no pride at all, there was only sadness.

Chapter 336: The Sun Skill

Lin Feng immediately entered into Meng Qing's room as if he had entered his own room.

If he had knocked at her door, Meng Qing would have pretended that she was sleeping and would have ignored him. Lin Feng had learnt from his mistakes and didn't knock anymore.

Meng Qing was sitting up and looked at Lin Feng as he entered. There was a strange expression in her beautiful eyes and she said to Lin Feng: "Did you become stronger?"

"Yes." Nodded Lin Feng while smiling. "I have broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. Soon, I will not need you to protect me anymore."

When Meng Qing heard Lin Feng, she was stupefied. She suddenly felt a wave of sadness as she looked at Lin Feng and said: "What you mean is that you will no longer need me by your side anymore?!"

"How could that even be possible!" Lin Feng, at that moment, saw the hopelessness disappear from Meng Qing's face and instead she looked delighted. That girl was finally accepting her emotions a bit more with each day.

Lin Feng walked towards Meng Qing and sat down next to her. He put one of his hands on her back and then shifted it to wrap around her waist, which made Meng Qing shiver. She wanted to

move away but she couldn't because Lin Feng was using force to keep her close to him. He then pulled her into his embrace.

Lin Feng had understood that he couldn't wait for Meng Qing to take the initiative. He was the only one who could move things forwards, a little bit at a time. In any case, Meng Qing would never get angry at him.

Lin Feng wouldn't need a lot more time before he was stronger than Meng Qing, at that moment, Meng Qing wouldn't be able to watch over him anymore, she would have no choice but to accept it... When Lin Feng thought about that, he felt slightly happier.

“Meng Qing, I will not need you to protect me anymore. However, I will be the one to protect you.”

When Meng Qing heard Lin Feng's warm tone, her heartbeat slightly accelerated. A beautiful and sweet smile suddenly appeared on her face but it lasted for only a brief second.

She remained speechless...

After a while, Meng Qing spoke: “Lin Feng, your body has changed, what skill have you learnt? Is it a fire based skill?”

“You could say that, yes. It's called Cosmos Burning Sun, it's a skill which used the power of the sun. It enables a cultivator to use the pure Qi of the sun, which is obviously extremely hot.” Explained Lin Feng, without hiding anything from Meng Qing.

“Cosmos Burning Sun!” Meng Qing was a bit surprised and added: “Lin Feng, when you start practicing Cosmos Burning Sun, it is a Di level skill of lower quality, however, when the pure Qi of the sun becomes stronger, the skill level increases as well. It then becomes an authentic sun skill. It’s monstrously powerful. How did you obtain it?”

Lin Feng was surprised, he looked at Meng Qing curiously asked: “Meng Qing, how do you know these things?”

“Because what I practice is a lower moon based skill.” Replied Meng Qing. “Now, your Cosmos Burning Sun skill is a Di level skill of lower quality, it can also be considered as a lower sun skill but after, when your mastery of the skill will improve, it will become an authentic sun skill. In comparison with a lower moon skill, the Cosmos Burning Skill can really ignite the sky and boil the oceans.”

“Sun... Moon... There were also other lower sun and lower moon skills....” Lin Feng’s eyes were twinkling. That sun on his chest wasn’t the real sun, instead, it was just a part of its power...

Meng Qing was only practicing a lower moon skill and yet her ice energy was already monstrously powerful. Besides, that Cosmos Burning Sun was a sun skill. No wonder that it was so scorching hot that it was able to make the water of the bathtub evaporate.

“Meng Qing, since the Cosmos-Burning Sun skill is little sun skill and that what you practice is a little moon skill, well....” Lin Feng’s

eyes were twinkling and he was scratching his head. His lips vibrated, he smiled and said: “Meng Qing, do you want to practice cultivation with me? We could practice together.”

Lin Feng looked shy. Those days, he had already broken through to the Xuan Qi layer but the two words “practice together” were making his heart jump, up and down, especially that he had just asked the woman of his dreams, a goddess, to practice with him, Meng Qing. Asking her took all of his courage.

When Meng Qing heard these two words, she looked stupefied. Her heart also started pounding, she was also very nervous.

“Meng Qing, don’t misunderstand me. I just want you to help you get rid of that painful cold. With my sun skill, I should be able to control your lower moon skill.” Said Lin Feng when he saw that Meng Qing was staring at him. He didn’t feel at ease but he was still trying to smile.

When Meng Qing saw Lin Feng’s facial expression, the ice in her heart finally melted and she smiled. Her smile looked like a beautiful lotus flower which appeared on a glacier. Lin Feng was dazzled.

That smile was a way for Meng Qing to express herself, a magnificent and resplendent smile had appeared on her face and it could make an entire glacier melt. It was as if her beauty had penetrated into Lin Feng’s soul.

Lin Feng smiled as well, with his natural charm. Seeing Meng

Qing smile, Lin Feng's smile was profound and meaningful, it came straight from the depths of his heart.

“Lin Feng, give me more time, alright?” Said Meng Qing in a soft voice which made Lin Feng's face go rigid, his heart was still pounding and he said: “Meng Qing..... Does that mean that you agree?”

Meng Qing was requesting for some more time, which indubitably meant that she was tacitly agreeing.

When Meng Qing saw how enthusiastic Lin Feng was, her eyes twinkled and her face turned red. She didn't dare look him in the eyes.

But Meng Qing slightly nodded anyway. She had agreed. She was in love with him, how could she refuse...? It's just that she was a bit scared.....

When Lin Feng saw Meng Qing nod shyly, his heart started pounding once again. He had never even dared to think about practicing together with Meng Qing, he had the impression that it would be like blaspheming against the heavens.

Back then, when Meng Qing appeared before him, she was of the Xuan Qi layer and she was incredibly beautiful, which piqued Lin Feng's interest. He was a bit puzzled at first but then deep in his heart, his feelings for her started to take up more space in his heart. Now that he had become much more powerful, he was also growing more bold, he wanted Meng Qing, he wanted Meng Qing

for himself and he didn't want to lose her.

Even if she was a Goddess of ice, so what? Lin Feng could make her heart melt, he wanted to protect her forever.

Meng Qing was the one he loved.

What Lin Feng didn't know was that, after having broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, his awareness had also become extremely acute, which was why he used the opportunity to ask Meng Qing to practice with him.

Besides, he had been pleasantly surprised by Meng Qing's reply, she surprisingly hadn't refused. Even though Lin Feng knew that Meng Qing liked him, her frozen heart was unable to express her feelings. Lin Feng had the feeling that a curtain was separating them, as if there was an invisible force and a lack of mutual understanding, but at that moment, that force had disappeared and Meng Qing wasn't hiding her feelings anymore. She had nodded and agreed to practice with him.

That simple nod was a declaration of love.

Lin Feng smiled with glee. He firmly and tightly hugged Meng Qing. When he saw her beautiful face only an inch away from his, he said in a soft voice: "Of course, I can give you some time but for now....."

Her ice cold lips gradually became warm as they came into

contact with Lin Feng's lips. At that moment, the ice in her heart melted a bit more.

Meng Qing and Lin Feng were in love.

Meng Qing wasn't hiding her feelings anymore. She put her hands around Lin Feng and embraced him tightly. It wasn't a delicate kiss, Meng Qing had finally let her feelings burst out.

.....

“Master!”

At that moment, a voice interrupted Lin Feng and Meng Qing's passionate embrace. Meng Qing's face was bright red, she looked adorable.

Lin Feng smiled at Meng Qing with a soft and tender look. He caressed her face, but felt annoyed at the interruption.

It was Yi Xue... This really wasn't the right time to come and disturb him.

“I'm going to see what's going on.” Said Lin Feng.

“Alright.” Said Meng Qing like an obedient and shy little girl.

Lin Feng left the room and saw Yi Xue, she quickly said: “Master, a man who calls himself Nan Shan is looking for you.”

“Nan Shan.” Lin Feng frowned. What did he want?

Nan Shan represented Duan Wu Ya, if he had come, it meant that the second prince was looking for Lin Feng.

Chapter 337: Chess with the Princess!

Lin Feng walked through the door and saw Nan Shan outside. When he saw Lin Feng arrive, a grave and stern expression appeared on his face. He tried to smile and said: “Lin Feng, His Majesty wants to see you.”

“The second prince wants to see me? What’s going on?” Said Lin Feng a bit startled. The last time he had seen Duan Wu Ya was in Celestial River. On that day, Duan Wu Ya was wearing black and had brought eight cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer with him. He had been monstrously violent, he killed the King Class Evil Ectoplasm and seized the Heavenly Dragon Cauldron.

But after that, the cauldron had miraculously appeared before Lin Feng. What seemed like an extremely strong sword cultivator had offered the ancient cauldron to Lin Feng.

Since Duan Wu Ya had initially taken the cauldron from Lin Feng, he probably hadn’t voluntarily given it away. It was probably because someone had forced Duan Wu Ya to hand it over.

But what Lin Feng didn’t understand was who would have taken the cauldron from Duan Wu Ya and given it back to him?

Besides, Duan Wu Ya was looking for him. Was it because of the ancient cauldron? Did Duan Wu Ya want to know if Lin Feng had the cauldron?

“Young Master Lin, I don’t know about His Majesty’s personal

matters.” Said Nan Shan while shaking his head with a faint smile.

Lin Feng remained silent and immediately said: “Where are we meeting?”

“Lovesick Forest.” Replied Nan Shan.

“Alright. Let’s go.” Said Lin Feng indifferently while nodding. In Xue Yue, if the second prince wanted to make things difficult for Lin Feng, Lin Feng could do nothing. Since Nan Shan had come, Lin Feng needed to go.

“Thank you, young master.” Said Nan Shan while smiling. Immediately after, he turned around and led the way.

“I’m coming too.” Said someone at that moment. The voice came from behind. Surprisingly, it was Lan Jiao and she was following them.

“Why would you come?” Asked Lin Feng while frowning.

“You need to take care of me.” Said Lan Jiao which made Lin Feng grow speechless. Immediately after, he started walking again and Lan Jiao followed him.

The Lovesick Forest was calm and peaceful. Having peace of mind in that place was easy. The faint sweet fragrance of the lovesick alcohol filled the entire atmosphere making people want to close their eyes and deeply breathe in the air.

The jade green bamboo trees were swaying in the wind. It seemed like another world, it was simple and elegant, and separated people from materialistic ambitions and made them feel at peace.

“How beautiful!” Lan Jiao, who was walking on Lin Feng’s side, was looking around at the beautiful landscape. She couldn’t help but gasp in amazement.

“Lin Feng, where are we? That alcohol smells very special.” Lan Jiao was very curious. Few people had the chance to visit that place.

“This is the Lovesick Forest. The smell is that of the Lovesick Alcohol. When someone drinks it, the person that they love will appear in their heart.” Said Lin Feng which stupefied Lan Jiao.

“Alcohol could make you feel love?” Lan Jiao sounded like she couldn’t believe it.

“Wait, you’ll try some and see.” Replied Lin Feng. She really couldn’t wait.

A moment after, Nan Shan brought Lin Feng to a private room in the middle of the bamboo forest. At that moment, two people were playing chess. One of them was Duan Wu Ya.

The other person was the amazing Duan Xin Ye.

When these two people saw Lin Feng arrive, they both stopped what they were doing and looked towards Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, you came!” Said Duan Wu Ya while smiling and slightly nodding at Lin Feng. Besides, when the beautiful Duan Xin Ye saw Lin Feng, she shouted: “Lin Feng!”

Lan Jiao looked at Duan Xin Ye and then at Lin Feng and noticed that they were both looking at each other in different ways. Duan Xin Ye was looking at Lin Feng in a soft and gentle way. Lan Jiao was a woman and she could clearly see what was going on.

Besides, that woman was extremely beautiful. She looked elegant and noble, her face also looked very delicate. In comparison with Duan Xin Ye, Lan Jiao was extremely far from matching her beauty.

It made Lan Jiao feel uneasy, no wonder her Thousand Evil Illusions Technique had no effect on Lin Feng. On Lin Feng's side, there was the beautiful and pure Meng Qing, then there was that elegant and noble Duan Xin Ye, no wonder.....

But that guy was really lucky, Meng Qing was obviously wonderful, but Duan Xin Ye also seemed to have an extraordinarily high social status and surprisingly, she also had feelings for Lin Feng.

“Second Prince, Princess!” Replied Lin Feng, this was also to let Lan Jiao know their social status.

Amazingly, the girl was the princess of Xue Yue! No wonder she looked so extraordinary.

“Lin Feng, don’t call me princess! Call me Xin Ye, alright?!” Said the incredibly beautiful Duan Xin Ye as if she was slightly saddened by him being formal.

Lin Feng had been in her heart for a while. When she heard Lin Feng call her “princess”, she felt that he was putting distance between them, too much distance. She didn’t like it when Lin Feng treated her the same way as everybody else.

Lin Feng remained silent and immediately nodded.

“Xin Ye!” Said Lin Feng which made Duan Xin Ye give a satisfied smile.

She then immediately walked towards him and suddenly grabbed Lin Feng’s arm. She then said: “Lin Feng, let’s play chess! Alright?”

Duan Wu Ya was looking at them with a smile yet not a smile on his face. He shook his head, smiled and said: “When a girl is of age, she needs to hurry and get married. My sister is hopeless.”

When Duan Xin Ye heard Duan Wu Ya, her face turned red. Even though the situation was a bit embarrassing, she didn’t stop holding Lin Feng’s arm.

Lin Feng had seen her naked, he felt like nothing was impossible

anymore. After Lin Feng left her, Duan Xin Ye was constantly thinking about Lin Feng and she couldn't get his image out of her mind. She couldn't help but think about him constantly. From that moment, she didn't think of herself as a princess when being with Lin Feng, so he had to drop the formality. She promised that if Lin Feng came back to the Imperial City, she wouldn't let him leave her side again.

Lin Feng was smiling wryly. He obviously understood her feelings very well.

“Lin Feng, play chess with my sister.” Said Duan Wu Ya while smiling. Immediately after, he looked at Nan Shan and said: “let's go and take a walk by the lake.”

When he finished talking, he slightly smiled at Lan Jiao but Lan Jiao glared icily at him. That face was familiar. From the second prince's status and his familiar eyes, Lan Jiao guessed that this young man was the one who was wearing black in Celestial River. He was also the one who killed all the escaping members from the Cosmic Pavilion.

When Duan Wu Ya saw that Lan Jiao's eyes were filled with hatred, he kept smiling warmly as before and said: “Do you want to come for a walk?”

“Alright.” Said Lan Jiao coldly, she didn't want to refuse. She then left with Nan Shan and Duan Wu Ya.

Next to the stone table in the middle of the bamboo forest, Lin

Feng and Duan Xin Ye were the only ones left.

They both sat down on stone chairs. Duan Xin Ye looked at Lin Feng and asked: “How are you?”

“I’m fine.” Nodded Lin Feng, he didn’t really know how he should reply.

“How come you haven’t come to see me in such a long time?” Asked Duan Xin Ye which made Lin Feng feel a bit surprised. He then smiled wryly and said: “I was extremely busy in Yangzhou City.”

“Is that so? And who is that beautiful woman with you exactly? You found her in such a short time.” said Duan Xin Ye sounding bitter. Meng Qing had already crushed her confidence. She was way too beautiful and pure... Duan Xin Ye was a princess in the mortal realm, but Meng Qing was a celestial goddess.

And now, a new beautiful woman had appeared by Lin Feng’s side. Even though she wasn’t as beautiful as Meng Qing, she was also extremely beautiful. She had a particularly alluring body and looked extremely seductive. She probably attracted lots of men.

“Her name is Lan Jiao. We accidentally crossed paths.” Replied Lin Feng while smiling wryly.

“Oh.” Replied Duan Xin Ye in a soft and gentle voice while lowering her head. Then, she silently looked at the chess board and

said: “Lin Feng, come, let’s play chess.”

“I am extremely bad at chess, Xin Ye, you will have to show mercy.” Said Lin Feng with a faint smile on his face. Chess in his previous life and in the world of cultivation was quite different, Lin Feng knew almost nothing about the game in the cultivation world.

“Don’t worry. I will definitely show mercy.” Said Duan Xin Ye while giving a mischievous smile.

When they started playing chess, Duan Xin Ye was speechless. She was extremely good at playing the zither, chess, calligraphy, and painting but after Lin Feng said he was bad at chess, each of his moves were perfect.

“Lin Feng, as expected, it seems like you are really bad at chess!” Said Duan Xin Ye while gnashing her teeth. Her snowy-white hand firmly grabbed a piece but she didn’t know what to do against such advanced moves.

When Lin Feng heard Duan Xin Ye’s statement, he smiled wryly. He initially thought that he couldn’t play chess but amongst the memories of the strong cultivator, there was something which gave him the feeling of an experienced strategist. It was if he could control all the pieces on the board, as if it was an army.

Officers experienced in strategies were all excellent chess players.

“I don’t know what’s going on either.” Replied Lin Feng unable to explain. Immediately after, he saw Duan Xin Ye’s face turn pale, using both her hands, she knocked all of the pieces off the board while saying: “I’m not playing anymore, I’ve had enough!”

When Lin Feng saw that extremely graceful and elegant princess act like a spoilt little girl, a strange expression appeared on his face. At that moment, Duan Xin Ye was so adorable that Lin Feng heart started to feel warm.

Chapter 338: Eighteen Years Ago!

“Xin Ye, let’s go outside have a walk.” Said Lin Feng when he saw the chaos that happened to the chessboard.

Duan Wu Ya had invited him to come but it seemed like it was only because of Duan Xin Ye. It didn’t seem to have anything to do with the ancient cauldron but Lan Jiao and Duan Wu Ya were together, Lin Feng was afraid that Lan Jiao would lose her temper.

After all, in Celestial River, Duan Wu Ya had killed Aunt Yun who was very close to Lan Jiao.

“Alright.” Nodded Duan Xin Ye. Immediately after, she stood up and joined Lin Feng on a walk through the bamboo forest.

Deep in the forest, there was a brook which was softly emitting the sound of running water, there was also a small bridge which crossed it, the scenery was enchanting.

Duan Xin Ye raised her head and looked at a bird that was resting on the emerald green bamboo. She suddenly looked pensive and said in a soft voice: “I wish I could one day have a house here with the one I love. It would be so wonderful.”

Lin Feng was surprised and immediately smiled wryly. The situation was awkward for Lin Feng, he then said: “The one who created the Lovesick Forest probably had the same thought which is why they created such a beautiful place.”

“Yes, she was very stupid, she stopped all contact with her clan because of the lover she chose.” Nodded Duan Xin Ye.

When Lin Feng heard Duan Xin Ye heard Lin Feng, he became very curious. He couldn't help but ask: “Who's the owner of the Lovesick Forest?”

Duan Xin Ye looked at Lin Feng, smiled and said: “The person who used to be called the most beautiful woman in the entire country, Yue Meng He.”

“The most beautiful woman of Xue Yue?” Lin Feng was surprised. Duan Xin Ye was extremely beautiful and had an extremely high social status but she had never gained the title of “most beautiful woman in the country”. However, that Yue Meng He had been considered as such, Lin Feng was curious to see such a beauty.

“Yue Meng He!” Whispered Lin Feng and immediately after, he looked at Duan Xin Ye and said: “Her family name is Yue!”

Duan Xin Ye slightly nodded and said: “You immediately guessed it. Indeed, she belongs to the Yue Clan. Besides, in the past, she was considered to be the most gifted disciple of the Yue Clan, to the extent that was even considered as the strongest woman in the entire country of Xue Yue. Even amongst men, rare were those who could compete with her.”

Lin Feng was becoming more and more curious. Lin Feng was

really wondering what such a woman could be like, amazingly, she was the most beautiful woman and the strongest woman of the country and on top of that, there were extremely few men who could defeat her.

“But it’s weird though, since she has such high natural abilities, why did the Yue Clan reject her? They should have put her at the core of the clan, why did they stop contact?” Asked Lin Feng who didn’t understand. The Yue Clan wanted to compete with the Imperial Clan and the Yu Clan, having an extremely gifted disciple would have only been an advantage, why would they stop talking to her?

“That happened eighteen years ago. At that time, the situation was still the same as now, the Duan Clan, the Yue Clan and the Yu Clan were all extremely strong but my Duan Clan, and the Yue Clan were slightly stronger than the Yu Clan because of our special spirits. As far as strength was concerned, no matter if we’re talking about today or before, the Yu Clan cannot rival the Duan Clan or the Yue Clan, they were and are much weaker. In terms of wealth, the Yue Clan isn’t as wealthy as the Duan Clan and the Yu Clan. Amongst the three biggest clans, the strongest and the wealthiest is the Duan Clan which is how the power balance was created. Besides, the Yue Clan is second strongest clan in the country.”

Duan Xin Ye was speaking slowly and continued: “In Xue Yue, four prodigious junior cultivators appeared. One of them belonged to the Duan Clan and one to the Yue Clan, who have the extremely strong blood spirits. Then, there was one who came from a clan of sword cultivators, the Zhuge Clan. They transfer their sword skills from generation to generation. So the third prodigy was from that clan and is called Zhuge Wu Qing. Then, the fourth person didn’t

belong to an influential clan. Instead, that person was absolutely unknown in the past. Nobody knows exactly where he came from. Actually, I only know that just like you, his family name was Lin. He suddenly rose as a prodigy in the Imperial City and possessed a dual spirit.”

“The four prodigies of eighteen years ago had a much more terrifying power and strength than the eight high officials of today and were extremely famous. Amongst these four people, there were three young men and a young girl. That young girl was precisely the most beautiful woman in Xue Yue, Yue Meng He. Lin Feng, imagine, being considered as the most beautiful woman of the entire country and as the strongest and most gifted woman as well, she was the best disciple of the Yue Clan, she was a genius. That woman made the three men’s hearts shake.”

It seemed like Lin Feng understood what had happened.

“The three incredibly strong prodigies fell in love with that woman.” whispered Duan Xin Ye as if she was imagining the story. Every time she heard the story, she was very moved. She couldn’t help but sigh. There was more to know about the story of that heroic woman though.

“But Yue Meng He didn’t choose the strongest of them, the one from the Imperial Clan. She didn’t choose Wu Qing the sword master either. Instead, she fell in love with the unknown young man. You can imagine how the Yue Clan reacted when they found out that Yue Meng He and that unknown prodigy were together. She had a lot of pressure from her clan.

Lin Feng lightly nodded. She had chosen neither the strongest cultivator nor the monstrous sword cultivator Zhuge Wu Qing, instead, she had fallen in love with a prodigious young man who had no social background. That was a calamity for her clan as one could well imagine.

“Besides, in the beginning, the Imperial Clan and the Yue Clan had an agreement. They wanted one of their boys and one of their girls to marry. The prodigy of the Duan Clan had a marriage agreement with Yue Meng He. Besides, the prodigy of the Duan Clan was an extremely aggressive and arrogant person.” Said Duan Xin Ye while shaking her head which startled Lin Feng. However, he was slowly understanding why Yue Meng He and her clan had stopped talking.

“After that, there was a huge pressure on her shoulders, the couple decided to elope and leave the country. Zhuge Wu Qing’s heart was broken into a thousand pieces. He just kept practicing sword cultivation. Besides, he didn’t put Yue Meng He and her lover in a difficult situation, even though his passion for her reached the heavens.”

“But Yue Meng He and the prodigious young man didn’t manage to hide. The people of the Imperial Clan and of the Yue Clan found them. Besides, at that time, Yue Meng He was awakened for some reason. When the prodigious young man saw that they would never succeed in escaping, he decided to send Yue Meng He back to the Yue Clan and fought against the prodigy of the Duan Clan in a decisive battle. In the end, the cultivator from my clan won the battle, he sealed the young prodigy’s spirit and expelled him from the Imperial City.

“Of course, I’ve heard this story many times. My mother used to tell me these stories. I was born shortly after that battle. Besides, my parents don’t allow me to tell anyone else about that story. You have to keep it a secret, Lin Feng, it’s a secret between us.” Said Duan XinYe.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked disappointed. Duan Xin Ye and he hadn’t witnessed the events eighteen years before but they were still profoundly moved by that story. They had no choice but to rely on their imagination to have an idea of what it must have been like.

They had fought because of a beautiful woman. In the end, the unknown young man had left with his soul sealed. Maybe deep in his heart, he had never given up on getting her back.

But even if he didn’t want to give up, what could he do? He had been able to leave alive, that was already amazing!

Chapter 339: To Kill or not to Kill

Lin Feng looked a bit disappointed and looked at Duan Xin Ye, a secret between them?

Could it be that what happened eighteen years ago was still a secret?

But Lin Feng nodded in agreement and Duan Xin Ye smiled.

“After Yue Meng He’s love left the Imperial City, she stopped all contact with her clan, purified her heart and adopted a minimalist lifestyle. She created the Lovesick Forest and the Lovesick Alcohol, which gives birth to feelings of love in people’s hearts.” At that moment, Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng had already left the bamboo forest. She then continued: “Besides, the one from the Duan Clan gave up and started devoting his life to cultivation. He even gave up his status as the monarch. It is said that these days, his cultivation level is monstrous and incredible. Very few people know how strong he really is.”

At that moment, Duan Xin Ye paused, blinked and continued: “Maybe Yue Meng He knows about it, but since the event that happened eighteen years ago, she rarely shows herself. Zhuge Wu Qing and the unknown genius are also like this as well.”

Lin Feng nodded. Eighteen years was a long time, maybe they had already left Xue Yue and would never come back.

Without even realizing it, the two of them arrived at the lakeside

not far from the pavilion. When Duan Wu Ya saw them, he slightly smiled and said: “Xin Ye, Lin Feng, how come you have already finished playing?”

Duan Xin Ye’s face was red and she slightly lowered her head. Lan Jiao looked at Lin Feng at that moment and asked: “When are we going back?”

“Lin Feng and I rarely have the opportunity to meet, why hurry and leave? Lin Feng, let’s go and have a drink.” Said Duan Wu Ya while smiling but at that moment, Lin Feng was watching something behind Duan Wu Ya. When Duan Wu Ya saw that, a profound and meaningful smile appeared on his face. Immediately after, he slowly moved and let Lin Feng look at what was behind him.

At that moment, in the pavilion on the lake, there were many people. They were all young people and had magnificent clothes. Each and every single one of them looked extraordinary. These people were all noble cultivators and all had extraordinary social statuses.

Besides, Lin Feng noticed one person in particular. At the same time, that young man also noticed Lin Feng.

They both stared at each other. That young man had a deep and profound expression in his eyes. Surprisingly, he looked scared and was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

That young man was Yu Tian Xing.

Besides, by Yu Tian Xing's side, there was also Yue Tian Chen. Those two were really extremely close friends, it seemed.

The funniest part is that even though they acted together, Lin Feng always came out on top.

All these chatting young men suddenly stopped talking as if they had sensed that something strange was going on. Lin Feng was gradually releasing a deadly Qi which invaded the atmosphere. His eyes were filled with killing intent.

When Lin Feng saw Yu Tian Xing's facial expression, he immediately understood that the assassins who had tried to kill him before had been sent by Yu Tian Xing and Yue Tian Chen, otherwise, they wouldn't look so scared when seeing Lin Feng. As expected, Yu Tian Xing was trying to take his revenge.

The air was filled with an oppressive deadly energy, Lin Feng's killing intent was becoming clearer and clearer.

"Lin Feng, what are you doing?" Said Yu Tian Xing sounding cold and detached, however, his face still showed that he was scared.

"What are you doing?"

Lin Feng said nothing and walked towards the pavilion. While walking on the long bridge, Lin Feng's energy was becoming denser and more powerful.

Yu Tian Xing firmly gnashed his teeth and kept fixedly staring at Lin Feng. What monstrous deadly energy.

Under the power of the deadly energy, Yu Tian Xing started shaking from head to toe, he was drenched in cold sweat. At that moment, Lin Feng looked extremely murderous as if he was going to start killing at any moment.

“Lin Feng, my family name is Yu, remember that I am from the Yu Clan.” Said Yu Tian Xing when he saw that Lin Feng was not responding.

When the crowd heard Yu Tian Xing, they were all stupefied. It seemed like Yu Tian Xing was extremely scared of Lin Feng, otherwise, he would have never said something like that.

“I know.” Lin Feng finally replied but his deadly energy didn’t disappear.

Yu Tian Xing was fixed staring at Lin Feng and said: “Since you understand, you probably know that if anything happens to me, the Yu Clan will be furious, besides, we are not just any clan. I hope that you deeply consider these things.”

Yu Tian Xing was explaining everything to Lin Feng almost as if he feared that Lin Feng didn’t know his status and how strong the Yu Clan was.

Yu Tian Xing was scared of Lin Feng, extremely scared. He deeply and bitterly hated Lin Feng since the first time he was attacked by him.

Because of hatred, he had been constantly sending people to kill Lin Feng.

And he was scared because Lin Feng was extremely carefree. Lin Feng could be considered a madman. He didn't care about any consequences. He had even dared kill Duan Han and caused trouble at Wen Ren Yan and Duan Yu's wedding ceremony where he dared to kill Wen Ren Yan and Duan Lie. Therefore, Yu Tian Xing was afraid of Lin Feng. If Lin Feng was furious, he would kill him on the spot.

"I know." Said Lin Feng as coldly as before, looking completely unmoved.

"Since you know, move away." Said Yu Tian Xing who wanted to leave but didn't dare because Lin Feng was crossing the bridge, he didn't want to go anywhere near Lin Feng.

If Lin Feng really wanted to kill him, he wouldn't be able to leave. He was currently a lamb in a tiger's den.

"Move away?" Lin Feng smiled coldly. His deadly energy was not growing weaker, on the contrary, it was becoming much more violent.

The deadly energy which was becoming more and more powerful made Yu Tian Xing's body become rigid. He felt like he was freezing.

“Since you know that my family name is Yu, and you know that the Yu Clan has a lot of influence and power, and since you perfectly understand that if you touch me, the repercussions will be grave, how come you are not moving away?”

Yu Tian Xing sounded like he was threatening Lin Feng. At that moment, the situation was not safe and he was feeling an impending danger. Because he felt such danger, he was threatening Lin Feng and hoping that Lin Feng would open a path of escape.

But Lin Feng was as unmoved as before, he remained absolutely motionless as if nothing would make him leave.

Deadly energy was violently fluctuating in the air.

At that moment, behind Yu Tian Xing, the others were glancing at each other. Just as the rumors said, Lin Feng was insane.

Yue Tian Chen was also staring at Lin Feng and frowning, especially when he noticed that Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye had come together. His heart felt painful. Because of the marriage agreement between the Duan Clan and the Yue Clan, he had always hoped to become Duan Xin Ye's husband, but Duan Xin Ye wasn't interested in him at all, however, Lin Feng seemed to be very intimate with her.

Yue Tian Chen was angry, he also wanted Lin Feng to die but Lin Feng was constantly becoming stronger and stronger. Even cultivators at the Xuan Qi layer couldn't kill him.

What made him extremely scared was that he didn't ever know what Lin Feng was thinking. He didn't know when Lin Feng would attack him.

Lin Feng didn't reply to Yu Tian Xing and remained silent. He was just standing on the bridge without moving, and still releasing his deadly energy which was filling the atmosphere. Nobody knew what he was thinking.

Yu Tian Xing and the others also remained silent. In such an open space, the silence was terrifying.

Duan Wu Ya looked indifferent and expressionless. He was calmly watching the scene. It seemed like these things had nothing to do with him.

Besides, Lan Jiao looked at Duan Wu Ya and understood what he was thinking deep in his heart, even though he was expressionless.

At that moment, she had already understood that Lin Feng and Yu Tian Xing were enemies.

Besides, a short time before, Duan Wu Ya had been spending some time with Yu Tian Xing and the others, it seemed like they were also friends.

But Lin Feng had been invited by Duan Wu Ya, and from what was happening at that moment, he also knew that Lin Feng and Yu Tian Xing were enemies, but he had arranged for them meet on purpose. He clearly had something in mind.

Of course, Lan Jiao was convinced that Lin Feng knew this as well. She wasn't going to get involved in Lin Feng's business though, she couldn't anyway.

The oppressive energy floated in the silent atmosphere for a while and finally, Lin Feng's mouth moved and he said: "Are you a member of the Yu Clan?"

Yu Tian Xing was surprised. He hadn't thought that Lin Feng would do such a stupid thing but he still nodded and said: "Indeed, I am a member of the Yu Clan and their blood runs through my veins."

"Your clan, the Yu Clan, is very powerful and influential, right?" Replied Lin Feng again.

"Indeed." Nodded Yu Tian Xing.

Lin Feng's eyes were filled with killing intent as he continued: "The blood of the Yu Clan is flowing in your veins and the Yu Clan is extremely strong... and you, Yu Tian Xing, want to kill me. So shouldn't I kill you before you actually manage to kill me?"

“If you kill me, the Yu Clan will never let you off.” When Yu Tian Xing heard Lin Feng, he started shaking.

“When I wasn’t planning to kill you, did you let me off?” Asked Lin Feng in a cold tone. “Since you originally wanted to kill me, since you never let me off, why wouldn’t I kill you if I have the opportunity? Do you think that I can only wait for you to kill me without fighting back?”

The crowd was astonished. Indeed, regardless of whether Lin Feng killed him or not, Yu Tian Xing and the Yu Clan didn’t intend to do let him off. Why should Lin Feng let Yu Tian Xing off then?

No matter what, in such circumstances, there was only one possible decision.

To kill!

Chapter 340: The Opportunity!

Yu Tian Xing narrowed his eyes and looked like a venomous snake. “What you mean is that you want to kill me?”

“Indeed, you have no way out, I will kill you today or I am no better than a coward.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached.

“Well, why are you not attacking me then!” Asked Yu. Tian Xing. Lin Feng had been standing there for a while already but he had only been releasing deadly energy and had remained at the end of the bridge, motionless.

“Because I wanted to give you an opportunity.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. “I gave you a chance to talk but unfortunately, all you’ve been doing is threatening me and emphasizing the strength of your clan. Since it’s that way, what else needs to be said?” When Lin Feng finished talking, he started to slowly walk towards Yu Tian Xing.

Lin Feng had given a chance to Yu Tian Xing, a moment before, during that short time, he had been waiting for Yu Tian Xing to apologize and make amends.

The Yu Clan was extremely strong, Lin Feng couldn’t fight against them, therefore, he needed more time, he didn’t want to provoke the Yu Clan this early, it wouldn’t be beneficial to him.

Unfortunately, Yu Tian Xing hadn’t even thought about apologising. He had only been threatening Lin Feng and speaking

of how strong the Yu Clan was, but that just infuriated Lin Feng. Even if the Yu Clan was extremely strong, did it mean that Lin Feng would just sit and let Yu Tian Xing kill him?

Could Lin Feng ever wait for the Yu Clan to kill him without fighting back?

When Yu Tian Xing heard Lin Feng, he started shaking. Lin Feng had already given him a chance.

A moment before, regardless of whether Lin Feng wanted to kill Yu Tian Xing or not, the Yu Clan wouldn't let Lin Feng off anyway, therefore, since Yu Tian Xing wasn't apologizing nor making peace, Lin Feng had no other choice.

A moment before, Yu Tian Xing did have the idea of apologizing and begging for a pardon, but only a fleeting thought. He wasn't able to sacrifice his face which is why he resorted to threatening Lin Feng and saying how strong the Yu Clan was. Even though he was scared of Lin Feng, in his subconscious, he was still convinced that Lin Feng would never dare to kill him because he was a member the Yu Clan and as such he has to protect the dignity of the clan.

But at that moment, he could sense that Lin Feng's deadly energy become more violent, his confidence was starting to break, Lin Feng was someone who would dare to kill him.

He looked at Lin Feng who was slowly moving towards him. Each of Lin Feng's steps seemed like he was stepping on Yu Tian Xing's

heart, crushing his beliefs.

“Lin Feng.” Yu Tian Xing finally opened his mouth while looking at Lin Feng who was walking towards him and said: “Lin Feng, if you don’t kill me, I can guarantee that from today on, you will never have a problem with the Yu Clan ever again.”

Lin Feng stopped walking, looked at Yu Tian Xing and smiled coldly.

“You are too arrogant, today, I’m the one giving chances, not the other way around. I gave you an opportunity but you let it slip, therefore, it too late already.”

Lin Feng then continued walking towards Yu Tian Xing which made his heart twitch painfully. Lin Feng had given him a chance but he had chosen the wrong path, therefore, there was no more possible compromises.

“Lin Feng, you will never be able to resist the Yu Clan’s fury.” Said Yu Tian Xing, whose was twisting even more violently, as he gnashing his teeth.

Lin Feng just ignored him because it was unnecessary to waste any more words on him. Yu Tian Xing had become Lin Feng’s prey.

When Yu Tian Xing saw Lin Feng approaching, his heart started pounding violently. A deadly energy completely surrounded him.

Lin Feng really wanted to kill Yu Tian Xing.

The others were also dumbstruck. Lin Feng would dare infuriate the Yu Clan and kill Yu Tian Xing?

Yue Tian Chen slightly backed away. This time, he wouldn't stand by Yu Tian Xing's side. He was abandoning Yu Tian Xing, who would have to face Lin Feng's wrath by himself. Yue Tian Chen's eyes sparkled and he smiled coldly.

Yu Tian Xing and Yue Tian Chen weren't friends at all, if they were sticking together, it was because they had a common enemy, Lin Feng.

They both hated Lin Feng and both hoped for his death.

But at that moment, Lin Feng wanted to kill Yu Tian Xing, however, Yue Tian Chen didn't only not try and stop him, but he was also laughing to himself. If Lin Feng killed Yu Tian Xing, the Yu Clan would be enraged.

Lin Feng wouldn't be able to resist the Yu Clan, if Yu Tian Xing died, nobody would be able to save Lin Feng, not even the second prince.

The Yu Clan would never allow one of their members to be killed without doing anything, therefore, if Lin Feng killed Yu Tian Xing, he was courting death.

Yue Tian Chen was, of course, delighted about that.

When Yu Tian Xing realized that Yue Tian Chen was moving away from him, his heart was invaded by coldness. That bastard, he was abandoning him to be killed by Lin Feng.

At that moment, Yu Tian Xing was deeply saddened to end up alone, Lin Feng wanted to kill him and nobody was helping him. These days, who had the power to stop Lin Feng?

Besides, Yu Tian Xing was fully aware that this exact situation might happen, but he surprisingly thought that the power and influence of the Yu Clan would be enough to make Lin Feng cower.

“Lin Feng, if you still don’t trust my word, I can swear to you that if you let me off, my clan will never raise a hand to you again.” Said Yu Tian Xing, growing extremely nervous. He felt completely powerless at that moment. Lin Feng was only ten steps from him.

He finally realized that he might die today. The smell of death was extremely thick, Yu Tian Xing knew that he might die at anymore moment.

Lin Feng ignored him, as before, the only sound in the atmosphere was that of Lin Feng’s steps, which were resonating deep in Yu Tian Xing’s heart.

At the moment when he was about to die, would Lin Feng really believe a single word he said about compromise?

He had made too many mistakes and never attempted to make peace. Lin Feng wouldn't give any more chances.

Lin Feng finally stopped walking, he was only seven steps away from Yu Tian Xing. It seemed like everything had happened so fast and he had appeared there in a flash.

At the same time, a dazzling light which looked like sunlight appeared around Lin Feng's body and it was filled with monstrous killing intent and deadly Qi.

"Clap! Clap!....." Yu Tian Xing was slowly walking backwards. When he sensed Lin Feng's Qi, his heart felt like it was frozen.

Lin Feng's Qi had the power of the Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng had already broken free from the chains of the Ling Qi layer and had reached the Xuan Qi layer. At that moment, Lin Feng was terrifying.

"No wonder... No wonder all those people never came back." Yu Tian Xing's heart was brutally and violently pounding. His heart was filled with hatred. Yu Tian Xing had only been able to send cultivators of the first Xuan Qi layer to kill Lin Feng, as the fifth young master of the Yu Clan, he had no authority over cultivators above the first Xuan Qi layer, therefore, he had never been able to successfully kill Lin Feng, he had stupidly put himself in that situation.

A sword made of pure Qi appeared in Lin Feng's hand. Yu Tian

Xing hastily yelled: “You can’t kill me! The Yu Clan will never let you off!”

“You are arrogant and stupid.” Said Lin Feng while shaking his head. While slowly raising his sword made from pure Qi, he said: “Even if I don’t kill you, the Yu Clan will never let me off. Since the Yu Clan will always be my enemy and considering the events today, how could I possibly let you live?”

At that moment, everybody was looking at Lin Feng’s sword made from pure Qi. If that sword moved, Yu Tian Xing would die.

The crowd felt that they were suffocating under the powerful Qi which had invaded the entire atmosphere, they were all only focusing on the sword in Lin Feng’s hand which started to descend.

“Stop!!!!” Shouted an extremely aggressive voice. Deadly energy spread through the air.

That aggressive voice made the atmosphere vibrate and it contained a faint Qi which pierced through Lin Feng’s ear, leaving him slightly dumbstruck for a second.

His sword stopped in the air, right above Yu Tian Xing’s head, and didn’t descend any further.

“Yu Qiu!” Said Lin Feng coldly while turning his head.

That furious voice contained some a faint trace of Qi, it was

similar to the attack that interrupted his battle with Hei Mo at the Celestial Academy. That voice belonged to Yu Qiu, the third elder of the Yu Clan.

When Lin Feng and Hei Mo fought each other, Yu Qiu's voice injured and stunned Lin Feng.

As expected, when Yu Tian Xing saw Yu Qiu at Lin Feng's back, his eyes suddenly revealed delight. He said roared: "Third Uncle, save me!"

The one who had shouted was indeed Yu Qiu.

He was walking over the bridge and there was two people with him, on his left and right. They were all releasing monstrously strong Qi.

All those three cultivators were at the Xuan Qi layer and all belonged to the Yu Clan.

This time, Lin Feng had run out of luck.

Maybe it would actually be Lin Feng who died today!

Many people were thinking that Lin Feng had already infuriated the Yu Clan.

"Stop?" Said Lin Feng while the crowd was thinking. Lin Feng's

voice was cold, ice-cold.

Besides, at the same time, Lin Feng's hand continued to move and his sword slightly moved down which made Yu Tian Xing give a horrible shriek as he closed his eyes.

Yu Qiu and the two others were so shocked that they stopped in their tracks.

Chapter 341: Kill Yu Tian Xing?

“That guy...” Everybody was looking at Lin Feng whose sword made from pure Qi was only an inch away from Yu Tian Xing. Lin Feng was incredibly aggressive and unrestrained. At the moment when Yu Qiu and two other cultivators at the Xuan Qi layer arrived and walked towards him, Lin Feng still looked completely unaffected and on top of that, his sword was still moving in for the kill. How audacious!

“I, Yu Qiu, haven’t seen anyone dare to attack one of the grandchildren of the Yu Clan, especially in front of me.” said Yu Qiu sounding extremely evil while staring at Lin Feng’s back, like a venomous snake.

But Lin Feng, as before, seemed indifferent. Yu Qiu facing his back but Lin Feng didn’t turn around at all.

“Now, you have seen.” Said Lin Feng coldly and detached.

“Yes, I have. You are extremely courageous and gifted, you surprised all of us, but today, your life will end here.” Said Yu Qiu in an ice-cold tone. He released a piercing deadly energy which moved towards Lin Feng.

“Yu Tian Xing’s life is still in my hands. You dare say that will take my life, Yu Qiu, are you not afraid that I will kill him?” Replied Lin Feng. He just had to slightly move his sword made from pure Qi more and Yu Tian Xing would be killed in an instant. If Yu Qiu attacked, Lin Feng would still have time to kill Yu Tian

Xing, but even in such circumstances, Yu Qiu still dared to act arrogantly and threaten Lin Feng.

“I’m not afraid. If you kill him, your family and friends will all die with you. They will be uprooted until there isn’t even a single descendant left.” Threatened Yu Qiu again sounding extremely cold which made Lin Feng stupefied.

If he killed Yu Tian Xing, Yu Qiu would kill his friends and family, not even a single one would remain.

“What you mean is that if I don’t kill Yu Tian Xing, you will only kill me but if I kill Yu Tian Xing, even my friends and family will die?” Lin Feng’s heart was filled with endless coldness but his voice sounded as calm and serene. Yu Tian Xing was the only one who could see how calm and carefree Lin Feng’s eyes looked.

Yu Tian Xing’s heart was pounding. Lin Feng was way too dangerous. He could end his life at any moment.

“Indeed.” Nodded Yu Qiu.

“Therefore, today, no matter what happens, I will die!” Said Lin Feng.

“You are not as stupid as you seem.” Joked Yu Qiu. On that day, no matter what, he wouldn’t let Lin Feng live, he would never be allowed to leave there alive.

“In other words, today, no matter what, whether I kill Yu Tian Xing or not, I am doomed either way, right?” Yu Qiu was smiling because of the joke he had just made but when he heard Lin Feng’s response, his facial expression drastically changed.

Yu Tian Xing looked terrified.

“Could it be that you want your friends and family to die with you?” Threatened Yu Qiu sounding ice-cold.

“Family?” Lin Feng smiled, he had already left his clan and didn’t care about them at all. Then, he didn’t know where his father, Lin Hai, was. There was only one person for whom Lin Feng was scared, Meng Qing.

Concerning his friends, Lin Feng suddenly talked: “Second Prince, all my friends are students of the Celestial Academy!”

“If anyone dares to attack your friends at the Celestial Academy, I will have no other choice but to personally kill them.” Replied Duan Wu Ya to Lin Feng’s statement, as if he had immediately guessed what Lin Feng meant.

When Yu Qiu and the others heard Duan Wu Ya, they were dumbstruck. Duan Wu Ya was surprisingly helping Lin Feng and would dare to threaten the Yu Clan.

“Thank you, Your Highness.” Smiled Lin Feng. Just as Lan Jiao had guessed, Lin Feng had understood why Duan Wu Ya had

created such a situation. Duan Wu Ya wanted to kill Yu Tian Xing. Even though Lin Feng didn't know why Duan Wu Ya was like this, he could understand Duan Wu Ya's plot.

Since Duan Wu Ya had organized everything, Lin Feng had the guarantee that Duan Wu Ya would definitely protect his friends. Even if he killed Yu Tian Xing, it wouldn't be that easy to kill Lin Feng.

“Everybody heard it, if I kill Yu Tian Xing, I will die, if I don't kill Yu Tian Xing, I will die as well. Since I will die either way, I, of course, have to kill Yu Tian Xing. Besides, I will not be the only murderer, Yu Qiu should be considered as my accomplice.” said Lin Feng sounding particularly evil. His words made the people's hearts vibrate. Lin Feng wanted to kill Yu Tian Xing.

“Uncle!” Shouted Yu Tian Xing. Yu Qiu had put him in a dangerous situation. He knew now that threatening Lin Feng never worked.

“Would you dare!” Deadly energies emerged from Yu Qiu's body and pierced towards Lin Feng.

“Why not?” Lin Feng smiled in an extremely evil way.

“Yu Tian Xing, whether I kill you or not, your third uncle will kill me, therefore, it's clear that your third uncle wants you to die, he doesn't care whether I, Lin Feng, kill you or not, right?” When he finished talking, his sword made of pure Qi slowly started move.

“Don’t.....” When Yu Tian Xing saw that, he begged Lin Feng in a weak voice, he didn’t even have the strength to shout. However, while that weak voice spread through the atmosphere, the light of Lin Feng’s sword slowly vanished, just like Yu Tian Xing’s life.

Lin Feng had killed him.

Lin Feng had finally killed Yu Tian Xing, without showing any mercy.

The crowd was astonished. They were calmly looking at the corpse as it slowly fell. Yu Tian Xing had died.

A young master of the Yu Clan had been killed by Lin Feng in front of everybody.

Yu Tian Xing was supposed to have a brilliant future before him with infinite possibilities, but before he could emerge into greatness, he create enmity with Lin Feng, he had been extremely unlucky.

The most unfortunate was that he wanted to kill Lin Feng, but had failed a few times. In the end, he had lost his life because of it.

Yu Qiu also watched the scene unfold. His heart was violently pounding. Lin Feng had killed Yu Tian Xing.

He had thought that Lin Feng wouldn't dare, but in fact, Lin Feng had just proved that he was much more audacious than expected, or maybe more precisely, Yu Qiu wasn't as imposing and domineering as he thought himself to be. How foolish had he been to say that Lin Feng would die no matter what. He had been foolish to say such arrogant and presumptuous words.

No matter what, Lin Feng was going to die, why didn't he try and prevent him from killing Yu Tian Xing?

Yu Qiu had let Yu Tian Xing die. Lin Feng had brought Yu Tian Xing to a cliff edge and Yu Qiu gave the final push.

Yu Qiu's heart was pounding violently. Inevitably, what happened on this day would quickly be known to everyone, to the extent that people would also know that Yu Qiu's foolish words had led to Yu Tian Xing's death.

Yu Tian Xing was the patriarch's son, his brother's son.

An incredible deadly energy spread through the atmosphere and moved towards Lin Feng. Yu Qiu had to tear Lin Feng's body into thousand pieces, if he didn't, how would he explain all this to his big brother?

At the same time, Lin Feng turned around and Yu Qiu finally saw Lin Feng's face.

At that moment, Lin Feng's eyes were filled with an endless

coldness. Yu Qiu had threatened to kill him, his family and friends.

They were both staring at each other, with killing intent filling their eyes.

They both wanted to rip each other apart.

“Everybody else, move away!” Said Yu Qiu sounding colder than ever before. Even if all these cultivators were noble and wealthy, at that moment, Yu Qiu only wanted to kill Lin Feng.

None of these young people refused. Their silhouettes started flickering and they all left the pavilion. They had nothing to do with that so they didn’t want to get injured from their battle.

Yue Tian Chen was still smiling. In a flash, he landed far away on the field. Lin Feng was going to die.

Yu Tian Xing had died so Lin Feng would definitely die here.

In a flash, only one person was left in the pavilion, Lin Feng.

“Cut off his hands and feet, don’t kill him too quickly.” Said Yu Qiu while glaring at Lin Feng. His voice was ice-cold. When he finished talking, the two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer by his side immediately started moving. They both ran across the bridge towards Lin Feng.

When Lin Feng saw these two people coming towards him, an incredible quantity of pure Qi started to burn and flash around his body. That pure Qi looked like both light Qi and fire Qi at the same time. It was dazzling and incredible.

Because Lin Feng had been practicing the Cosmos Burning Sun skill, after breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer, Lin Feng's pure Qi had turned into sun-fire pure Qi.

It contained fire Qi which came directly from the blazing sun. The most terrifying part didn't only lie in the destructive power of the Qi, but also in the fact that it could set people ablaze in an instant.

When the two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer sensed Lin Feng's terrifying pure Qi, the eyes of these two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer flashed, Lin Feng's skill was extraordinary, he was only at the first Xuan Qi layer but his pure Qi was monstrous to the extent that it scared them.

"Die!" Shouted the two people as they unleashed a perfectly synchronised attack, extremely loud sounds emerged above the bridge. Cracking sounds uninterruptedly spread through the air. Besides, the pavilion in which Lin Feng was slowly being destroyed as if it could collapse on him at any moment.

At the same time, the two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer had thrown themselves at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng smiled, they wanted to force him into a critical

situation?

Lin Feng started walking and heavily stamped onto the ground. In a flash, the bridge was smashed into pieces which made the opponents lose their footing for a second, however, immediately after they continued towards Lin Feng. Nonetheless, Lin Feng used the counterforce created from when he stamped onto the ground and jumped into the air, after which heavy rumbling noises spread through the atmosphere while the pavilion started to break apart. Lin Feng had the seal of the sun on his body. Then, an incredibly scorching hot sword energy started to fill the atmosphere!

Chapter 342: Dazzling Sword!

The people raised their heads and looked at Lin Feng in the air. The light around his body was so dazzling that they were unable to see him clearly.

“How terrifying!” Thought the people in the crowd while their hearts were pounding. Lin Feng’s sword was as bright as the sun, it was dazzling and felt like it could ignite the atmosphere.

Besides, the two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer who were moving towards Lin Feng raised their heads and saw that Lin Feng was already high above them. Their hearts started to shake, that light made them unable to keep their eyes open, it was too bright!

“Scorching Sword!” Said Lin Feng. Immediately after, Lin Feng’s sword contained the scorching brightness of the sun, which amazed the crowd.

It was scorching hot, dazzling and violent..... Nobody could look at that sword.

In the past, Lin Feng had been observing the sun and created three sword skills, the Sword of the Rising Sun, which contained the power of the sunrise. Then, there was his Scorching Sword which had the brilliance of the scorching midday sun and finally, there was his Sword of the Setting Sun which had the pallid brilliance of a sunset.

Besides, these days, Lin Feng had learnt the Cosmos Burning Sun

skill which helped him manifest the power of the sun to a much higher degree. At that moment, his sword was so dazzling because of his Cosmos Burning Sun skill and his Scorching Sword skill, he had also released his sword energy, the result was an incredibly dazzling sword.

“Scorching Sword...” People’s hearts were pounding. Immediately after, they closed their eyes, Lin Feng’s sword was too dazzling, they were unable to look directly at the sword. In their minds, Lin Feng’s words were resonating.

Lin Feng was monstrously terrifying, they didn’t dare look directly at him or his sword.

The two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, who were rushing towards Lin Feng, started shaking violently. They slightly narrowed their eyes but they still couldn’t look directly at Lin Feng’s sword.

However, they could distinctly sense that Lin Feng’s Scorching Sword was descending towards them.

An incredible sense of danger spread through their hearts. They both stopped moving towards Lin Feng and an incredible pure Qi was unleashed to block the sword.

However, that pure Qi was immediately destroyed when it collided with Lin Feng’s Scorching Sword, only emitting small cracking noises as it destroyed the pure Qi.

In the air, Lin Feng's Scorching Sword's glow had enveloped the two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and Lin Feng. The crowd was already unable to see the three silhouettes clearly anymore. There was only a radiant glow which looked incredibly beautiful.

At that moment, a deathly silence filled the atmosphere. The brilliance of the sun which was surrounding Lin Feng's sword vanished and what was hidden by the glow became visible again to the crowd, however, there was only one person left, Lin Feng!

The two other cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were nowhere to be seen. Apart from Lin Feng, there was nobody else in sight. Some flames were still burning in the air and the dazzling brilliance of the sun was emanating from the flames.

“They died!”

The crowd was astonished. After Lin Feng's Scorching Sword skill had vanished, all traces of the two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer had vanished with it. They had been surrounded by that blinding sword light and simply vanished without trace.

The two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer had been killed by Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng's strength is really monstrous.”

The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng was terrifying. Those people were members of the Yu Clan and had both broken through to the

Xuan Qi layer, even though they had underestimated Lin Feng, it was still incredible that they hadn't even been able to withstand his sword.

Besides, if it had been somebody else at the same level as them, they wouldn't have been able to resist the power of the Scorching Sword either. They would have inevitably died as well.

These few noble and wealthy young men were realizing that the carefree young man, who had come to the Imperial City not long ago, had now become extremely strong. He had become so monstrously strong that if anybody provoked him, he didn't hesitate to kill them.

Yu Tian Xing, a direct descendant of the Yu Clan, had died.

Then, two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer from the Yu Clan had just been killed in an instant.

The crowd weren't the only people who were astonished, Yu Qiu was feeling the same and he was blankly staring at Lin Feng.

A moment before, these two cultivators were at the second Xuan Qi layer. They were directly under his control, even Yu Tian Xing had no authority over them. Yu Qiu thought that by relying on these two people, he would easily be able to get rid of Lin Feng, he had thought that it would be a simple task but in the end, the reality was not as simple as that, he had sent two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer to kill Lin Feng and they died inside that Scorching Sword light. Yu Qiu hadn't even had a single opportunity to

intervene and save them.

“That boy has to die!”

Yu Qiu narrowed his eyes, his deadly energy was getting stronger and stronger. Lin Feng already posed a threat to him and his clan.

Lin Feng's natural abilities were monstrous and beyond human. In the past, at the Celestial Academy, Yu Qiu had assisted Hei Mo when he fought with Lin Feng but at that time, it hadn't been easy for Lin Feng to defeat Hei Mo. Back then, Lin Feng had only just broken through to the sixth Ling Qi layer which, in Yu Qiu's eyes, was nothing, he used to consider Lin Feng as a tiny little insect, but at that moment, not much time had passed and Lin Feng was already able to kill the two strong cultivators who were always by his side.

If he didn't kill Lin Feng, in a few years, he would become even more terrifying.

Lin Feng stepped on his sword made from pure Qi. He was standing in the air and looking down at Yu Qiu, he then said, sounding cold and detached: “Don't you want to cut off my hands and feet? Why are you not coming to attack me?”

When Lin Feng finished talking, the crowd's hearts were violently twitching. Lin Feng was, as rumoured, extremely fearless. He was standing in the air, fearlessly facing Yu Qiu, battle energy was burning around his body and he was inviting Yu Qiu to come and fight.

The crowd was just realizing that, from the beginning to the end, Lin Feng had never been afraid of Yu Qiu. Only, the Yu Clan were so arrogant to believe that Lin Feng would be scared of them and wouldn't dare act against them, which is why they kept threatening Lin Feng. Yu Qiu, when he understood that Yu Tian Xing's life was in Lin Feng's hands, had kept threatening Lin Feng which had led to Yu Tian Xing's death.

Yu Qiu's facial muscles were completely rigid, he was dumbstruck. Lin Feng was surprisingly challenging him.

Even though, amongst his group of friends, he was one of the weakest, he had still broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer. That meant that when walking through the Imperial City, the people who could defeat him were very rare and those who could were very powerful and influential people.

But at that moment, Lin Feng was surprisingly challenging him while looking down at him from the sky.

Yu Qiu felt humiliated. It was an extreme humiliation.

"You want to die." Said Yu Qiu sounding ice-cold. He raised his head and looked at Lin Feng and said: "Today, you killed one of the descendants from my clan, I already told you, your friends and family will all die, even if the second prince can protect them for a while, he will not be there to protect them forever. As long as the Yu Clan exists, it will become the worst nightmare for anyone who is close to you."

Lin Feng was looking down at Yu Qiu and replied: “After the words you have just spoken, when I, Lin Feng, leave here today, to the Yu Clan, I will become the greatest danger and I will not stop until it is thoroughly removed from this world.”

“Do you think that you will have the opportunity to escape alive?”

An incredible deadly Qi emerged from Yu Qiu’s body and transformed into a white light which flickered through the air. At that moment, Yu Qiu was standing on something which looked like a mountain.

When Lin Feng sensed the deadly Qi, he also released some deadly Qi as well as some battle energy which started to burn around his body.

Lin Feng was only focusing on the battle, he had to give it his full attention. He was also slightly scared, which was good as long as it didn’t create a hindrance, otherwise, it would be pointless for fear to exist. Lin Feng wasn’t like Yu Tian Xing!

Lin Feng didn’t want to rely on other people to protect him. He only wanted to rely on himself, but in order to save other people, he had to have the power to save himself first.

The crowd found Lin Feng extremely inspiring, he had an incredible determination, he would rather die than surrender, even if he wasn’t as strong as his adversary, he would never give

up.

Yu Tian Xing's arrogance and pride was superficial, Lin Feng had bravery engraved on his bones.

"It's useless!"

Yu Qiu smiled in an ice-cold way and stamped onto the ground. At that moment, he rose into the air at incredible speed. His pure Qi transformed into a magnificent stream towards Lin Feng.

"Pierce!" Shouted Lin Feng furiously. His sword pierced through the atmosphere. Yu Qiu was way too quick, and Lin Feng immediately released the energy condensed in his sword.

"BOOM!"

The entire atmosphere vibrated and a powerful strength crashed against Lin Feng's body. It seemed like the entire power of his sword was under an incredible pressure.

Lin Feng's body was blown backwards at an incredible speed. No matter if it was strength or speed, Lin Feng couldn't compete with a cultivator at the fourth Xuan Qi layer. Three Xuan Qi layers of difference was huge.

Whistling sounds filled the air and a huge purple lake appeared in the sky above Lin Feng, it then wrapped itself around Lin Feng's body and caught him as he was flying through the air. In an

instant, a myriad of purple snakes emerged from his hand, at that moment, it seemed like an endless quantity of purple snakes were emerging from Lin Feng' hand and spreading through the atmosphere.

Chapter 343: The Sound Waves!

“It’s Lin Feng’s spirit, amazing.”

When the crowd saw the thousand purple snakes in the air, their hearts started pounding. If a cultivator of the same level as Lin Feng was caught by his spirit, they were sure to die.

Yu Qiu was also astonished but he instantly regained his calm and said coldly: “Your spirit? When facing a cultivator of a much higher level, they are of no use.”

When he finished talking, Yu Qiu’s silhouette flickered and he rushed straight towards Lin Feng.

“Hiiissss!”

What seemed like an endless amount of purple snakes launched themselves straight towards Yu Qiu. Yu Qiu hadn’t even arrived in front of Lin Feng yet but the purple snakes were already wrapped tightly around him.

“Break!” Shouted Yu Qiu furiously. The pure Qi around his body transformed into a blade and started cutting the snakes as they reached him. At the same time, he joined both of his hands and a monstrously brutal pure Qi emerged. Suddenly, an extremely brutal Qi started to tear apart the snakes which were obstructing Yu Qiu’s way.

Yu Qiu's body continued to move forward through the snakes, meanwhile the purple snakes which were in a chaotic position were roaring loudly while being torn into pieces.

“When you have a much stronger opponent in front of you, even if your spirit is strong, it will be of no use.” Thought the crowd. The spirit helped a cultivator during a battle, a monstrously strong spirit could make a cultivator quicker and stronger but if the two opponents' cultivation levels were too different, the spirit wouldn't be of any use against the stronger opponent. If the level difference was huge, the spirit was absolutely useless.

At that moment, Lin Feng and Yu Qiu's cultivation levels were quite different. It was extremely hard for cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer to break through each layer. Besides, the difference in strength between the different Xuan Qi layers was immense. Lin Feng could already kill cultivators of the second Xuan Qi layer but cultivators of the third Xuan Qi layer were on a different level than the former. Concerning cultivators of the fourth Xuan Qi layer, the difference was already huge in comparison with the second Xuan Qi layer, they could not even be compared.

Lin Feng had just broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer and Yu Qiu was a cultivator of the fourth Xuan Qi layer.

Even though the Yu Clan was the weakest of the three great clans, they were not easy to defeat. At least, apart from the two other great clans, no other clan could hold a candle to them.

When Lin Feng saw that his spirit was getting torn apart, he suddenly closed his eyes and penetrated into a world of darkness, it

seemed like everything around him was being processed in his mind, as if he was looking down on the world from above.

After having penetrated into the earth fusion dimension, Lin Feng hadn't needed to enter his world of darkness. He could activate his earth fusion in the blink of an eye and the clarity of the world surrounding him as well as his perceptions were similar to when he was in his world of darkness.

But when he was in his world of darkness, there were still some small differences. There was absolutely no sound in his world of darkness.

Behind Yu Qiu, the purple snakes gathered into a group, but at that moment, there weren't many of them remaining, instead, one gigantic dragon appeared in their place without a single sound or sign of its presence.

On its colossal and ferocious face, the eyes slowly opened. That gigantic dragon was clearly powerful, at that moment, it didn't even look like a spirit anymore, it looked like a real ferocious beast, it was terrifying.

When the crowd saw that gigantic and monstrous dragon open its eyes, their hearts started to race. Those eyes were terrifying! It seemed like everything was drowning into those eyes, as if to those eyes, the lives of everybody meant nothing.

The scariest thing was that it gave no presence and was completely silent. However, Yu Qiu, didn't sense the dragon or any

other signs of danger and continued rushing towards Lin Feng.

But at that moment, Yu Qiu suddenly started shaking. Even though he hadn't realized that the dragon appeared, considering his cultivation level, his senses were extremely acute. It was as if Yu Qiu had sensed a pair of gigantic eyes were staring at his back. He abruptly turned around and the gigantic dragon had already arrived behind him.

“Roooooaarr.....” The gigantic purple dragon roared which caused the atmosphere to shake. The crowd's hearts were pounding inside their chests.

The gigantic dragon's mouth was open and its sharp teeth could be seen. It moved its gigantic mouth straight towards Yu Qiu, it was going to swallow him whole. The crowd could already see Yu Qiu being eaten, as if Yu Qiu's strength meant nothing to the dragon, as if he was already dead.

“BOOM!”

Yu Qiu released a terrifying quantity of energy which burst out from his body. Then, an endless amount of white lights appeared behind him and spread through the air, they were sharp, brutal and were moving straight towards the gigantic dragon. At the same time, he released an incredible quantity of pure Qi which formed a hurricane that moved towards the white lights.

At that moment, the crowd had the feeling that their ears were painful and an endless quantity of sharp noises were piercing their

minds. Immediately after, they could no longer hear, they could only see the white lights moving towards the purple dragon.

These white lights all formed the characters: “sound waves”. The sounds seemed endless as they continued to bombard the atmosphere. Sharp sound waves were making the atmosphere vibrate, after hearing them, the atmosphere would be drowned into a deathly silence. These sound waves were filled with deadly energy and were used for destruction.

“Sound Wave Spirit.” The crowd was covering their ears in an attempt to block the sounds. They could sense that their eardrums were unceasingly shaking. Blood even started to flow from the seven facial apertures of the weaker cultivators, their ears, eyes, nostrils and mouth were bloody. These sound waves were driving the crowd go insane, how terrifying!

The gigantic purple dragon was moving closer and closer to Yu Qiu. At the moment when the white sound waves appeared in front of it, its gigantic mouth swallowed them whole.

The purple dragon was becoming slower and slower. In the end, it stopped and its purple splendour had weakened until the gigantic purple dragon completely vanished without a trace. However, it silently disappeared, covered by the sound waves, there was no space for any other sound.

An extremely sharp sword pressure suddenly appeared behind Yu Qiu, he abruptly turned around and saw a dazzling sword falling down from the sky, it contained a scorching hot Qi.

Yu Qiu opened his mouth and sound waves poured out from his mouth. They merged with the other sound waves and the sword slowly became less and less brilliant. Besides, Lin Feng's body projected backwards as blood flowed from his mouth.

Finally, Yu Qiu closed his mouth and the sound waves stopped pouring out, but the atmosphere was still filled with ear-piercing sound waves. For a prolonged period of time, the crowd could still feel the pain inside their ears. It was as if they were slowly becoming deaf, they couldn't hear a single sound. The situation lasted for a while until the sound waves gradually vanished.

“The Sound Wave Spirit of the Yu Clan is very scary.” People's hearts were pounding. For many of them, it was the first time that they had seen a Xuan Qi layer cultivator from the Yu Clan use a sound wave spirit. Once was enough to astonish them.

That intangible spirit was terrifying, it seemed as if nothing could stop it.

“But Lin Feng made Yu Qiu release his spirit, he's also monstrously strong.” Thought the crowd while looking at the fearless young man, who had blood running from the corner of his mouth. They were astonished. A moment before, his gigantic purple dragon was terrifying. If it had been them, they would have immediately been swallowed. Besides, Lin Feng had made Yu Qiu use his full strength, even though Lin Feng had lost, it was still a glorious achievement.

But would that monstrously strong genius die here?

Yu Qiu was still staring at Lin Feng and his desire to kill was getting more intense. He was a cultivator of the fourth Xuan Qi layer and had to use all of his strength against Lin Feng, that was a humiliation.

Yu Qiu had the impression that he had just lost his prestigious reputation, he had just lost a great deal of face. The Yu Clan hated Lin Feng and Yu Qiu had just been humiliated by Lin Feng, the only way to fix the situation was to kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was also staring at Yu Qiu. No wonder he could attack using the power of his shouts, he had a sound wave spirit. The spirit of the Yu Clan was the sound wave spirit, even though it wasn't as strong as the sealed doors spirit of the Duan Clan, it was also extremely strong. It was a terrifyingly powerful spirit.

“Lin Feng, remember that you will not be dying alone. I will also kill all the people you love.” Said Yu Qiu sounding like a demon. Immediately after, he opened his mouth and once again released his sound waves.

“Die!”

After speaking, it seemed like Yu Qiu's sound waves had become as sharp as blades. Besides, it was almost impossible to dodge a sound attack, it immediately crashed into Lin Feng's eardrums making him groan in pain. With Lin Feng's cultivation level, it was impossible for him to block such a powerful sound wave attack.

Chapter 344: The Incredible Celestial Book!

“Brother!” Shouted Duan Xin Ye to Duan Wu Ya when she saw that Lin Feng was in danger. She looked extremely worried.

“Nothing will happen.” Said Duan Wu Ya while staring at the silhouettes fighting in the sky. His eyes were filled with intangible confidence. Nothing could happen to Lin Feng.

Zhuge Wu Qing was back in Xue Yue, if Lin Feng got killed in the Lovesick Forest, it would mean that Duan Wu Ya was blind.

Duan Xin Ye saw that Duan Wu Ya was confident but she was still extremely worried. At that moment, Yu Qiu had only one desire, to kill Lin Feng. Besides, if he had the opportunity, he would immediately kill him. Lin Feng couldn't defend against Yu Qiu's attacks so Duan Xin Ye was wondering why Duan Wu Ya was so confident. However, worrying was also of no use, with her low cultivation level, she couldn't block Yu Qiu, therefore, she had no choice but to wait and see.

Lan Jiao was also fixedly staring at Duan Wu Ya, Duan Wu Ya had invited Lin Feng here, if anything happened to Lin Feng, Duan Wu Ya would be responsible for Lin Feng's death.

But nobody shared Duan Wu Ya's confidence, when they saw how badly Yu Qiu was beating Lin Feng, the only thought they had was that that time, it was really the time of Lin Feng's death.

Yu Qiu was enraged and would not stop before he killed Lin Feng.

Lin Feng already couldn't fight back anymore, after a short moment, Lin Feng would be defeated.

What a pity, Lin Feng was such a monstrous genius but because he had persistently provoked the Yu Clan and Yu Qiu, he was going to die.

The third elder of the Yu Clan fighting against a teenager, in itself, was already unfair but in that world, did fair matter? The weak were the prey of the strong. Strength was the only thing that could change one's destiny. Killing someone was sometimes only a matter of seconds. Lin Feng was strong, therefore, he had the power to kill Yu Tian Xing. At that moment, Yu Qiu was stronger than Lin Feng therefore, he had come to avenge Yu Tian Xing. It seemed like killing Lin Feng was perfectly justified, being stronger than Lin Feng was enough of a reason.

“Boom!”

Even more sound waves bombarded the atmosphere, they were filled with deadly energy. Yu Qiu had already arrived next to Lin Feng and blasted him flying with a sound wave attack.

Lin Feng was shaking from head to toe, he was sent hurtling through the sky again and again. Blood was unceasingly flowing from his mouth.

Lin Feng's eyes were firmly closed, in his world of darkness, he could sense everything very distinctly but his strength wasn't sufficient to react in time to block Yu Qiu.

“You are quite resistant.” Joked Yu Qiu. His silhouette flickered and he released a monstrously brutal pure Qi. A white light enveloped Lin Feng’s body and a terrifying punch bombarded the atmosphere rushing towards Lin Feng.

In front of Lin Feng, a sword started to flicker and appear but it instantly vanished when it came into contact with the attack.

Yu Qiu’s fist was bombarding Lin Feng’s body. Lin Feng’s body was instantly blown away again. Blood was gushing from his mouth.

But Lin Feng continued to keep his back straight and his head held high. No matter if he won or lost, no matter if he died or kept living, he would always stand tall.

“Boom!”

A monstrous deadly energy appeared in front of Lin Feng, his sword started to manifest in front of him, but his sword wasn’t dazzling anymore, instead, it was a deadly black sword.

That sword was filled with shocking quantities of deadly and battle energy. That sword even seemed like it had a life of its own.

In Lin Feng’s world of darkness, his celestial book was floating in the air, the sword was in suspension above the celestial book.

“Huh?” The crowd was a bit surprised. Even though Lin Feng was repeatedly being bombarded by Yu Qiu’s attacks, he surprisingly still had the strength to condense such a strong sword. It was much stronger than everything he had used until that moment.

Lin Feng looked extremely determined.

Yu Qiu’s eyes revealed his surprise. Lin Feng was his sworn enemy, however, Yu Qiu couldn’t help but really admire such a fearless and determined young man. If he didn’t die, Xue Yue would have another monstrous genius, unfortunately, he was not going to live another day.

“Die!” The sound waves hurtled forward, the white light from the sound waves transformed into horizontal beams which moved straight towards Lin Feng. At the same time, Yu Qiu joined his hands and transformed his pure Qi into a sharp blade. He then threw himself through the air, Yu Qiu’s body, transformed into a bright blade which rushed towards Lin Feng.

“BOOM!”

The sound waves and the black sword collided. Suddenly, a gigantic and terrifying light appeared from the collision, but Yu Qiu was also about to arrive. The blade crashed into the black sword. The sword started to crack and Yu Qiu’s body was slowly moving closer.

“Die!” Shouted Yu Qiu furiously again. Lin Feng, who was

receiving those powerful blows, was shaking violently. He couldn't feel the weight of his sword anymore as if it had shattered. At the moment when Yu Qiu's blade made from pure Qi was about to reach him, a purple snake crashed against Lin Feng, which sent him away from the attack. Thanks to the force provided by the purple spirit, Lin Feng was able to retreat backwards and dodge the powerful blade made from pure Qi.

“Cough cough!”

Lin Feng moved back a hundred meters and could no longer hold himself back from coughing vast amounts of blood. The pure Qi under his feet seemed to be growing weaker as if it could crash at any moment, but Lin Feng still continued to stand tall.

“What incredible determination.”

The crowd was looking at Lin Feng in the sky, even though he was injured, he remained proud and unflinching. After Yu Qiu's monstrous attacks, Lin Feng continued to stand straight and look his opponent in the eye. His toughness and tenacity were a source of inspiration for the others.

Yu Qiu was intensely staring at Lin Feng and said, sounding cold and detached: “We will see you how you intend to stop this one.”

When he finished talking, Yu Qiu started releasing his pure Qi again which moved straight towards Lin Feng like an arrow. The fact that he had to use so much energy against Lin Feng was starting to annoy him.

“Brother, we can’t just stand here!” Shouted Duan Xin Ye when she sensed Yu Qiu’s Qi while looking at Lin Feng’s injuries getting worse and worse with time. She was so afraid that if Yu Qiu attacked again, Lin Feng would be killed under his blade.

She knew that Duan Wu Ya had the strength to prevent Yu Qiu from killing Lin Feng.

Duan Wu Ya’s strength was even more terrifying than what the normal people could imagine.

“Trust me, if there’s a problem, I’ll attack.”

Duan Wu Ya was staring at the two silhouettes in the sky.

What a strong resistance, even with all of this, there were no signs of interrupting the fight.

Was Lin Feng going to become tougher after being so badly beaten and wounded?

But he also had a surprise for Lin Feng, if Lin Feng had enough free time, he would ask Lin Feng to take a larger role in his faction.

Lin Feng was silent, his eyes were closed and he was inside his world of darkness. His celestial book was insanely shaking, its pages looked like flowing waves.

Lin Feng had the sensation that the celestial book was trying to open a new page.

Lin Feng was focusing entirely on his book, nothing else could distract him from the book.

The light was becoming brighter and brighter. The book was also shaking more and more intensely as if a new page was about to open.

Besides, outside, Yu Qiu didn't seem willing to give Lin Feng any more chances. He was staring at Lin Feng as his powerful energy filled the atmosphere.

"This time, die!" Shouted Yu Qiu sounding ice-cold. He raised his hand and released a brutal Qi. He then threw himself towards Lin Feng again.

This time, Lin Feng was going to be killed on the spot. Yu Qiu wouldn't give Lin Feng any other opportunities.

When the crowd saw Yu Qiu's monstrous attack and Lin Feng who wasn't reacting at all, they just had one thought, Lin Feng was going to die. He had no time to stop Yu Qiu's attack.

"Lin Feng, die!" Shouted Yu Qiu furiously when he saw that Lin Feng wasn't reacting at all, but at that moment, a sharp whistling sound spread through the atmosphere, it wasn't very loud but it

was extremely sharp, which surprised Yu Qiu who had the feeling that he had just been pricked by a needle.

“Huh?” Yu Qiu turned around and immediately saw a light which looked like a colourful ribbon and moved straight towards him. That soft and flexible thing seemed like a sharp weapon, like a deadly hidden weapon, besides it was extremely quick.

“What’s going on?” Yu Qiu’s was dumbstruck. He couldn’t take care of Lin Feng at that moment so he changed the trajectory of his hand and aimed at the light that was moving towards him.

“BOOM!”

Yu Qiu’s body was propelled backwards. The light was spinning in circles like a hurricane.

“Whoosh!”

Another sound which astonished the crowd. They looked behind Yu Qiu and saw that several more lights were emerging from the bamboo forest and moving towards him at the speed of lightning.

Yu Qiu also sensed it and was astonished. He then immediately moved back in the other direction. On both of his sides, there was a ribbon, All he could do was move back.

But Yu Qiu hadn’t even moved much when two more lights appeared from nowhere and immediately moved towards Yu Qiu

as well. Yu Qiu was surrounded by these lights which looked like ribbons. Immediately after, he was completely encircled and all these lights were moving towards him.

It seemed like every possible movement were certain death.

“What’s going on? Who’s controlling these ribbons? They are terrifying.” People’s hearts were pounding violently. People who dared caused trouble in the Lovesick Forest were extremely rare at this moment, there were four colourful ribbons being controlled, which had attacked silently, did it mean that four strong cultivators had appeared in the Lovesick Forest?

Chapter 345: Banned!

“Who?!” Shouted Yu Qiu furiously.

The colourful ribbons surrounded from all four directions and pointed towards him like arrows. They were even sharper than arrows and were forcing him into a retreat. If he wanted to dodge, he could only fly up into the sky.

Nobody replied to Yu Qiu, there were only these four ribbons which gave off a dazzling light which were attacking him.

Yu Qiu moved higher into the sky in order to avoid the deadly ribbons.

“Kaatcha!”

Cracking sounds emerged, these four ribbons surprisingly crashed into each other without hesitation, but the crowd was astonished, these ribbons cracked and transformed into even more ribbons, they weren't chaotic at all, they then immediately moved through the air towards Yu Qiu. The entire atmosphere was suddenly filled with ribbons, it was a particularly beautiful sight to behold.

“BOOM!”

Yu Qiu was burning with wrath. Someone had surprisingly dared to interrupt him and attack him while he was trying to kill Lin

Feng!

At that moment, Yu Qiu couldn't see who was attacking him and he couldn't use his sound waves aimlessly without a target.

“Get the hell out here!” Shouted Yu Qiu extremely aggressively. His pure Qi turned into a sharp weapon which moved straight towards these lights surrounding him. Sound waves were unceasingly spreading through the atmosphere but the colourful ribbons were becoming more and more beautiful. Ten ribbons transformed into a hundred and filled the entire sky with light. They were all incredibly colourful like flowers in blossom whose petals were enveloping Yu Qiu's body.

“What a monstrous control ability!” Thought people in the crowd whose hearts were twitching. They couldn't see who was attacking Yu Qiu but that enemy was extremely powerful, Yu Qiu couldn't even fight back against so many colourful ribbons.

Under Yu Qiu's feet, there was an elegant pure Qi which propelled him into the air at an incredible speed, almost in the blink of an eye.

However, even though Yu Qiu was extremely quick, it seemed like these colourful lights were even quicker than him. In a flash, he was quickly surrounded by ribbons.

The crowd on the ground was astonished. They couldn't see Yu Qiu any longer. The ribbons caught up with him and entirely wrapped around his body. The crowd couldn't see what was

happening inside the colourful ribbons.

Yu Qiu's face turned deathly pale when he saw all the colours surround his body. He knew that he had no chance to run away. His transformed pure Qi into a sharp weapon which immediately moved towards the ribbons, he hoped to cut through them and open the way.

“Crrrrr.....” Yu Qiu's pure Qi did cut some of the ribbons, but immediately after, the ribbons merged together and completely enveloped Yu Qiu's body. A colourful sphere of ribbons was seen floating in the air, Yu Qiu's body was inside that sphere.

At the same time, that sphere was descending, precisely where the ribbons surrounded Yu Qiu.

The crowd was staring at that colourful sphere and saw unceasing flashing lights. Besides, someone was still moving inside. It was obviously Yu Qiu struggling inside the sphere.

“Who is behind that powerful attack?”

The crowd was stupefied. In a flash, that person had managed to force Yu Qiu into becoming a prisoner of that sphere, what a terrifying power!

At that moment, at the location where each ribbon emerged, silhouettes appeared, the silhouettes moved towards the sphere, which made the crowd frown.

There were four colourful ribbons, each with a different person holding a different ribbon. Their faces were all covered with fine gauzes and their hair was fluttering through the air. Surprisingly, they were all women.

They were all pulling on the long colourful ribbons to approach the sphere, the way they were moving through the air made them look like celestial beings, many people thought that it looked very dream like.

While the crowd was absent-minded as if in a dream, the four silhouettes had already arrived at the sphere, they then put their beautiful slender and white hands onto the surface. Instantly, a horrible shriek pierced through the atmosphere, Yu Qiu was obviously the source of that shriek.

Yu Qiu was the prisoner of that sphere and had to endure four extremely powerful attacks at the same time.

Nobody knew who the four women were but Yu Qiu had offended them and they had attacked him without the slightest degree of mercy.

Besides, the other people who were present in the Lovesick Forest looked puzzled. They were wondering whether these women were sent by the owner of the forest, maybe they were attacking Yu Qiu because of his furious shouts using sound waves had broken the calm and tranquillity of the forest.

However, the crowd had never come across the owner of the Lovesick Forest. The rumors said that they were always present, however, they were staying in a forbidden location within the forest. It was said that nobody could enter that forbidden place and the owner also never came out.

Yue Tian Chen pulled a long face. How could this be? He was a member of the Yue Clan, he, of course, knew who the owner of the Lovesick Forest was. How could they ruin such a great moment for Yue Tian Chen, he had always really wanted to see Lin Feng die.

Lin Feng was only a half-step away from being killed, but these four women appeared out of nowhere and had immediately attacked Yu Qiu. Yue Tian Chen was wondering if they had done that protect Lin Feng.

What was really happening?

Only Duan Wu Ya knew what was happening. He also understood what all of this meant, she had finally come out and was finally attacking.

Everything was happening just as he had anticipated and planned.

Lin Feng had killed Yu Tian Xing as well as the two strong cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer who belonged to the Yu Clan. Then Yu Qiu wanted to kill Lin Feng. Lin Feng had become the sworn enemy of the Yu Clan so they would not stop until they took his life. It seemed like Lin Feng was definitely going to die, but Duan

Wu Ya was perfectly aware of the fact that while she was here, who would dare try to kill Lin Feng?

Eighteen years before, she was just like the prodigious cultivator of the Duan Clan, she was also one of the most dazzling geniuses of Xue Yue. At that moment, the genius of the Duan Clan was already hidden in the depths of the Imperial Palace controlling everything.

However, nobody knew where she was, she had become a legend.

Unfortunately, her husband had been sealed by the Duan Clan, otherwise, the Yu Clan would have been powerless to resist them.

In the atmosphere, a monstrous Qi was emerging. The colourful sphere broke apart and the colourful ribbons broke into small pieces. Yu Qiu once again appeared in the crowds field of vision again.

However, at that moment, Yu Qiu seemed different from a moment before. A moment before, Yu Qiu was extremely aggressive and wanted to kill Lin Feng.

But at that moment, Yu Qiu's body was covered with wounds and his Qi was weak. Besides, the light in his eyes had become pallid which made him look simple-minded. He blankly gazed into the distance yet he still looked like he wasn't resigned to giving up.

He was a fool because he still didn't know why he had provoked the anger of these women. He had to endure four attacks at the

same time. He didn't resign to give up because he was the prestigious third elder of the Yu Clan and was a strong cultivator at the fourth Xuan Qi layer, however, his cultivation was crippled by these four powerful women of the Xuan Qi layer.

He didn't even know the reason as to why his cultivation had been crippled.....

At that moment, Yu Qiu just had the feeling that his world had collapsed around him, he seemed like he had abandoned his mind to despair.

Yu Qiu's hands and legs were still tied by the colourful ribbons. At that moment, the four lithe and graceful silhouettes shook their hands and in a flash, Yu Qiu's body was thrown into the horizon. At the same time, the four women said something.

“From now on, all members of the Yu Clan are banned from entering the Lovesick Forest, if they attempt even half a step into the forest, they will be killed for their offense!”

While talking, the four silhouettes flickered at the same time, disappeared into the bamboo forest. In a flash, they were gone. In the air, the broken colourful ribbons were still fluttering powerlessly through the wind as if these four silhouettes were simply imagined.

From that day on, the Yu Clan was banned from entering the Lovesick Forest!

Obviously, these words had proved who these four women were. They represented the owner of the Lovesick Forest and were in charge of informing the Yu Clan that they were banned from coming back to the forest.

Not only had Yu Qiu's cultivation been crippled but the entire Yu Clan was banned from entering the Lovesick Forest ever again. If they violated that rule, they would be killed.

“BOOM!”

Yu Qiu's body violently crashed onto the ground and blood burst into the air. His entire body was a wreck.

Yu Qiu was blankly staring towards the disappearing silhouettes and screamed with both grief and fury: “Why???”

“Why?” Nobody would answer his question. The crowd didn't understand what just happened either. They didn't understand why Yu Qiu was so violently attacked and why the Yu Clan had been banned from entering.

Could it be that because Yu Qiu violated the calm and tranquillity of the forest?

But Lin Feng had killed Yu Tian Xing and nobody did anything.

However, Lin Feng was still indifferently standing in the air. His eyes were closed as if nothing had happened. Many people were

startled at this scene, did it have anything to do with Lin Feng?

Chapter 346: The Grim Fire

“No, it’s impossible, it can’t have anything to do with Lin Feng.” People in the crowd quickly refuted their idea that it could have anything to do with Lin Feng. The owner of the Lovesick Forest was an extraordinary person while Lin Feng just a Marquis of Yangzhou City, it wouldn’t be anything to do with him.

Perhaps that the owner of the Lovesick Forest decided to attack Yu Qiu because she couldn’t bear seeing how arrogant and aggressive he was, after all. Everybody had compassion when seeing the weak being bullied, so maybe the owner had compassion for Lin Feng, that would be perfectly normal.

Many people looked to Yu Qiu in the distance, he looked dispirited and his hair was extremely messy. They all felt compassion and pity for him, the prestigious third elder of the Yu Clan, who was a cultivator of the fourth Xuan Qi layer had ended up in such a tragic situation, from that moment on, he was a worthless existence.

Not only had he lost his prestige in the Yu Clan but he wouldn’t even be able to keep his social status with such a low strength. Besides, Yu Tian Xing was dead, the Yu Clan would definitely blame Yu Qiu for that. This was the end, Yu Qiu was done, there was no hope left for him anymore.

That was life, no matter how strong someone was, there was always someone stronger.

Therefore, in the world of cultivation, people had to unceasingly become stronger in order to control their own destiny rather than leaving their lives in the hands of others. Those who had the most strength could control the people, like gods.

Yu Qiu was aware that he had no future left. He was looking at Lin Feng who was stood in the sky. His heart was feeling extremely painful. Why? He hadn't been able to kill Lin Feng yet he made the owner of the Lovesick Forest furious and they crippled his cultivation.

He hated Lin Feng from the bottom of his heart but his heart was also filled with regret. If he hadn't gone to the Lovesick Forest to kill Lin Feng, none of this would have happened.

He also hated the person who had informed him that Yu Tian Xing was in danger. Yu Qiu even had doubts about the information, he wondered if it was a trap or not. At the moment he arrived, he was just in time to see Lin Feng who was clearly moving to kill Yu Tian Xing. There were also other prestigious people present as witnesses. Yu Qiu felt that he had fallen into a whirlpool of conspiracies and his judgement day had come.

Until that moment, Yu Qiu still didn't even know the person who delivered the information to him.

His eyes were sparkling, he glanced around at the crowd and finally focused on someone in particular: Duan Wu Ya, the second prince.

It seemed like Duan Xin Ye and Duan Wu Ya were Lin Feng's good friends, why had Lin Feng come to the Lovesick Forest?

Yu Qiu suspected Duan Wu Ya to be the origin of everything that happened.

Yu Qiu was suddenly struck with a feeling of foreboding. Duan Wu Ya's moved and he looked at Yu Qiu in the distance with disdain, he then said while smiling indifferently: "You have already been expelled by the owner of the Lovesick Forest, Uncle Yu, how come you haven't left yet?"

When Yu Qiu saw Duan Wu Ya's smile, he was astonished it was him, it was definitely him!

Yu Qiu's mouth twitched, his eyes looked like two endless wells of hatred.

When Duan Wu Ya saw Yu Qiu's eyes filled with hatred, but he just continued to smile and said: "Uncle Yu, some people should give face to other people when the time comes. If they do, things can carry on as always, if they don't and instead they cater their pride and arrogance, things can get messy."

When Yu Qiu heard Duan Wu Ya's words, he was certain. It was Duan Wu Ya, the person who gave the information and lured him here was Duan Wu Ya.

Duan Wu Ya really seemed to be the one at the origin of these

events. It seemed like Duan Wu Ya was insinuating that Yu Qiu had made him lose face, therefore, he had to pay the price.

However, how could Duan Wu Ya anticipate that the owner of the Lovesick would attack Yu Qiu? The owner would never listen to Duan Wu Ya's orders.

“You’re so treacherous!” Said Yu Qiu with an evil tone which surprised Duan Wu Ya.

Duan Wu Ya then said indifferently: “Third Yu Elder, I’ve always given you face and treated you with the utmost respect and you dare to humiliate me, what is this supposed to mean?”

“You’re so shameless Duan Wu Ya! How majestic and prestigious is it to be born as the second prince! I wouldn’t have thought that you would betray me like a shameless traitor! You’re just a tiny insignificant person!” Yu Qiu’s was spitting venomous words while fixedly staring at Duan Wu Ya. However, at that moment, a whistling sound spread through the air, stupefying everybody. It was at that instant everyone noticed a spear pierce through Yu Qiu’s throat and his eyes filled with agony. That spear had just taken Yu Qiu’s life.

When the crowd saw that, they were all astonished. Yu Qiu had died, killed on the spot in front of everybody.

“If anyone dares to insult His Majesty, they will die!” Said a silhouette dressed in black that suddenly appeared. Immediately after, the silhouette respectfully knelt in front of Duan Wu Ya and

said: “Yu Qiu continuously insulted Your Highness. I took the initiative without asking for permission, please punish me for this offense.”

“How audacious!” Shouted Duan Wu Ya furiously. He then said coldly: “Even if Yu Qiu behaved in an impetuous way, why did you need to kill him? EXPLAIN YOURSELF!!!”

“I decided to act without asking permission from Your Highness so I will bear the full responsibility for my actions. I will bring the body back to the Yu Clan and let them deal with me.” Said the person sounding calm and serene. They didn’t look bothered, it was as if they were speaking of casual matters.

Duan Wu Ya looked irresolute for an instant and then said: “That’s the only choice, take the body to the Yu Clan and let them dispose of you as they wish, whatever they decide, you cannot disobey.”

“Yes, Your Highness.” Replied the person while nodding. They put the spear over their shoulder with Yu Qiu still hanging loosely on end the spear and they carried the body away like that. The crowd’s hearts started to pound violently when they saw the body being treated as garbage.

Was he really going to apologize for his offense? Besides, was the person who had Yu Qiu attacked, Duan Wu Ya?

The crowd started looking at Duan Wu Ya and coldness invaded their hearts. Duan Wu Ya, who was so friendly, was showing a new

side of his personality. Maybe Duan Wu Ya's goal had really been to allow the prestigious crowd to witness all these events.

It was a message to let them understand that they needed to remain obedient and docile, otherwise they would suffer the same fate as Yu Qiu.

Duan Wu Ya turned around as if nothing had ever happened. He then turned to Lin Feng and looked at him in a strange way. At that moment, Lin Feng was calmly standing in mid air. His Qi was stable as it floated through the air, it showed absolutely no indication that he was badly injured. Besides, even for a person in perfect health, releasing such a stable Qi was also very difficult to achieve.

It seemed like Lin Feng was in a trance, he was surprisingly having a breakthrough!

The crowd also looked at Lin Feng with strange looks. Lin Feng looked like he was completely disconnected from the world, he didn't even know that Yu Qiu had just been killed or seen the four women appear and save him while crippling Yu Qiu's cultivation.

Lin Feng had become lost in his own world.

The world of darkness belonged to Lin Feng. The celestial book was floating in the air, a multitude of colours were flashing around it, it looked resplendent.

At that moment, Lin Feng was entirely focusing on his celestial book. Besides, the third page of the celestial book was unceasingly shaking and it looked like it was forcing the second page to turn to reveal the third page.

That time, the light wasn't dazzling, there wasn't the majesty of a dazzling sword, there was just an immense power which gave the sensation of death.

When the third page was starting to turn, something could be seen on the page. It was a black flame and it looked incredible, as if it belonged to an evil spirit.

On the second page of the celestial book, a black sword appeared and was filled with deadly energy and battle energy.

On the third page, there was a black flame. Besides, that flame wasn't extremely agitated, on the contrary, it was calm and tranquil. It wasn't releasing even a tiny amount of Qi, but that sort of deathly calm would bring on feeling of terror. That sort of flame seemed like it came directly from the underworld. It was terrifying.

“Grim Fire!” Thought Lin Feng. The sword was the sword of a war god, while that fire was so monstrous that “Grim Fire” is the first words Lin Feng had come up with to describe the phenomenon.

It came from the underworld, it was the grim fire.

“It seems like my celestial spirit always relies on external stimulus to reveal a new page. Besides, each page seems to introduce a unique and special treasure, which grants me with an extraordinary ability.” Thought Lin Feng. At the beginning, his celestial spirit granted him with omniscient perception and the monstrous power of understanding. The second page had granted him with a sword which enabled him to understand the way of the sword with an extremely high mastery. Each time he practiced, his sword knowledge was turning into a deeper understanding.

Besides that time, the third page had opened itself and was showing him the grim fire. Lin Feng was wondering how strong that fire was.

At that moment, the crowd was, as before, staring at Lin Feng and finally, they saw him move. He then immediately opened his eyes and black flames filled his eyes. When the crowd saw, they felt chills down their spines, as if a Qi of death had surrounded them. How cold! They had the impression that their hearts were going to stop at that moment.

Chapter 347: The Black Lotus!

The black flame stayed in Lin Feng's eyes for a few seconds and then vanished. Lin Feng's facial expression returned back to normal, he then glanced at the crowd stupefied.

At that moment, everybody was looking at him and Yu Qiu had disappeared.

“What happened?” Asked Lin Feng while narrowing his eyes a little bit. He had distinctly seen four colourful ribbons in the distance and immediately after he was absorbed into the world with the celestial book, after that, he had no idea what had happened.

“Cough!” Lin Feng coughed up some blood. The pure Qi under his feet was getting weaker and weaker to the extent that it was collapsing under his weight. Lin Feng then descended from the sky and landed next to Lan Jiao. He quickly asked: “Where is Yu Qiu?”

“He's dead.” Replied Lan Jiao surprised. That guy surprisingly didn't know anything about the moment after Yu Qiu was about to kill him, and he was just focusing on his breakthrough, he was unreal.

“A moment ago, four women appeared and crippled Yu Qiu's cultivation and announced that the Yu Clan was banned from coming to the Lovesick Forest from now on, then one of the princess' guards killed Yu Qiu.” said Lan Jiao while glancing at Duan Wu Ya. Lin Feng looked perplexed, Yu Qiu wanted to kill him

and in the end, he had ended up dead himself. Lin Feng couldn't believe it, he knew that if Duan Wu Ya invited him here, nothing bad would happen, but he would have never thought that Yu Qiu was going to die as a result.

Lan Jiao had just mentioned four women who banned the Yu Clan from coming back to the Lovesick Forest which meant that they represented the owner. They couldn't be Duan Wu Ya's people, so, why did they save him and cripple Yu Qiu's cultivation? Could Duan Wu Ya have done something?

"Lin Feng, you're amazing." Said Duan Wu Ya while smiling to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had surprisingly fallen into a cultivation trance when Yu Qiu was about to kill him, he was an exceptional talent. No wonder that he had such terrifying abilities.

Lin Feng looked at Duan Wu Ya and looked confused. There were too many things that he didn't understand about what had happened.

Why did Duan Wu Ya invite him? Had he voluntarily invited Lin Feng and Yu Tian Xing at the same time hoping that Lin Feng would kill him? But, if he had, what was his purpose?

Besides, how come Yu Qiu appeared at the precise moment when Yu Tian Xing was in danger, when Lin Feng wanted to kill him?

Finally, who were those four women? Why had they saved him and crippled Yu Qiu's cultivation.

Lin Feng couldn't clearly see the bigger picture, he was missing something and couldn't understand why everything happened as it did.

"Lin Feng, this is for you."

At that moment, Duan Xin Ye was handing a bottle of pills to Lin Feng which stupefied him, he then asked: "What's this?"

"It's to heal your wounds." Replied Duan Xin Ye while smiling, after which Duan Wu Ya narrowed his eyes.

Lin Feng understood how extraordinary these pills were when he noticed Duan Wu Ya's peculiar facial expression.

"Princess, my wounds are not severe at all. I just need some rest and I'll be in top condition again." Said Lin Feng while refusing the pills.

"You called me princess again!" Duan Xin Ye looked disappointed and tried to hide her bitterness, which made Lin Feng smile wryly: "I'm sorry, Xin Ye."

"Alright, take these, only then will I forgive you." Said Duan Xin Ye while handing the bottle over to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had no alternative, he smiled wryly and accepted the bottle. Immediately after, he opened it, inside, there were nine yellow pills, there was Qi being released from the pills and it gave off a pleasant fragrance.

Lin Feng took out a pill and swallowed it. After taking it, a pleasant and refreshing Qi spread through his blood vessels, repairing his internal organs and restoring his lost blood. Lin Feng could even sense each and every single cell healing, as if every part of his body was healing at miraculous speed.

“What a powerful pill.” Thought Lin Feng. These pills were extremely precious.

“Xin Ye, one pill is enough to heal my wounds, you can keep the rest.” Said Lin Feng while closing the bottle again, then he handed it back to Duan Xin Ye.

Duan Xin Ye glanced at Lin Feng and grabbed the bottle. Those pills were precious, they were Xuan level pills of medium quality, one was enough to cure all of Lin Feng’s wounds.

Yue Tian Chen, who was next to them, looked at Lin Feng with an ice-cold glare. He could see how friendly Duan Xin Ye was to Lin Feng. Yue Tian Chen’s entire body was filled with killing intent, he deeply despised Lin Feng and wanted him dead. He even hated Yu Qiu for not killing Lin Feng a moment before. If only the four women hadn’t appeared, Lin Feng would be dead.

Lin Feng's senses were extremely acute, he immediately sensed Yue Tian Chen's glare. He turned around and coldly looked at Yue Tian Chen. In an instant, Yue Tian Chen lost his composure and started shaking while lowering his head, he didn't dare to look at Lin Feng in the eyes.

Lin Feng did not hesitate to kill Yu Tian Xing, if Yue Tian Chen provoked him, the same thing would happen to him. Yue Tian Chen hadn't become crazy.

"Worthless scum." Said Lin Feng which made Yue Tian Chen's heart leap, his face even turned red.

In the past, that worthless scum was extremely arrogant because he was a member of the Yue Clan, so he looked down on Lin Feng as if he was an insect to be crushed. However, Lin Feng was now humiliating him and calling him scum in front of everybody. Yue Tian Chen didn't even dare to contradict Lin Feng. Lin Feng only had to glance at him and he would freeze in terror. He didn't even dare to look in the direction of Lin Feng any longer. Right now, standing before Lin Feng, he didn't even dare to raise his head.

This was the sad reality.

"Xin Ye, Your Highness, I have other matters to attend, so I will take my leave." Said Lin Feng while turning to Duan Xin Ye and Duan Wu Ya.

Duan Xin Ye started to open her mouth, she wanted to say something but didn't know what excuse she could use to make him

stay. Duan Wu Ya slightly smiled and nodded: “Alright, no problem, you can leave. I hope that we will have the occasion to drink some more next time.”

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng while slightly nodding, then, he immediately turned around and moved towards the exit of the Lovesick Forest. Lan Jiao was also closely following behind him.

“Contrary to what people might think, you are a very merciful person.”

Lan Jiao arrived next to Lin Feng and glanced at Lin Feng with a strange expression.

“Was I merciful to you?” Said Lin Feng which made Lan Jiao surprised, was he merciful to her?

.....

At the Dong Ling Hill, the fire was finally extinguished and everything was burnt black, not even a single blade of grass could grow there anymore. It was completely desolate and no one would venture there anymore. Nobody wanted to visit a place that looked like it was devastated by battle.

However, at that moment, a clean and handsome young man arrived at the top of the hill. He then sat under the scorching sun as sunlight started moving towards his body and turning into brilliant flames that radiated from his body, the flames were

hypnotizing.

The young man at the top of the hill was obviously Lin Feng. The sunshine at the top of the hill was perfect to practice his Cosmos-Burning Sun skill.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and started to cultivate his Cosmos-Burning Sun skill. The sunlight was shining onto his body and unceasingly penetrating his flesh. A short moment later, it seemed like Lin Feng was the centre of a majestic fire.

However, at that moment, Lin Feng entered into his world of darkness, he had many ideas. In the middle of his world of darkness, his celestial book was also floating in the air, the black flame inside the book was undulating.

Lin Feng focused his entire attention on the black fire and calmly studied it. Each and every single thought he had was about the grim fire.

A deadly Qi emerged from Lin Feng's body, it looked dark, evil and ice-cold, as if it had come from the depths of hell.

At the same time, a black flame appeared on Lin Feng's body, the fire which was initially burning on his body surprisingly turned into a black fire, a grim and deadly black fire.

The scariest part was that black flames were unceasingly appearing. Lin Feng's body was almost entirely covered with black

flames. After a while, the radiant flames had entirely transformed into black flames. At that moment, in the middle of those rampaging black flames, Lin Feng looked like a demonic deity, he looked absolutely terrifying.

“This is a new dimension, as expected, the flames from the sun and my grim fire can merge to create something new.” Thought Lin Feng who was still a bit surprised. He could already make pure Qi into flames and with the knowledge he had acquired from using grim fire, he was now able to transform Qi into grim fire. However, the black flames which were burning around Lin Feng’s body didn’t look as overwhelming as it did in the book, it didn’t seem as impressive as the image.

Lin Feng’s thoughts were extremely quick, the black flames around his body condensed into several tiny flames shaped as petals which then hovered in front of him, an endless quantity of flames started to emerge from his body which was then turned into more tiny black flames, which gathered in front of Lin Feng.

A black lotus which was the size of a hand, hovered in front of Lin Feng. That black lotus was a grim black lotus, it contained grim fire. All the pure Qi which was surrounding Lin Feng’s body turned into black flames which merged with the lotus flower....

Chapter 348: The Holy Courtyard Is Landing!

Lin Feng opened his eyes and saw the black lotus, his eyes were twinkling.

“What a monstrous Qi.” Whispered Lin Feng to himself. The black fire lotus was made completely from condensed pure Qi which took shape from Lin Feng’s imagination, he imagined a lotus flower that could engulf the world.

The black lotus made from grim fire could surround and annihilate anything, it would burn anything it came in contact with.

In Lin Feng’s thoughts, the lotus flower was slowly growing bigger and bigger, but the energy contained in the fire was becoming less dense and concentrated, the denser the energy contained within the lotus, the more terrifying it was.

Lin Feng concentrated again and the energy of the lotus flower slowly regained its original shape and power.

Lin Feng attempted to increase the size a few times with no success. Lin Feng stopped trying to increase the size and power of his lotus flower with his energy. He then stretched out his hand, in an instant a scorching hot fire appeared. In the middle of that fire, there was a monstrous rampaging energy.

It seemed like the fire of a ferocious beast, that was precisely the essence fire that Lin Feng had stolen from Bing Yuan at Celestial River. Ever since he left Celestial River, he didn't have any opportunities to use it, now, he had condensed his grim fire into a black lotus, so it was worth giving it a try.

The beast essence fire was rampaging in the atmosphere, Lin Feng controlled his black lotus and moved it towards the beast essence fire. The black lotus then slowly started to blossom and at the same time, it gradually enveloped the beast essence fire.

“Absorb!” Said Lin Feng in a low voice with a sharp expression in his eyes. In a flash, the black lotus petals slammed shut and completely absorbed the beast essence fire within. The black light started flickering and increased amounts of deadly energy started pouring out from the lotus, it was growing more and more monstrous as it grew more powerful.

Lin Feng didn't find the situation strange at all. It was the beast essence fire of a seven-tailed fox, it was initially monstrously powerful. When the black lotus absorbed the beast essence fire, no monstrous fire Qi emerged, there was just a terrifying deadly Qi. It was entirely absorbed without wasting a single drop of its power. That black lotus was monstrous, it seemed like it was the god of all fires and was able to swallow all the fire in the world.

After a while, the black lotus was still getting stronger and stronger. Lin Feng was smiling as he watched this. He raised his head and looked at the sun in the sky and shouted: “Transform!”

After Lin Feng's shout, the black lotus transformed into a myriad

of small black flames which were then absorbed into Lin Feng's body. The radiant sun flames appeared around Lin Feng's body. Once the grim fire was absorbed, Lin Feng's sun Qi had grown even more powerful. The fire within his body was even more scorching and dazzling.

The grim fire could merge with the sun Qi, and after absorbing the grim fire back into his body after it increased in power, the power of his sun Qi also increased.

The sunlight was still shining down on the top of the hill. Lin Feng was sitting there smiling, he was extremely happy with his progress. He nearly died, which caused his celestial book to open itself and the grim fire was revealed. Besides, his grim fire and the flames from his Cosmos-Burning Sun skill could fuse together which enabled him to greatly increase the quality of his skill along with its power.

Lin Feng was lacking when it came to fire. No matter whether it was to concoct pills or fabricate weapons, Lin Feng needed to control an extremely powerful fire to increase his ability.

“What kind of spirit is my celestial spirit? Why do I have such a spirit?” thought Lin Feng. He couldn't understand, during that cold and rainy night, his spirit had caused him unbearable pain when it awoke, but the reward was gigantic. Each page of the celestial book seemed to grant him with monstrous abilities, warlord's sword, the grim fire... What would appear on the next page?

Lin Feng didn't think too much, the path of cultivation was an

extremely long and complicated one. If he achieved a certain condition, success would be achieved. Lin Feng obviously knew that thinking on it would get him nowhere.

The burning flames were absorbed into Lin Feng's body and he stopped cultivating. His silhouette flickered and he disappeared from Dong Ling Hill in an instant.

.....

The news about what happened in the Lovesick Forest hadn't spread at all as if someone was preventing it from circulating, even a certain somebody from the Yue Clan who had witnessed the events was staying quiet. Who would dare carelessly talk about what had happened between Duan Wu Ya the second prince and the Yu Clan.

The outside world was extremely peaceful, it seemed like just another normal day, but in the Lovesick Forest, there were surprisingly many wealthy and noble young cultivators. As before, how could the elites of Xue Yue not know about the events that happened there? They all understood that the Yu Clan was going to go through some hardships.

Yu Tian Xing was killed by Lin Feng as well as two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer who belonged to the Yu Clan. Then, Yu Qiu's cultivation was crippled and immediately after, one of Duan Wu Ya's guards killed him.

How could all the witnesses remain calm after seeing these

events happen in the Lovesick Forest?

But the members of the Celestial Academy didn't know about it. The disciples of the Celestial Academy were mainly concerned with Qiong Bi Luo.

Qiong Bi Luo had easily defeated Du Bi, his Blue Void spirit was terrifyingly powerful and the majority of the students of the Celestial Academy all considered Qiong Bi Luo as the most dazzling genius of the academy. He was the top ranked disciple of the academy.

However, very few people thought that Lin Feng was the strongest student of the Celestial Academy. They had always thought that if Lin Feng fought against Qiong Bi Luo, he might have a chance, but that was just speculation.

At that moment, on a big public square at the Celestial Academy, many people were surrounding the central cultivation tower and the atmosphere was bustling and lively.

The crowd raised their heads and looked at the top of the cultivation tower with envy. The top of the cultivation tower was the dream of many. Those who practiced at the top of the tower were always worshiped.

Everybody hoped to be able to practice at the top someday.

At that moment, in the distance, some whistling sounds

emerged, they had been caused by a strong wind which painfully piercing through people's eardrums.

The crowd couldn't help but raise their heads and gaze into the distance. Immediately after, they saw something flying through the atmosphere. The air was being split in two and in the middle was a magnificent white light.

"Huh?" The crowd was stupefied and blankly staring at the sky. Immediately after, a gigantic silhouette appeared in front of them.

A huge wind followed every movement from the silhouette, the wind rushed through the air just like a hurricane, the scene was incredible.

"A ferocious beast, a legendary roc!" The crowd was staring at the huge winged beast... It was a legendary roc.

In the sky above the Celestial Academy, a ferocious beast suddenly appeared, thus, people were a bit surprised.

"It can't be, that's a human being." The crowd was gasping with astonishment and their hearts started pounding.

That gigantic silhouette was moving nearer and nearer. The crowd could see it more clearly at that moment. That gigantic silhouette wasn't a ferocious beast, surprisingly, it wasn't a legendary roc, instead, it was a human being!

Actually, that gigantic silhouette and the wings were from a spirit, a legendary roc spirit.

“High-Official Chu Zhan Peng!”

In a flash, the crowd thought of someone, it was a legendary roc spirit so it had to be Chu Zhan Peng the high-official. Of course, nobody knew in the air, behind that legendary roc was an ice cold Qi.

At that moment, the sun was shining down upon people’s bodies but suddenly, the sky became dark and covered with clouds.

“The High-Official Luo Xue!” The crowd was astonished once more. They were absolutely right, there were two people in the sky, High-Official Chu Zhan Peng and High-Official Luo Xue.

Two high-officials were surprisingly moving towards them at full speed.

It seemed like there were many silhouettes that were flickering and coming towards the Celestial Academy in the distance. Besides, these people were all wearing the uniform of the Holy Courtyard, without exception.

“What’s going on?” The crowd was growing more and more anxious. These people were students of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, their facial expressions were all extremely sharp and they were releasing an extremely powerful Qi. They were all

extraordinarily strong, there wasn't a single weakling amongst them.

Those people were all charging towards the Celestial Academy at the same time, there was even the two strongest disciples of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue there, they were both high-officials.

“It seems like something incredible is about to happen.” Thought the crowd. At that moment, Chu Zhan Peng had already arrived above them in the sky. The wings of the legendary roc were fluttering in the air. Immediately after, he landed at the top of the cultivation tower. That was the highest point in the Celestial Academy and it was as if Chu Zhan Peng was putting it under his feet.

That astonished all the people in the Celestial Academy!

Chapter 349: The Appointment

“How aggressive!” The crowd was staring at Chu Zhan Peng.

The cultivation tower was a symbol of the Celestial Academy, being able to step into the cultivation tower was an honour, and the top floor was a majestic symbol of the academy.

However, Chu Zhan Peng was an outsider from the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, he came to the Celestial Academy and immediately put the cultivation tower under his feet, and his intention was obvious.

What Chu Zhan Peng meant was that he looked down on the Celestial Academy, he was humiliating its members. They were humiliating every member of the Celestial Academy by disrespecting the glorious symbol of the Celestial Academy. Chu Zhan Peng, was a high-official after all.

That made the members of the Celestial Academy infuriated but when facing one of the eight high-officials, what could they do? Getting angry at him was useless, they couldn't fight against him.

Luo Xue was also in the air and then stood on the tower. He was monstrously strong, just like Chu Zhan Peng, and they both looked at the members of the Celestial Academy with disdain.

The silhouettes of all the Holy Courtyard students flickered and they all formed a perfect line, they looked down on the students of the Celestial Academy, they all looked extremely arrogant.

“I heard that some geniuses have appeared in the Celestial Academy, besides, two of them have already broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.” Said Chu Zhan Peng from the top of the cultivation tower, his voice was filled with insult and sarcasm.

“The Celestial Academy is becoming more and more influential, today, Luo Xue and I brought some of our fellow students so we could all learn from each other, we want to see how majestic and strong the geniuses of the Celestial Academy really are.” Said Chu Zhan Peng while arrogantly glancing at the crowd.

Chu Zhan Peng had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer and had become one of the eight high-officials for the last two years. He wasn't lazy either, relying on his natural abilities, he already broke through to the third Xuan Qi layer, whereas the insignificant insects Qiong Bi Luo and Du Bi had only broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer, they wouldn't be able to compete with him.

Besides, Chu Zhan Peng hadn't forgotten about Lin Feng either. In fact, he had come to the Celestial Academy for two reasons, one reason was obviously Lin Feng.

He glanced at the students of the Celestial Academy on the ground, his two gigantic legendary roc wings streaked through the sky and he landed on the ground, immediately after he rose back up in the air, before landing back onto the top of the cultivation tower. Now, on his side, a beautiful woman had appeared.

If Lin Feng had been there, he would definitely have recognized

her, it was Lin Qian.

Lin Qian was standing on top of the cultivation tower looking down on the crowd. The feeling of power invaded her heart, it seemed like her pride which had been crushed by Lin Feng was restored in an instant.

Even though her natural abilities weren't as impressive as Lin Feng's, she didn't need to be monstrously strong, as long as her lover was strong enough, she would be able to crush Lin Feng.

“Don't worry Qian Qian, I will do what I promised you.” Said Chu Zhan Peng in a cold tone. If he had an occasion, he would definitely kill Lin Feng.

He could remember back to when he had gone to the Yun Hai Sect, at that time, Lin Feng was still a nobody, a little insect, yet had dared to make him lose face, he should have killed Lin Feng much earlier.

Lin Feng was already much stronger and he was described as a genius by the members of the Celestial Academy. He was even respected and appreciated by the second prince, Duan Wu Ya. However, Chu Zhan Peng wanted to use Lin Feng to feed his ego.

“Why is nobody replying? Is there nobody worthwhile in the Celestial Academy?” Joked Chu Zhan Peng which stupefied the crowd beneath the cultivation tower. They wanted to deny what he had just said but didn't know what to say.

Actually, they really couldn't compete with Chu Zhan Peng, after all, he was one of the eight high-officials, if they contradicted him and made him angry, that would be courting death.

But at that moment, some silhouettes appeared in the distance. These silhouettes flickered, they were moving at full speed. Besides, there were also some people moving through the sky. These people were teachers of the Celestial Academy, cultivators at the Xuan Qi layer. They rarely came out but at that moment, these loud and extremely arrogant people from the Holy Courtyard barged into the academy, how could the teachers not respond?

Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue calmly and serenely looked at the silhouettes moving through the sky, they didn't look affected at all, as if they didn't even care.

“Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue have barged into the Celestial Academy, what is that supposed to mean?”

At that moment, a teacher from the Celestial Academy came forward and spoke to Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue, who were still standing on the top of the cultivation tower.

“I, Chu Zhan Peng, have heard that some geniuses are in the Celestial Academy, congratulations, I admire you for that. Therefore, today, I have come with some of my fellow disciples of the Holy Courtyard to learn from you and swap some advice. The Celestial Academy is now prestigious and mighty, I hope that you will be generous and allow us to learn from its members.” Said Chu Zhan Peng with a smile yet not a smile on his face. What he meant was obvious, he had come to challenge the students of the Celestial

Academy.

“The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and the Celestial Academy are two great academic institutions of the Imperial City, challenges are very normal, I know that you are unlikely to refuse.” added Luo Xue sounding ice-cold.

The teacher from the Celestial Academy frowned, Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue had been famous for a while already and he was wondering how strong they had become, but what he feared the most was that they were already able to sweep away the disciples of the Celestial Academy.

“Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue, what kind of advice do you seek?”

“Since both our Holy Courtyard and your Celestial Academy can exchange a lot, we should, of course, select the same number of students, if you want a group fight, we don’t mind either.” Replied Chu Zhan Peng.

The teacher of the Celestial Academy was a bit surprised. Even though the Celestial Academy was quite strong, they had started from nothing unlike the Holy Courtyard which immediately gathered the best disciples from the greatest sects in the country, it was strong directly from the moment of its creation. The Celestial Academy was obviously weaker than the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, choosing the same number of people for a battle would definitely lead to the defeat of the Celestial Academy. They had no chance of winning.

“If you are afraid that it would end up in the Celestial Academy getting humiliated, we can make it even more simple, you can immediately choose the two strongest and most gifted students of the academy and they can fight against Luo Xue and me.” Joked Chu Zhan Peng.

The members of the Celestial Academy were insulting them in their hearts. Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue were high-officials, who could battle against them? Even Qiong Bi Luo couldn't rival them, he would definitely lose if he tried.

It seemed like the Celestial Academy had absolutely no chance of winning such a challenge.

“Alright, I will choose two people who will fight against you.” Said the teacher of the Xuan Qi layer of the Celestial Academy. The crowd was dumbstruck, surprisingly, he had agreed.

Chu Zhan Peng was also astonished but still found the situation extremely amusing, weren't they acting too recklessly by accepting his challenge?

“But not right now.” Added the teacher. He then added: “Soon, there will be the Grand Tournament of the Imperial City, at that moment, you and Luo Xue will participate as well, the students that I have chosen will also participate and you will have a chance to fight against them during the tournament.”

Chu Zhan Peng was surprised, he hadn't expected his interlocutor to calculate to such a degree, indeed, the Grand

Tournament of the Imperial City would start soon and as high-officials, Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue were obviously going to participate.

The Grand Tournament would be especially important for geniuses, the Celestial Academy would also pick some students to attend, surprisingly, the teacher had also chosen that day for Chu Zhan Peng's challenge.

"That's my condition, otherwise, the Celestial Academy will disregard your challenge." Explained the teacher from the Celestial Academy.

Chu Zhan Peng's eyes were flashing with thoughts, he remained silent for a while, then Luo Xue and he glanced at each other, immediately smiled and nodded. Luo Xue and Chu Zhan Peng would have time to prepare themselves and become even stronger during that period, it didn't seem like there was a down side.

"Alright, I accept." Nodded Chu Zhan Peng.

"I hope that on the day, the Celestial Academy will not choose two worthless cultivators, otherwise we will be able take advantage of it and the Celestial Academy will become the joke of the Imperial City." Joked Chu Zhan Peng.

Immediately after, he rolled up his sleeves, a strong wind filled the area, the wings of the legendary roc opened , he then rose into the air and flew away.

“Let’s go!” Said Luo Xue indifferently. He immediately started floating in the air and moved through the sky as if he was taking a gentle stroll, he looked natural and relaxed.

When the people of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue saw these two leave, they then all gradually started to follow. Very quickly, they all disappeared, however, their despicable and detestable behaviour, even after they left, was still making the members of the Celestial Academy suffer.

Chapter 350: The Lesson

When the teacher saw them leaving, his eyes twinkled, he glanced at the crowd and said: “It’s already been ten years, now, the Great Competition of Xue Yu will start soon, I hope that you will all seize that opportunity and be even more motivated to constantly become stronger.”

“The Great Competition of Xue Yu!” The crowd was astonished, they had already heard about it, every ten years, the entire region of Xue Yu held a Great Competition, where the elite cultivators of all the thirteen countries of Xue Yu gathered. Every ten years, when the Great Competition of Xue Yu took place, the entire region became more lively, while rivers of geniuses started to reveal themselves.

During the rise of the geniuses, challenges and battles were important, it was also a chance to seize an opportunity. Therefore, the teacher was telling everybody to seize that opportunity, even if, that time, they couldn’t participate to the Great Competition of Xue Yu, they could observe the incredible geniuses and try to walk down the same path, and even try to surpass them someday, becoming powerful cultivators.

“However, before the Great Competition of Xue Yu, some officials of the Dragon Mountain Empire will come to Xue Yue and choose the most outstanding cultivators from Xue Yue to participate in the competition.” Continued the teacher. The Empire of the Dragon Mountain was in control of Xue Yue and it was one of the four great empires of Xue Yu.

Xue Yue and Tian Feng were both under the control of Dragon Mountain.

However, The Dragon Mountain Empire was not going to intervene in Xue Yue's internal affairs, every ten years, they went to Xue Yue and selected some outstanding geniuses to participate in the Xue Yu Great Competition and fight against the geniuses of the three other great empires!

“Of course, we won't let the people of The Dragon Mountain Empire come here and see a bunch of trash, therefore, before the team from the Dragon Mountain Empire comes to Xue Yue, Xue Yue organizes its own Grand Tournament, which the most outstanding disciples from the country are chosen to display their strength and talent when the Dragon Mountain Empire comes to collect the talented individuals. In order to be considered as talented by the Dragon Mountain Empire, two factors are decisive: strength and natural abilities. If the Dragon Mountain Empire attaches importance to you, even if you are not very strong at the moments, your future is filled with countless opportunities.” The teacher said which made the crowd palpitate from excitement, even if they were not strong enough, if they had high natural abilities, the empire might still select them.

If the empire attaches importance to them, they would be able to leave Xue Yue and their future would be filled with endless opportunities, but... Were their natural abilities high enough to draw the attention of the empire?

Many people, when they thought about it, looked disappointed again. It was much too difficult. There were many geniuses in the

empire, in order to be noticed by the empire, at least in Xue Yue, they had to be extraordinary and stand out, they, of course, weren't those kinds of people. Maybe Lin Feng, with his natural abilities, would draw the empire's attention as Lin Feng's strength wasn't yet sufficient to draw their attention.

“For the Grand Tournament, the Celestial Academy will be able to send five students, in other words, only five will be able to participate. Whether you are chosen or not and whether you will have the opportunity to be noticed by the empire depends on you, just look at yourselves and you will know.” Said the teacher when he saw how excited the crowd looked. He then added: “Besides, as you saw a moment ago, amongst these five people, I will choose two people to fight against Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue.”

“Fight against Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue?” The crowd looked perplexed, was it even possible to fight against them?

Chu Zhan Peng and Luo Xue were two of the eight high-officials and it had been that way for two years already. They were both in the Xuan Qi layer when they were selected, relying on their natural abilities, how strong had they become in the past two years? They, at least, must have broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer.

The Celestial Academy had no genius who could be compared with them, maybe Qiong Bi Luo and Du Bi had a chance, but Du Bi was now a cripple.

Of course, Lin Feng, had cut off Du Bi's arm, he could also be counted as one of the selected five. Lin Feng was easily able to cut off Du Bi's arm, even though his cultivation level was lower, he

could defeat cultivators at the Xuan Qi layer which meant that he was just as strong as someone in the Xuan Qi layer.

“I already chose one of the two people, for the other positions, you can compete.” Said the teacher again.

“Compete?” People in the crowd were secretly shaking their heads. Who would be willing to fight against one of the eight high-officials? They didn’t want to die early.

However, one of the fighters had already been chosen, it was probably Qiong Bi Luo, he was the top student of the academy, it had to be him.

“Who is the person you chose?” At that moment, a silhouette appeared in the distance. The crowd turned around and saw someone moving through the sky, looking majestic. It was precisely Qiong Bi Luo, the top student of the academy who everybody was talking about.

At that moment, he looked at the teacher and asked: “Who is the person you chose?”

Qiong Bi Luo seemed to care a lot about what others thought.

The crowd was thrilled, it was a matter of honour for Qiong Bi Luo, he was the top disciple of the academy. The one who was chosen was probably Qiong Bi Luo.

“It’s not you.” Immediately refuted the teacher which astonishing the entire crowd, they had guessed wrong.

Qiong Bi Luo frowned and said: “If it’s not me, could it be Lin Feng?”

“It’s not Lin Feng either, but you two would definitely be part of the five people. As far as the battle against the high-officials is concerned, Lin Feng and you have the same chance as everyone else: you can compete and the strongest will have the opportunity.”

“Is there even the need to compete? Since you decided that I wasn’t selected even though I should have been, does that mean that you think there are others out there who are stronger than me?”

Qiong Bi Luo was annoyed, the person who was chosen surprisingly wasn’t him, he was extremely annoyed.

“Maybe you will get the spot or maybe someone else will beat you to it.” Replied the teacher of the Xuan Qi layer when he saw how impolitely Qiong Bi Lu was talking to him and how annoyed he seemed to be. Even though Qiong Bi Luo was a genius, after all, he was only considered as such within the Celestial Academy. Considering how arrogantly he was talking to his seniors, it wouldn’t be surprising if, after becoming extremely strong, he started to look down on the Celestial Academy.

“Bullshit! Tell me, who could possibly defeat me?” Furiously

shouted Qiong Bi Luo.

“Lin Feng could.” Replied the teacher in a cold and detached way while narrowing his eyes.

“Lin Feng, Lin Feng and Lin Feng again! How can you people even compare me to him? I will prove to you all how foolish you are thinking that way!” Screamed Qiong Bi Luo in a cold tone. Back when he still hadn’t broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, he used to be extremely introverted and wasn’t arrogant at all, after breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer, he had started to grow extremely arrogant. This was because he became much stronger than Du Bi and could easily become the top ranked student of the academy, not being able to draw every single person’s attention and acknowledgement was making him furious.

Since some people still doubted him, he would need to take action and show everybody that he was the best.

Qiong Bi Luo turned around and looked at the palace where the military students lived, he then opened his mouth.

“Lin Feng, get the hell out here!”

“Lin Feng, get the hell out here.....”

His extremely loud voice resonated through the atmosphere for a while, it was extremely powerful. The sound of his voice continued to travel through the atmosphere and towards the horizon. Even

though the palace where the military students lived was very far, when a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer shouted furiously, their voice could cover a huge distance.

Inside the palace, everybody heard the voice, they couldn't help but shiver, someone was surprisingly telling Lin Feng to "get the hell out here".

Silhouettes flickered, more and more people were moving towards the public square.

Qiong Bi Luo was standing in the air looking at the crowd. He didn't see Lin Feng.

"Hmph, the person you speak about isn't courageous at all." Joked Qiong Bi Luo sounding cold and detached while glancing at the teacher.

"Did you ever consider that he's not in the academy?"

"Alright, let's assume he's not here, when he comes back, everybody, tell Lin Feng that I, Qiong Bi Luo, will teach him a lesson." Said Qiong Bi Luo coldly. Immediately after, he turned around, ready to leave but at that moment, an ice-cold voice spread through the air: "Wait!"

Qiong Bi Luo stopped when he heard and looked at the person who was talking on the ground. Surprisingly, it was a girl and she was wearing a fine veil over her face. She looked pure and holy.

“You said that you wanted to teach Lin Feng a lesson?” Said Meng Qing in an ice-cold way which made Qiong Bi Luo narrow his eyes and reply coldly: “Indeed, so what?”

Indeed.....

“Alright, what about you try and teach me that lesson?” Said Meng Qing. In the distance, a silhouette was moving towards them. That person was looking at Qiong Bi Luo and didn’t want him to leave. That person’s body was surrounded by burning flames which were diffusing a bright light.

That person was obviously Lin Feng!!

Chapter 351: Who Is Pathetic?

“Lin Feng.” When the crowd saw Lin Feng, they were surprised.

Qiong Bi Luo was saying that Lin Feng was cowardly and that he was the only one who had the right to fight against the high-officials, he was also just saying that he wanted to teach him a lesson, but now Lin Feng appeared in front of him.

“It seems like the fun is about to start.” Thought many people in the crowd as they grew excited. Qiong Bi Luo was strong enough to beat Du Bi, Lin Feng had also defeated Du Bi and cut off his arm with a single strike. Therefore, how could people not be impatient to see Lin Feng and Qiong Bi Luo battle?

That battle would definitely be marvellous, it was the most anticipated battle in the academy.

Everybody considered Qiong Bi Luo and Lin Feng as the two best students of the academy.

When Meng Qing saw Lin Feng arrive, her ice-cold Qi completely vanished, since he had come, Qiong Bi Luo would be left for him.

When Qiong Luo saw Lin Feng moving through the sky, he narrowed his eyes. Lin Feng was rushing through the sky looking completely relaxed, was he really still in the Ling Qi layer? Had he really not broken through to the Xuan Qi layer?

“Lin Feng, did you break through to the Xuan Qi layer?” Asked Qiong Bi Luo indifferently.

“Indeed.” Said Lin Feng while stopping and looking at Qiong Bi Luo. He didn’t hide anything. “You and me are the same, we are both cultivators at the Xuan Qi layer, I really don’t understand where your arrogance comes from and what makes you think that you could teach me anything!”

“Hmph!” snorted Qiong Bi Luo coldly. He felt relieved and didn’t even reply to Lin Feng, instead he just made of fun of him: “If you were a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer, I would have esteem for you, defeating a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, like Du Bi, when at the Ling Qi layer is something admirable, but now, it’s a different story, you actually broke through to the Xuan Qi layer which is the reason you defeated Du Bi, it’s not even something worth mentioning.” Said Qiong Bi Luo with disdain.

When the crowd heard that, they all agreed with him. That’s how it was, Lin Feng had surprisingly broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, no wonder Lin Feng was able to defeat Du Bi, but for his age, having broken through to the Xuan Qi layer was already something terrifying.

If they knew that Lin Feng was still in the Ling Qi layer when he defeated Du Bi and that he had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer after that, how would they react? Even Qiong Bi Luo wouldn’t believe such a tale.

Lin Feng didn’t bother to explain anything either. There were some things which he didn’t need to explain, he just needed to use

his actions to make people believe.

“It’s not worth mentioning? Strange, because when you defeated Du Bi after breaking through, you became even more arrogant and conceited, thinking that you were the best in the academy, so when you defeat Du Bi, it’s more prestigious than when I do?” Joked Lin Feng. Even though he heard that Qiong Bi Luo used to be introverted and modest in the past, that was the past, these days he had become extremely arrogant. Maybe because he no longer had any pressure and wasn’t concealing his real nature anymore, he wanted to be famous and admired by everyone.

“I already said it, I will prove to everybody that I am right, I will show everybody that you, Lin Feng, cannot be compared with the likes of me.” When Qiong Bi Luo finished talking, he released an ice-cold energy which surrounded Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, I initially just wanted to defeat you, nothing more, but since you fail to appreciate my kindness and behave in such an arrogant manner, I will cripple your cultivation. Just take this as a lesson and in the future, know your place.”

“Arrogant? Cripple his cultivation? Know his place?” Lin Feng was dumbstruck. Qiong Bi Luo kept provoking him and then dared say that he was the one being arrogant. Qiong Bi Luo considered himself as the only person who could be proud and others should just praise and worship him.

“Don’t you touch him!”

At that moment, a voice came from the distance. It wasn't a loud voice but it pierced through people's eardrums, making everyone freeze for a moment. That voice seemed to contain a sound attack.

People raised their heads and saw silhouettes on the horizon. These people were riding white cranes, the scene was magnificent.

“Huh?”

The crowd looked perplexed though, they were wondering who these people were to surprisingly prevent Qiong Bi Luo from attacking Lin Feng.

Of course, some people also started to shake when they saw these people approaching.

It was the Yu Clan, these people belonged to the Yu Clan. Why were they coming to the Celestial Academy?

Besides, they weren't allowing Qiong Bi Luo to fight against Lin Feng, was Lin Feng suddenly friendly with the Yu Clan? In the past, Lin Feng had had a huge conflict with the Bai Clan, which also involved the Yu Clan, besides, he also had direct conflicts with the Yu Clan.

Qiong Bi Luo frowned, he could recognize these people as well, especially their leader, he had met him once, it was an elder of the Yu Clan who was extremely strong.

“Could it be that he has an agreement with the Yu Clan?” Thought Qiong Bi Luo.

“His life is ours, the Yu Clan’s! Nobody can touch him!” Said the elder of the Yu Clan which made the people shiver. These people were really of the Yu Clan and had also really come because of Lin Feng, however, they hadn’t come to help him but to personally kill him.

Lin Feng had surprisingly offended the Yu Clan. The furious Yu Clan had thus dispatched so many strong cultivators to kill Lin Feng, He really was really extremely bold and daring.

Qiong Bi Luo was stupefied as well but immediately after, he found the situation amusing. He glanced at the people of the Yu Clan and then at Lin Feng.

“As expected, this guy overestimates himself. He doesn’t know how vast the world is.” Said Qiong Bi Luo indifferently. In Xue Yue, there were many geniuses but clans as strong as the Yu Clan, such strong clans were extremely rare. Relying on his natural abilities, Lin Feng provoked the Yu Clan, he really wanted to die.

Lin Feng was just an ignorant fool.

“As you wish, I initially wanted to cripple his cultivation but since he offended the Yu Clan, you can have him.” Said Qiong Bi Luo as if he had given a gift to the Yu Clan.

Whoever disposed of him, it seemed like he was definitely going to suffer with no possibility of escape.

“Why do you want to cripple his cultivation?” Asked the elder of the Yu Clan.

“I can’t bear the sight of his face so I wanted to cripple his cultivation.” Replied Qiong Bi Luo while slightly nodding and smiling, as if he was talking about something trivial.

“He can’t bear the sight him, so he wants to cripple his cultivation?! What nerve!” Thought the crowd. Qiong Bi Luo initially disdained Lin Feng and didn’t want to fight against him.

“Alright, initially, I wanted to attack personally but I like your reason, Lin Feng is yours, you can cripple his cultivation but don’t kill him.” Said the elder in a cold and detached tone. Qiong Bi Luo was a bit surprised but smiled immediately after. He then cupped his hands obediently and said politely: “Since it’s that way, I will not restrain myself anymore and cripple his cultivation, his life will remain yours.”

“Yes.” Nodded the elder. They seemed to be in perfect harmony as if they were hunting and Lin Feng was their prey.

Qiong Bi Luo slowly turned around and looked at Lin Feng. A mocking smile appeared on the corner of his mouth.

“Lin Feng, you are pathetic!” Said Qiong Bi Luo. That time, Lin

Feng didn't say anything, pure sun Qi started revolving around his fist.

Immediately after, Lin Feng rushed forward and in a flash, as if he teleported there, he appeared in front of Qiong Bi Luo.

Lin Feng was covered in flames, from head to toe. It was extremely dazzling. Pure sun Qi was violently burning around his fist, it no longer looked like it was a fist but instead looked like a small sun.

Lin Feng was surrounded by intense flames, these flames surrounded his fist which shot like a meteor towards Qiong Bi Luo.

Everything happened in an instant.

Qiong Bi Luo's facial expression drastically changed. He quickly condensed his pure Qi to block Lin Feng's fist. He had also thought about dodging but considering how arrogant he was acting towards Lin Feng, did he have the face to dodge the attack? Lin Feng fist was much too quick, he couldn't dodge even if he wanted to, all he could do was defend against it.

“BOOM!”

An extremely violent and brutal Qi spread through the atmosphere, the fist covered in flames rushed through the air and the crowd could see Qiong Bi Luo's body being sent flying backwards. Surprisingly, his body was engulfed in flames. When

Lin Feng's fist struck, his body was engulfed in scorching hot flames.

Pure Qi was released which extinguished the flames on his body but Qiong Bi Luo was still burnt black. Lin Feng's eyes looked incredibly cold even though they were surrounded by flames.

“You talk crap, considering how weak you are, you are the pathetic one.” Said Lin Feng after which a hideous expression appeared on Qiong Bi Luo's face.

Chapter 352: Egotistic

People raised their head to look at Lin Feng who was surrounded by golden flames.

“It seems like we underestimated Lin Feng.” Thought the crowd. Lin Feng’s fist was powerful enough to blow Qiong Bi Luo away, besides, his body was engulfed by flames. Lin Feng wasn’t by any means weak, he was much stronger than they had thought.

Many of them had still thought that Lin Feng couldn’t compete with Qiong Bi Luo, but they were proved wrong. It was possible that Lin Feng was even at the same level of strength as Qiong Bi Luo.

But that would make an even better fight, the crowd was even more excited. Being able to witness such a battle was something they longed for day and night.

“Not bad, at least that battle will not be too boring. If you were too weak, it would be pointless to fight.” Said Qiong Bi Luo who didn’t look glum anymore, a cold smile had appeared on his face. He even released a little bit of his battle energy and looked very excited.

The stronger Lin Feng was, the more exciting the battle would be, Qiong Bi Luo hoped that Lin Feng would be stronger than he expected.

“How egotistic.” joked Lin Feng when he saw Qiong Bi Luo’s

forced smile. Considering his temperament, Qiong Bi Luo wanted to destroy Lin Feng in one attack to display his strength and feed his ego, that was the only way for him to look prestigious. However, what he just said was just a way to convince himself that he was stronger than Lin Feng, he was being extremely self-centred.

“I will make things even more interesting for you then.” Said Lin Feng and immediately after, a sword appeared in his hands. It was bright and illuminated the entire atmosphere. It was impossible to escape from its dazzling brightness, that sword seemed to be burning with the power of the sun, the sword was like a sun illuminating the world.

Many rays of light emerged from the sword making the crowd narrow their eyes, they couldn't look at it. Their hearts started pounding, how scary! Lin Feng's sword was scorching hot like the sun.

“Blue Void Spirit!” When Qiong Bi Luo saw that sword, his heart twitched, immediately after, he released his spirit. Raindrops appeared behind him and then turned into a curtain of heavy rain.

However, while Qiong Bi Luo was releasing his spirit, Lin Feng rushed forward and his sword light blinded many of the onlookers.

That sword was a radiant sword.

Qiong Bi Luo's facial expression drastically changed and his heavy rain curtain started moving towards Lin Feng's sword to

isolate it. At the same time, he retreated back at lightning speed.

“Crrrr.... Crrrrr....” The rain curtain of the blue void spirit was sliced apart and then Lin Feng’s dazzling sword slashed into Qiong Bi Luo’s chest. Dark red blood splashed through the air and a deep wound appeared on Qiong Bi Luo’s chest. If he had been a little bit slower or if he hadn’t used his heavy rain curtain, the sword would have sliced his body into two parts.

“You’re even weaker than I thought.” Said Lin Feng while looking at Qiong Bi Luo. He didn’t kill him, he basically didn’t care about Qiong Bi Luo. The whole fight was because Qiong Bi Luo wanted to use Lin Feng to prove how strong he was to everyone in the academy. Lin Feng thus decided to “help him achieve his aim” and show him how ridiculous he was being.

These two silhouettes were floating in the sky, Lin Feng looked carefree while Qiong Bi Luo looked weak as he was struggling to stay in the air, while looking at the scene, the crowd couldn’t believe their eyes. What they thought was the complete opposite of the reality. Qiong Bi Luo should have been the arrogant victor after defeating Lin Feng in one strike, however at that moment, the reality was completely different.

Lin Feng didn’t fight often but each time he did, it was extremely brutal.

Each time, the crowd got to know his personality better. At the time when he had fought against Hei Mo, Lin Feng was unknown and Hei Mo was one of the top ten students of the academy, everybody saw the result.

The second time that Lin Feng had fought at the Celestial Academy was against Du Gu Shang, in the end, Du Gu Shang had ended up kneeling in front of Lin Feng.

The third time was against against Du Bi and he had cut off his arm, it was a shocking and amazing battle.

And then, when everybody thought that Qiong Bi Luo would easily defeat Lin Feng, Lin Feng surprised them again.

Lin Feng said that Qiong Bi Luo was much weaker than he thought. The crowd had thought that Lin Feng wouldn't be able to withstand a single attack and they believed that Lin Feng would inevitably lose the battle. But Lin Feng didn't even care about Qiong Bi Luo. Lin Feng had actually always looked beyond Qiong Bi Luo and had never considered him as an opponent or rival.

“Is that so?” Said Qiong Bi Luo looking extremely sharp. Behind him, his blue void spirit twinkled and flashed. He then whispered: “Blue Void Underworld!”

Lin Feng could cut through the raindrop curtain but how would he break out from the blue void underworld.

In the sky, raindrop threads appeared and immediately transformed into a raindrop curtain which started to pour down around Lin Feng.

“Let me see how you will escape this.” Said Qiong Bi Luo in an ice-cold way when he saw Lin Feng being surrounded by the blue void spirit.

“Are you looking closely?” Said a cold and indifferent voice from behind the raindrop curtain. The silhouette in the middle of the raindrop curtain split in two and suddenly there were multiple Lin Feng’s, it was an afterimage left by his quick movements. After dodging, Lin Feng was still standing in the middle of the raindrop curtain and looking down at Qiong Bi Luo indifferently, as if he wasn’t even moved by such trivial things.

The blue void underworld was invisible and inaudible but it was real, raindrops immediately started pouring, the fluctuations were very subtle and it was almost impossible to dodge that attack because by the time a cultivator sensed that it was close, it was already too late, however, Lin Feng could perceive even the tiniest movement due to his earth fusion. Even the slightest change couldn’t escape his awareness. At the moment when the raindrops became visible, Lin Feng had already moved.

“How is this possible?” Whispered Qiong Bi Luo who was stupefied. Surprisingly, Lin Feng had already dodged the blue void spirit and appeared behind it. How was that possible?

“It’s a coincidence, I must be right, he’s just lucky and luckily managed to dodge at the right time.” Qiong Bi Luo’s eyes looked ice-cold. In the sky, the raindrop curtain dispersed and Lin Feng appeared, Qiong Bi Luo and Lin Feng stared at each other.

Suddenly, Lin Feng disappeared from his initial position,

however, Lin Feng's initial position was suddenly attacked by the blue void spirit.

Qiong Bi Luo was astonished, was it a coincidence? Was Lin Feng really just lucky?

The best way to dodge the blue void underworld was to be constantly changing position not giving any opportunity for the attacks to begin, however, Lin Feng had dodged it the first time, and the second time, but Lin Feng just been standing there waiting for it and still dodged it as easily as before.

“It seems like you rely on your worthless little spirit to act so arrogantly. Without the power of your spirit, you're nothing, you wouldn't even be Du Bi's opponent.” Said Lin Feng when he saw that Qiong Bi Luo was looking desperate. Lin Feng was exasperated, a cultivator's spirit was linked to their cultivation, it was very important for a cultivator, an extremely strong spirit helped a cultivator become stronger much faster, but if a cultivator forgot about cultivating himself and only relied on his spirit, his expertise became extremely limited to the power of his spirit, in the end, they would be a worthless cultivator.

Cultivation required a spirit, but by only relying on a spirit's power, a cultivator would never become truly strong themselves.

At that moment, Lin Feng had taught Qiong Bi Luo a good lesson. The crowd agreed with him. They realized that Qiong Bi Luo hadn't ever shown his strength. He always just relied on his spirit, but because his spirit was extremely strong, people had forgotten about his actual strength. They had just always considered Qiong

Bi Luo as an extremely strong cultivator and believed that Lin Feng couldn't compete with him.

But the reality was far from that.

“You said that you wanted to cripple my cultivation and teach me a lesson, well then I will cripple your cultivation so that in the future, you will know your place.” Said Lin Feng which stupefied the crowd. Qiong Bi Luo was acting incredibly egocentric, cripple Lin Feng's so in the future, he would know his place? What would be the point of knowing one's place at that moment anyway? Lin Feng was going apply the principle of a tooth for a tooth, Qiong Bi Luo had said this previously to Lin Feng, so Lin Feng just repeated it back to him.

Lin Feng slightly raised his fist and flames appeared around his fists, they were scorching hot. The temperature increased and it quickly became an immense heat.

“Die.” Said Lin Feng, deadly energy filled the atmosphere, he rushed forwards and his fist bombarded the atmosphere, moving straight towards Qiong Bi Luo.

“Blue Void Drizzle!”

This time, Qiong Bi Luo reacted much faster and rain started to pour down, it looked like a river was falling from the sky. It blocked Lin Feng's path to prevent him from moving closer.

“You’re not the only person who possesses a spirit.” Smiled Lin Feng. A purple glow started to zigzag through the air towards Qiong Bi Luo which made his facial expression drastically change. His blue void drizzle was obstructing Lin Feng’s path so he could not use it to block the purple spirit or he would need to deal with Lin Feng’s fist instead.

“Blue Void Underworld!” Furiously shouted Qiong Bi Luo, unable to resist much more, his silhouette flickered and he suddenly rushed towards the Yu Clan which astonished the crowd.

“His life is yours.”

Qiong Bi Luo looked at the elder of the Yu Clan.

Lin Feng slowly turned to look at Qiong Bi Luo, Lin Feng looked terribly amused. Those people who only cared about their prestige and honour were extremely arrogant but inside, they were just cowardly insects.

Arrogant as they were, when they faced danger, they always resorted to unscrupulous or cowardly methods, but the cultivators who had lofty and unyielding characters would continue fighting even if dying was the outcome, those types of people would fight to protect their honour and integrity.

Chapter 353: The Guess

When the elder of the Yu Clan heard Qiong Bi Luo , he looked at him and smiled in a deep and profound way.

“You said that you wanted to cripple his cultivation yourself, I agreed but now, you have lost.”

“Huh?” Qiong Bi Luo frowned and looked surprised, he remained silent for a moment and then added: “Yes, I did lose, therefore, I want to give him to you.”

“Want? You lost, who cares about you want? I don’t need you to ‘give’ me anything, when you finish your fight, I will attack, but not before that.” Said the elder in cold and indifferent way while shaking his head, which made the crowd sigh.

How lamentable, the crowd had thought that Qiong Bi Luo was the best student of the academy and Lin Feng the second best student, but the reality was much different, they were dumbstruck. The person they considered as the best student couldn’t even be compared with Lin Feng. Lin Feng had easily defeated Qiong Bi Luo.

Then, because Qiong Bi Luo was defeated, he wanted to ‘give’ Lin Feng to the Yu Clan but the people of the Yu Clan refused.

The elder’s smile could also be perceived as a threat.

Qiong Bi Luo looked at the elder's cold eyes and immediately turned around again. He looked at Lin Feng and said: "This time, I lost, Lin Feng, you are the best student in the Celestial Academy, that honour is now yours. Let's shake hands and make peace, alright?"

When Lin Feng heard Qiong Bi Luo, he was stupefied, Lin Feng found all of this very amusing. Qiong Bi Luo had thought that he would easily defeat Lin Feng and wanted to cripple his cultivation to prove how strong he was, since he had lost, he wanted to shake hands and make peace? Was such a thing even possible?

"Didn't you want to cripple my cultivation?" Said Lin Feng with a cold smile, making Qiong Bi Luo narrow his eyes. He turned around again, looked at the elder and said: "What do you want me to do?"

"Join my clan, the Yu Clan." Said the elder sounding cold and indifferent.

"Alright, but there is one condition." Replied Qiong Bi Luo who had no other choice.

"A condition? Then forget about it, the Yu Clan doesn't lack people wanting to join." Replied the elder while smiling coldly which astonished Qiong Bi Luo. He then said in a weak voice: "Alright, I will leave everything behind me and become a member of the Yu Clan."

"I'm not talking about being a member, I'm talking about

becoming a servant. From today, you will do everything that the Yu Clan requests of you.” Said the elder with an ice-cold smile. A member? Ridiculous, even though his natural abilities were not bad, with his temperament he was doomed to make enemies, why would they want him if they couldn’t dispose of him?

When Qiong Bi Luo heard the word “servant”, he pulled a long face. The Yu Clan wanted him to become their servant, how abominable!

The crowd was also astonished. The elder of the Yu Clan wanted one their fellow students, of the Celestial Academy, to become a mere servant. Making him no better than a slave, wasn’t that a humiliation for the Celestial Academy?

“I will give you ten seconds to think it over.” Said the elder of the Yu Clan coldly which made Qiong Bi Luo’s heart violently twitch. He, Qiong Bi Luo, was going to become a servant?

His face turned deathly pale, Qiong Bi Luo looked at Lin Feng again while gnashing his teeth and biting his lip, blood even streaked from his lip.

“I..... Agree.” Replied Qiong Bi Luo. He finally replied, Qiong Bi Luo had actually accepted to become a servant of the Yu Clan.

“Pheeew.....” The crowd down on the ground was sighing. Hatred invaded their eyes, Qiong Bi Luo was really audacious, he surprisingly became one of the Yu Clan’s servants, who would want that kind of genius? He was scum, a worthless human being.

The crowd felt like they had all just lost face. A genius of their academy, the one they even considered as the best student of the entire academy, was going to become the Yu Clan's servant, what a joke! When they remembered how arrogant he used to be and how they worshiped him, they felt disgust from the bottom of their hearts, Qiong Bi Luo was far from ever being as great as Lin Feng.

“Very good, so you are now the Yu Clan's servant.” Said the elder while smiling, he then said indifferently: “Come and stand behind me.”

Qiong Bi Luo lowered his head and moved behind the elder, while glancing at Lin Feng. He looked extremely glum. Everything that was happening was because of Lin Feng, if Lin Feng wasn't there, Qiong Bi Luo would still be the best student of the Celestial Academy and everybody would adore him. How could things end this way? Everything had gone wrong because of Lin Feng.

At that moment, Qiong Bi Luo had already forgotten that he was the one who had been provoking Lin Feng all the time, he wanted to defeat Lin Feng and cripple his cultivation to prove his strength to everyone.

“How pitiful!” Said Lin Feng coldly while looking at Qiong Bi Luo. Even though Qiong Bi Luo had lost, his talent was unquestionable, apart from Lin Feng, Qiong Bi Luo was also a dazzling star of the Celestial Academy, but now, he was reduced to being a servant, that was pitiful.

“What is pitiful? You, Lin Feng, wouldn’t even get the chance to become a Yu Clan servant. You are doomed, Lin Feng, the only possible escape is death and nobody will save you.”

The elder was staring at Lin Feng with clear killing intent. Lin Feng had to die here.

“Are you trying to intimidate me?” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. He then said slowly: “This... is... the... Celestial... Academy...”

The elder frowned and immediately adopted a normal facial expression again before saying in a cold way: “So what?”

“Regardless of how you view the Celestial Academy, you shouldn’t cause trouble here, you should know that much better than me.”

“No, I don’t know what you mean and nothing will stop me from killing you.” Said the elder while smiling coldly and indifferently. He then moved forwards and jumped from the white crane. However, at the same time, the sound of a zither spread through the atmosphere, only one sound spread through the air but it immediately caused the elder to stop.

The elder raised his head and looked at the direction that the zither sound was coming from, he suddenly felt relieved.

“It’s the Eternal Misty Rain, I greet senior.” Said the elder of the

Yu Clan.

The zither sound from the distance startled everybody except for Lin Feng who was well aware of who it came from.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng, the zither sound a moment ago came from him.

“Get lost!” These words echoed through the atmosphere.

That voice didn’t sound furious at all, it sounded calm, serene, soft and gentle but the elder’s heart twitched. Who would dare to refuse Yan Yu Ping Sheng?

“I will of course obey senior Yan Yu’s order.” Said the elder of the Yu Clan sounding calm. Immediately after, he turned around, raised his hand and waved, immediately, all the members of the Yu Clan retreated.

Qiong Bi Luo was astonished. Leave? They would just leave like that? They weren’t going to kill Lin Feng?

Eternal Misty Rain, what did that mean? And who was that senior Yan Yu?

Qiong Bi Luo coldly glanced at Lin Feng and saw that he was casually moving past the Yu Clan, which stupefied him. He was acting so calm.

Very quickly, the Yu Clan disappeared without trace.

Lin Feng looked at the people who were leaving as he was leaving the public square.

“They all left?”

The crowd looked at the vast and broad sky while remaining silent. The mighty Yu Clan immediately left because of the order that senior Yan Yu gave?

Who was Yan Yu Sheng Ping in reality? It seemed like he was even more majestic and powerful than Long Ding, the members of the Yu Clan didn't even care about Long Ding, but they seemed to be scared of Yan Yu.

Everybody wanted to understand the situation, but one thing that was clear to them was Lin Feng's position as the best student of the Celestial Academy , nobody could deny that.

Lin Feng arrived at the peach orchard, he wasn't moving through the sky anymore, he was walking on the ground. He slowly entered the pavilion and Yan Yu Sheng Ping was still playing the zither there. It seemed like the thing that he dedicated his life to was the zither.

“Teacher, what is going on?” Asked Lin Feng. Even though the Yu Clan was powerful and wanted to kill him, after the words said

by Yan Yu Sheng Ping, they immediately left without a word.

“They are investigating you, they want to know every single detail of your background.” Replied Yan Yu Sheng Ping sounding indifferent which surprised Lin Feng a little bit. They wanted to know everything about him? Was there anything interesting even worth knowing?

“Don’t you think the events that happened in the Lovesick Forest seemed a bit strange?” Asked Yan Yu Sheng Ping while raising his head to look at Lin Feng, which made Lin Feng suddenly realise something. What surprised Lin Feng even more was that Yan Yu Sheng Ping seemed to have the answers.

“It is very strange, indeed.” Replied Lin Feng while slightly nodding his head. It seemed like Duan Wu Ya had planned everything. Lin Feng killed Yu Tian Xing and Yu Qiu had come to avenge him, but instead he had his cultivation crippled by the people from the Lovesick Forest. Why had the people of the Lovesick Forest come to help him? Lin Feng didn’t feel like randomly guessing but Yan Yu Sheng Ping was creating even more questions.

“Lin Feng, they think that you might have some sort of connection with the Lovesick Forest. As they are unable to find the real truth, they came to the academy in an attempt to find out.” Replied Yan Yu Sheng Ping, but Lin Feng shivered. Yan Yu Sheng Ping’s voice was soft and calm giving Lin Feng the impression that he was a wise and farsighted man.

Perhaps Lin Feng had a connection with them!

Yan Yu Sheng Ping was actually a very straightforward person.

Chapter 354: The Portrait

In the Imperial City, people thought that the Yue Clan was the clan with the most mysterious, they handled affairs very discreetly, to the extent that the juniors didn't even know why their clan was so prestigious, they were just used to hearing it said by others. Sometimes the elders would talk about how nobody dared to offend the Yue Clan.

In the eastern part of the city, there was a chain of mountains which were covered with bamboo forests, it was a magnificent landscape. Between two of the mountains, there was a bright green field on which there was a palace and a courtyard built, this was the location of the Yue Clan.

At that moment, in the middle of the bamboo forest, two people were playing chess. One of them was middle-aged with dashing eyebrows, starry eyes, and he looked majestic, the other one was an old man with white hair, but he still looked vigorous and energetic.

“Father, Meng He has been having trouble recently.” At that moment, the majestic middle-aged man spoke while making his move.

The white-haired old man didn't reply and instead was looking at the chessboard, he looked irresolute but after a while, he made his move and said: “Even though some pieces are outside of the game, they can still influence its course.”

The middle-aged man remained silent for a moment while touching various pieces irresolutely without making his move. He then said: “Well, should we allow them to stay outside or should we extinguish the fire!”

When the middle aged man finished talking, he made his move.

“Considering her temperament, it would be better if she didn’t get too infuriated. Have you ever seen the child?” Asked the old man sounding aggrieved.

The middle aged man nodded and replied: “He’s a genius, not much difference between him and Lin Hai. If he works hard, he will become an incredible genius.”

“It’s really an ill-fated relationship.” Sighed the old man. In his mind, there was an image of a fearless young man.

“How’s Tian Chen?” Asked the old man again.

This time, the middle-aged man slightly shook his head and only said one word: “No.”

“Give him some freedom, don’t restrain him too much.” Said the old man while nodding.

“Father, how should we handle it?” Asked the handsome middle-aged man.

The old man remained silent for a moment and then immediately stood up, he gazed into the distance and said: “The event of the decade is quickly approaching, bring Tian Ming back, and if Tian Ming gets angry, speak of the marriage alliance!”

When he finished talking, the old man left, when the middle-aged man heard the old man, a sharp light flashed in his eyes. He then silently nodded, those days, in the Imperial City, the situation was very unstable which was a great opportunity, they needed to bring Tian Ming back to the Imperial City.

.....

In the middle of the peach orchard, Lin Feng was silent, he still couldn't figure out with whom he had connections with.

“Teacher, you helped me once again.” Said Lin Feng to Yan Yu Sheng Ping, who had helped him a few times.

“It wasn't me, I was just told to ensure your safety within the territory of the Celestial Academy.” Replied Yan Yu Sheng Ping while shaking his head which stupefied Lin Feng.

“Who asked you?” Asked Lin Feng.

“I should take you somewhere.” Replied Yan Yu Sheng Ping while raising his head. Lin Feng nodded and then only saw Yan Yu Sheng Ping put his zither away, shake his body and immediately jump up

into the air.

“How fast!” Lin Feng was stupefied, he then stomped his feet onto the ground, condensed some pure Qi and his body shot into the air like an arrow leaving the bow and rushed towards Yan Yu Sheng Ping, trying to catch up with his speed.

Yan Yu Sheng Ping was leading the way and Lin Feng was following behind, they were rushing through the air together.

People of the Qi layer could jump a hundred meters into the air, while people of the Ling Qi layer could, relying on one single jump, travel a thousand meters into the air, and they were even able to stay there for a very short time.

Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, provided that they had enough pure Qi could fly through the air. However, cultivators at the lower layers of the Xuan Qi layer couldn't fly for long distances, because it required too much pure Qi, especially when moving at high speeds.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng was already able to easily fly through the air, authentically strong cultivators had the power to fly through the skies and destroy mountains, these weren't lies.

Lin Feng was struggling to catch up to Yan Yu Ping Sheng, as if he was meticulously being tested, forcing him to use his full strength to keep up.

At that moment, under Lin Feng's feet, the pure Qi was scorching hot, just like an intense fire. He didn't stop moving forward, and at the same time, sunlight was penetrating into Lin Feng's body. His entire body was like a burning meteorite. Lin Feng was also extremely quick and closely followed Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

Lin Feng was the only person who knew just how exhausting it was to keep up for this long.

Lin Feng also didn't know how long they flew but finally, at some point, Yan Yu Ping Sheng slowed down and said to Lin Feng: "We've arrived, let's get down."

When he finished talking, Yan Yu Ping Sheng swooped down to the ground.

Lin Feng looked under his feet, there was a magnificent palace surrounded by a tranquil forest, which made his heartbeat accelerate.

The Imperial Palace, the place where Yan Yu Ping Sheng had brought Lin Feng was the Imperial Palace!

Lin Feng looked at Yan Yu Ping Sheng on the ground and felt exhausted. Flying through the sky was a great feeling but it consumed too much energy, the spirit was willing but the flesh was weak.

Lin Feng attentively observed the surroundings, it looked like a

quiet mountain village. There wasn't only a magnificent and majestic palace, but there were also rivers, mountains and bamboo forests, just like a microcosm. That place was gorgeous, Lin Feng found the scenery pleasing to both the eye and the mind.

“Huh?”

At that moment, Lin Feng was a bit surprised, he could clearly perceive that in some dark places, people were staring at them: these were the guards.

But Lin Feng felt at ease, in the palace, that was absolutely normal.

“Let's go in.” Said Yan Yu Ping Sheng as he started walking. Surprisingly, they could freely wander in the manor, there was a stone bridge and many covered corridors, Yan Yu Sheng Ping seemed to be extremely familiar with the palace.

“It seems like teacher's social status is extraordinary.” Thought Lin Feng while looking at Yan Yu Ping Sheng's back.

A moment after, Lin Feng and Yan Yu Ping Sheng arrived in front of a stream and a forest. Finally, there were some people, many people wanted to penetrate into the depths of the forest, however, two females were preventing them from entering. Nobody could get in. These young people had no choice but to leave.

At that moment, they also noticed Lin Feng and Yan Yu Ping

Sheng, they couldn't help but look nervous.

“Senior Yan Yu, can you take us inside please?” Asked the people walking towards Yan Yu Ping Sheng but he just slightly shook his head and said: “If she's willing to see you, she will.”

After saying this, Yan Yu Ping Sheng and Lin Feng entered the forest. Everybody was stupefied when they saw that and some people shouted: “Well then why is he allowed inside?”

“Because she desperately wants to see him again.” Replied Yan Yu Ping Sheng indifferently. After that, Lin Feng could clearly sense some cold energy piercing his back.

They entered the forest, Around them were cliffs and precipices, they were as clear as mirrors, there were also many trees and rivers. Mountains, water, grass, everything was there.

The atmosphere was filled with the sounds of the flowing streams and rivers. A gorgeous and splendid silhouette was standing in front of a precipice, she was painting something. Maybe she was too concentrated but she didn't notice Lin Feng and Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

Yan Yu Ping Sheng smiled at Lin Feng and nodded. Immediately after, he turned around and left Lin Feng there. He didn't have to say anything, Lin Feng already understood.

At the moment when he had seen that it was the Imperial Palace,

Lin Feng had already thought about it, in the Imperial Palace, there was only one person who was interested in Lin Feng and who could have asked Yan Yu Ping Sheng to protect Lin Feng. Of course, it was her.

Lin Feng walked normally, slowly approached that lithe and graceful silhouette. When he arrived near her, he clearly saw the image in the painting, which abruptly made his heartbeat accelerate.

“It’s not the same. There is no romantic charm.” said a soft and gentle voice. Immediately after, she raised her long and slender hand, she wanted to erase everything.

“Am I really that handsome!” Interrupted Lin Feng which made her hand stop in the air. She turned her head and saw Lin Feng. Her cheeks turned red in a flash.

However, Lin Feng was staring at the portrait on the wall. Divine, majestic, long fluttering hair, it depicted a free and unrestrained young man, if it wasn’t Lin Feng, who else could it be?

“Lin Feng, how did you get in here?” Asked Duan Xin Ye, she had never thought that Lin Feng would suddenly appear, she was pleasantly surprised.

“Yan Yu Ping Sheng brought me here.” Replied Lin Feng. Yan Yu Ping Sheng had silently brought Lin Feng inside but Lin Feng still didn’t know exactly what the relationship was between Yan Yu

Ping Sheng and Duan Xin Ye.

“Oh, no wonder.” Whispered Duan Xin Ye. She knew that Yan Yu Ping Sheng was giving her an opportunity.

“Xin Ye, you and teacher Yan Yu....?” Asked Lin Feng curiously.

“He’s my teacher, he teaches me to play the zither.” Replied Duan Xin Ye which relieved Lin Feng. No wonder Yan Yu Ping Sheng could come and leave as he wished. He was the princess’ music teacher, that was, indeed, an extremely important position.

Chapter 355: Touching

Other than the young people, a moment ago, there were also nobles with close ties to the imperial family who were extremely respectful towards Yan Yu Ping Sheng, it was obvious that Yan Yu Ping Sheng's social status was extraordinary.

“Yan Yu Ping Sheng surprisingly favours the princess.” Thought Lin Feng, otherwise, he wouldn't have brought Lin Feng here to give her the opportunity to meet him again.

“Lin Feng, I'm leaving, you can head back on your own later.”

At that moment, a very loud voice spread through the atmosphere, and Lin Feng saw a silhouette in the distance, it was Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

Lin Feng was a bit surprised and smiled wryly while shaking his head. Yan Yu Ping Sheng was leaving Lin Feng behind in the Imperial Palace.

Duan Xin Ye also looked surprised when she saw Yan Yu Ping Sheng leave. She immediately said: “Lin Feng, what do you think about my painting skill?”

“The painting has much more charm than I do.” Lin Feng smiled. Duan Xin Ye's portrait was really splendid.

“You're just being nice!” Whispered Duan Xin Ye while looking

shy. She then pulled Lin Feng and said: “Come with me.”

Duan Xin Ye took Lin Feng to a cave, when they arrived near the cave, Lin Feng discovered a place of exceptional charm and beauty, the pieces of furniture were in a picturesque scene, it looked extremely graceful and elegant.

A moment after, Duan Xin Ye brought Lin Feng into a room inside the cave. Inside, there was the sweet fragrance of a young girl, the room looked exactly like a young lady’s sleeping chamber.

“Lin Feng, I live here, I like calmness and tranquillity so I decided to live here. Nobody can bother me when I’m here.” Said Duan Xin Ye in a soft and gentle voice, immediately after, she pointed to some paintings.

When Lin Feng saw these portraits, he was stupefied, the entire wall was covered in portraits, all of them were of the same person: Lin Feng.

When he saw these portraits, Lin Feng felt his heart tremble, if he hadn’t met Meng Qing, then he would have engaged in a relationship with Duan Xin Ye, the beautiful princess, without hesitation.

“Lin Feng, aren’t these portraits better than the one outside?” Duan Xin Ye was looking at Lin Feng with her beautiful and limpid eyes, looking slightly impatient.

“They are all very beautiful.” Replied Lin Feng.

Duan Xin Ye’s eyes twinkled, she then pulled Lin Feng towards the edge of the bed and said: “Lin Feng, sit down, I want you to taste the tea I make.”

“This.....” Lin Feng looked embarrassed. That was Duan Xin Ye’s room, and that bed was the bed in which a princess slept, it even smelt like her, Lin Feng was embarrassed to be pulled onto the bed.

“Lin Feng, are you still embarrassed about such things when you are with me?” Said Duan Xin Ye softly, she then immediately started boiling water for the tea.

Lin Feng smiled wryly and looked at Duan Xin Ye who looked really clumsy, he couldn’t help but smile and shake his head, she was a princess, she probably rarely did such things herself.

Lin Feng looked around him, while looking at all the portraits of him, he was wondering if Duan Xin Ye was thinking about him every day.

“Xin Ye, let me do it.” Said Lin Feng walking towards Duan Xin Ye trying to take the cup that she was holding.

“No need. I can do it.” Said Duan Xin Ye while drawing back her hand. Then, water splashed, Duan Xin Ye screamed and then the cup fell to the ground.

Duan Xin Ye wanted to catch the teacup but Lin Feng grabbed her hand and prevented her from moving, then the sound of the teacup breaking into pieces broke the silence. However, Duan Xin Ye seemed like she hadn't even heard it, she just lowered her head and looked at the palm of her hand.

"It's just a teacup, it doesn't matter." Pure Qi started undulating in Lin Feng's hand which was holding onto her hand and started to heal her minor burns. He then opened his hand again.

Duan Xin Ye was looking at the hand leaving hers and she suddenly felt a bit sad yet she smiled warmly and gently.

"Let's go take a walk." Said Lin Feng. He found it too strange to stay in Duan Xin Ye's room.

"Alright." Said Duan Xin Ye in a soft tone while nodding. Then the two of them left the cave.

"Lin Feng, I would like to ask you a question."

While leaving the cave, Duan Xin Ye had remained silent for a while and then finally responded.

"What is it?" Asked Lin Feng while looking at Duan Xin Ye's strange facial expression. He had the impression that Duan Xin Ye was avoiding his eyes.

Duan Xin Ye looked at Lin Feng, her lips shook, she looked nervous but she finally found the courage to ask: “Lin Feng, that beautiful woman who wears white clothes, do you like her?”

Lin Feng was a bit dumbstruck, he wouldn't have thought Duan Xin Ye would ask him such a question.

“Yes, I do.” Nodded Lin Feng immediately. That ice goddess was always silently standing by his side, she was like his own shadow, without asking for anything in return, everything she did was for him. Even though she was ice-cold, Lin Feng could feel her love, especially during the times when he was hurt or in danger, Meng Qing became so furious that her body started to freeze. She only cared about Lin Feng's well being, more than her own.

Duan Xin Ye had always known about her, but she couldn't help it, she looked extremely sad.

They remained silent for some time and arrived near a stream and sat down on a stone.

Duan Xin Ye picked up some small rocks and threw them into the stream which made the water ripple.

“Lin Feng, are you going to marry her?” Asked Duan Xin Ye, without restraining herself, while looking at the water ripples.

“I will.” Replied Lin Feng resolutely and straightforward. He would, of course, marry Meng Qing. They really loved each other

so they had to make an official pledge of love.

“She’s really lucky.” Replied Duan Xin Ye in a weak voice.”I also want to be with the one I love and stay with him. I want to watch the sunrise and the sunset everyday with him, I want to watch the water of the streams flow.”

Lin Feng was speechless. He obviously understood that the person she loved was him. All these portraits of him made her intentions clear.

“But I must say it clearly, for the one I love, I can abandon everything, it’s not a problem at all.” Said Duan Xin Ye in a low voice almost as if she was whispering to herself. Immediately after, she turned her head and looked at Lin Feng while smiling in a warm and gentle way.

Some people, If they missed an opportunity, had regrets their entire life. Since this was the current situation, why not seize any possibility and chance?

“Lin Feng, if I abandon my status as a princess, abandon my home, and the status as the first wife, would you accept me?”

Duan Xin Ye’s voice was soft, moving and touching. She had the majestic social status of a princess, she could get married with any extremely wealthy or powerful person and millions of people would fall to her beauty, but because of Lin Feng, she was willing to abandon everything, her social status, her home, and even the title of wife, because Lin Feng said that he would marry Meng

Qing.

In other words, Duan Xin Ye was asking to become Lin Feng's concubine.

Her love for him was so deep, how could he remain calm?

While looking at that beautiful smile, Lin Feng's lips shook, he didn't know what to say, he didn't know what he wanted.

"If you don't like me in that way, I can just stay by your side and become your servant, I would serve the both of you." Continued Duan Xin Ye with the same magnificent smile on her face, it was extremely touching and moving.

Lin Feng's lips shook but immediately after, he stretched his hands, put them around Duan Xin Ye's shoulders and pulled her into his arms, he then embraced her and pulled her head into his chest.

With her beauty, elegance, gentle nature, with such a deep and pure love, Lin Feng couldn't remain unaffected, it was impossible for him not to be moved, only a cold-blooded animal would remain unaffected by such a pure act of love. The problem was that in Lin Feng's heart, there was only Meng Qing. A while ago, he had actually already secretly decided that he would marry Meng Qing. If he accepted Duan Xin Ye, what would he be able to give her?

He wouldn't be able to give her anything but Lin Feng hadn't

thought that Duan Xin Ye wouldn't ask for anything in return, she just wanted to be near him, even if she became a servant.

When Duan Xin Ye felt Lin Feng's warm body, she smiled, she looked like a resplendent and magnificent flower. However, even though she was smiling, crystal clear tears started to flow down her cheeks. Love could be magnificent and wonderful, but it could also be subtle, silent and painful.

Chapter 356: Imperial Guard Officer

Outside of the forest, many people were looking impatient.

“He still hasn’t come out and Yan Yu Ping Sheng left a while ago. How come he’s not getting the hell out of there.” Swore a young man in a low voice. That person was furious. Yan Yu Ping Sheng had said that the princess desperately wanted to see him, it really seemed like that was the case. He was inside, alone with the princess.

“Is there even anyone who knows who he is?” Asked someone. All the young people who were there belonged to the Imperial Palace, they were the children of the imperial ministers or children with noble blood, none of them was a common person.

Besides, for many people, Duan Xin Ye was the woman of their dreams. She had everything, beauty, charm and social status. They had been trying to meet the princess for such a long time but each time they could only wait outside, they couldn’t get inside.

“He definitely doesn’t belong to the Imperial Palace.” Replied someone. The crowd nodded, if he belonged to the Imperial Palace, they would have known about him.

“Since he doesn’t belong to the Imperial Palace, wait until he comes out and we will show him his place.” Said a cold and evil voice. They were all furious. They couldn’t even get inside, Lin Feng was inside and alone with the princess... they were all wondering what was happening, they were enraged.

At that moment, in the distance two silhouettes appeared. When the crowd saw these people, they all calmed down, it was him.

The young man leading the way looked cold, detached and serious, giving people the impression that he was already very mature, behind him was another young man, he looked as sharp as a blade.

“Is the princess here?” Asked the young man leading the way, sounding calm, indifferent and domineering.

“She’s here but ‘Officer She’ shouldn’t go and bother her.” said someone which surprised the young man, he then looked at his interlocutor and said: “What do you mean?”

When that person sensed the young man’s domineering expression, his heart started beating faster. He was surprisingly a bit scared. She Qiong was the youngest officer of the Imperial Guards, how inspiring!

“A guy went in, he’s been in there for a while already. I’m just afraid that you will disturb the princess.” Replied the person again, stupefying She Qiong, his eyes looked ice-cold.

He started walking forwards in the direction of the forest but as before, he wasn’t allowed to enter.

“Let me in.” Said She Qiong in a low voice yet sounding

domineering and furious.

When the crowd saw that, smiles appeared on their faces. She Qiong had an extraordinary social status and was extremely talented. He had become the youngest officer in a faction of the Imperial Guards. He was much more outstanding than them, besides, She Qiong also pursued the princess, unfortunately, Duan Xin Ye wasn't interested in him which upset him.

But all of them were upset by the fact that Lin Feng was inside, alone with the princess, for such a long time. That time, She Qiong was leading the way so they would be able to go inside with him.

"The princess said it, she doesn't want to be disturbed." Said the women blocking the way in a cold tone.

"If you don't let me in, then don't blame me for barging in." Said She Qiong sounding furious.

"Try and dare!"

"There is nothing that I, She Qiong, can't do. Even the second prince His Highness said that I could come here as I wish." Said She Qiong indifferently.

"She Qiong, you are really audacious." At that moment, a shout spread through the air. The crowd looked in the direction of the forest and looked embarrassed.

It was Duan Xin Ye, she looked lithe and graceful. Behind Duan Xin Ye was the young man who had been with her all the time, Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was looking at She Qiong, that young man was very strong, from head to toe, he was releasing an oppressive aura.

Besides, he just said that Duan Wu Ya authorized him to come as he wished? Lin Feng was a bit surprised.

“Xin Ye!” Shouted She Qiong looking a bit more tender but immediately after, he looked at Lin Feng in an extremely domineering and aggressive way, his eyes looked ice-cold, he then asked: “Who are you?”

Lin Feng didn't immediately reply. He slightly turned his head and looked at the young man behind She Qiong. Lin Feng was surprised, it was him.

“His name is Lin Feng.” Said that young man who was also looking at Lin Feng, his facial expression was extremely sharp.

“Lin Feng.” The crowd was a bit surprised. Even though some people had never seen Lin Feng, they had obviously heard his name.

“So it's you.” Said She Qiong while looking Lin Feng up and down. He then said coldly: “But, you are just an insignificant person, the unimportant Chi Xie Marquis, what gives you the right

to be standing at the princess' side?"

Lin Feng was, as before, not looking at She Qiong. He was still looking at the young man behind him. That young man was the Blademaster, Leng Yue. Surprisingly, he was there, in the Imperial City, behind She Qiong. On that day, the one who had saved Leng Yue in Celestial River was probably from the Imperial City.

But Leng Yue was a disciple of the Hao Yue Sect, what connection did he have with the Imperial City?

"She Qiong, shut up!" Said Duan Xin Ye when she heard She Qiong humiliating Lin Feng, she then added, sounding ice-cold: "I already said it, without my permission, nobody can come and disturb me and you dare to force your way in."

"Xin Ye, try and understand how I feel in my heart." Replied She Qiong. Immediately after, he coldly glanced at Lin Feng and said: "Xin Ye, he's an insignificant Chi Xie Marquis, even though he is not weak and has gained some fame, in the end, he is still just a nobody. How can you allow him to enter and pollute you?"

"Mind your own business, I don't need your advice." Shouted Duan Xin Ye furiously, looking enraged.

"Are you just going to hide behind a girl?" Said She Qiong while coldly glancing at Lin Feng, who was remaining silent.

Lin Feng frowned, Lin Feng knew that if Yan Yu Ping Sheng left,

trouble would arise. This was the Imperial Palace and all these young men were aristocrats of the court. They all had incredible social statuses and were all in love with Duan Xin Ye. Things were predestined to be difficult.

“What do you want?” Said Lin Feng while walking forward. His voice was extremely sharp. She Qiong and Lin Feng stared at each other.

“My name is She Qiong, I am an officer of the Imperial Guards, Xin Ye is a princess, here, everybody is an aristocrat of the court, children of imperial ministers, or even of noble blood. You are a simple Chi Xie Marquis, don’t you feel ashamed? Besides, what gives you the right to be with the princess, what do you have that we don’t?” Said She Qiong sounding extremely domineering. She Qiong was an officer of the imperial guards and even though he was a bit scared of Duan Wu Ya and acted extremely polite to him, he had always thought that Duan Xin Ye and him were the best possible match, what did Lin Feng think he was doing?

“Is that so?” Lin Feng smiled coldly. “You all have very prestigious social statuses but in the end, none of you can compete with me.”

“Continue.” Said She Qiong coldly.

“If the princess says that she wants to be with you, I will immediately leave.” Said Lin Feng indifferently which stupefied She Qiong. Immediately after, Duan Xin Ye walked towards Lin Feng and held onto his arm. When everybody saw that, they grew even more furious.

Lin Feng was right. In Duan Xin Ye's heart, there was only Lin Feng, no matter what, they couldn't compete with him on that front.

"Xin Ye, don't believe his sweet words, he is just an insignificant person. He just wants to cling to the rich and powerful and will obviously never be able to give you anything." Said She Qiong while looking at Duan Xin Ye. He then added: "I, She Qiong, will give you everything you want."

"Really?" Duan Xin Ye was looking She Qiong.

"Of course." Nodded She Qiong sounding resolute.

"Well, I want you to disappear from my sight. Get lost." Said Duan Xin Ye sounding ice-cold which made She Qiong astonished. Finally, he looked at Lin Feng, if he couldn't change Duan Xin Ye's mind, he would just remove his competition, Lin Feng.

"Lin Feng, I will give you one chance, if you take the initiative to leave Duan Xin Ye, I will not pursue you." Threatened She Qiong.

Lin Feng gradually looked colder and colder, he then said: "Xin Ye told you to get lost, what are you still doing here?"

"You are courting death!" Said She Qiong.

“Really? I don’t think so?” Replied Lin Feng while frowning and holding his head high. These two people were glaring at each other.

“You don’t think so? Lin Feng, let’s see if you can take my punch.” Said She Qiong sounding evil which made the other people secretly smile. It was clear to everyone how powerful She Qiong was, he was a genius at the third Xuan Qi Layer. If he landed a punch on Lin Feng, he would either die or live as a cripple.

Chapter 357: The Threat of a Black Lotus

“She Qiong, you went way too far!” When Duan Xin Ye heard She Qiong, she was furious. He surprisingly wanted to punch Lin Feng. Lin Feng had come to see her and She Qiong was causing trouble, besides, he was getting more and more aggressive.

“Xin Ye, I’m doing everything for you, Lin Feng shouldn’t be with you. He cannot give you anything and on top of that, too many people hate him.” Said She Qiong. Lin Feng had even killed Duan Tian Lang’s son, Duan Han. She Qiong obviously knew about those events.

Lin Feng belonged to the unwashed masses, he initially had no social status, but then Duan Wu Ya had conferred him the title of Marquis, which wasn’t a very high title compared to them. Besides, he only gave him the title because he could use Lin Feng, maybe someday he wouldn’t need him anymore and Lin Feng would be worthless.

He had no background and had many enemies, Lin Feng was unable to protect himself from them, how could he even protect Duan Xin Ye?

“That’s none of your business!” Said Duan Xin Ye in an ice-cold tone. She immediately turned to Lin Feng and said: “Lin Feng, let’s go.”

“You need a girl to protect you!” joked She Qiong calmly.

Lin Feng didn't move, he was just looking at She Qiong. He looked calm and serene, he needed a girl to protect him?

“Lin Feng, ignore him.” Said Duan Xin Ye when she saw that Lin Feng wasn't moving, she looked anxious. She knew how strong She Qiong was. He was the youngest of the nine imperial guard officers. In the entire Imperial City, he was one of the most talented cultivators. Lin Feng had great natural abilities but he was still weaker than She Qiong.

Apart from strength and natural abilities, She Qiong also had a background. Even if Lin Feng injured him while defending himself, the consequences would be dire.

She Qiong's background was terrifying. Even Duan Wu Ya had to respect to him. Therefore, because of this, Duan Xin Ye wished that Lin Feng and She Qiong hadn't met, because no matter what, Lin Feng would lose.

However, could Lin Feng ignore it?

She Qiong humiliated him and said that he needed a girl to protect him. In fact, it was true, if Lin Feng couldn't protect himself, what would he be able to give Duan Xin Ye apart from worries and pain.

Lin Feng was calmly standing there and looking at She Qiong, he then said: “Come and punch me, if you dare!”

“Huh?” She Qiong was stupefied, Lin Feng accepted. Immediately after, he smiled coldly, Lin Feng really had guts, he was begging for death.

When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they all laughed. They all thought that Lin Feng was foolish.

All the nine officers of the imperial guards were extremely strong. The lowest level required to be an officer of the imperial guard was the third Xuan Qi layer. She Qiong was the youngest imperial guard officer who had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer. Unfortunately, Lin Feng would not be able to resist.

“Very good, you’re a real man, unfortunately...” She Qiong laughed in an ice-cold way. Lin Feng had accepted. No matter if it was out of courage or foolishness, his punch was aimed to be deadly, She Qiong was going to be merciless with his attack.

Duan Xin Ye looked sad when she heard Lin Feng accept the battle. She didn’t say anything, she knew how Lin Feng was, she wouldn’t be able to change his mind, he was definitely going to fight.

Duan Xin Ye coldly glared at She Qiong. She Qiong also glanced at her and said: “Xin Ye, don’t worry, I will not kill him.”

She Qiong really didn’t intend to kill Lin Feng but after that punch, Lin Feng would definitely have trouble ever standing back up, he would be crippled.

“Xin Ye, don’t worry.” Said Lin Feng indifferently while smiling at Duan Xin Ye. Duan Xin Ye slightly nodded and didn’t say anything else. Even though She Qiong was extremely strong, Lin Feng was not weak either. Even if She Qiong wanted to kill Lin Feng with just a punch, Duan Xin Ye didn’t think it was possible. She had seen Lin Feng’s strength in the Lovesick Forest.

“Alright, get ready to be punched!” Said She Qiong when he saw that Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng were looking at each other, he couldn’t stand it and released some ice-cold Qi.

An extremely powerful Qi emerged from She Qiong’s body. Pure Qi started fluctuating and a flood dragon illusion appeared around his body, it was incredible.

“Third Xuan Qi layer!” Lin Feng was a bit surprised when he sensed She Qiong’s Qi. She Qiong was about twenty years old and already had the strength of the third Xuan Qi layer, he really had amazing natural abilities.

Of course, Lin Feng also knew that the continent was vast, there were a myriad of geniuses. Lin Feng had high natural abilities but he never said that he was the strongest and no one could beat him. He knew that there were many people who were much stronger than him. Besides, there were also many people who could practice cultivation with much better conditions than him, those who were noble and wealthy, they had legendary potions, pills and other resources, they have had it all since birth.

All Lin Feng could do was rely on his own determination and his power of comprehension to practice cultivation. With great pain

and effort he would constantly improve himself, without ever giving up or stopping.

The pure Qi on She Qiong's body kept undulating and finally condensed around his fist which made his fist look like a flood dragon. The illusion even emitted a roar while absorbing the powerful Qi.

“She Qiong's power is terrifying.” Thought the crowd when they saw the pure Qi flood dragon on She Qiong's fist. He looked majestic. If that fist touched Lin Feng, would the dragon swallow him whole?

She Qiong was not going to show the least bit of mercy towards Lin Feng.

“If you want to act like a man, you will have to pay the price.” Said She Qiong with his fist ready to bombard the atmosphere. He was coldly glaring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng would never be able to defend against his punch.

He wanted to prove to Duan Xin Ye that Lin Feng was not a good match for her, only him, She Qiong, could protect her and be her match.

Lin Feng remained silent. Scorching hot flames emerged from his body, it was a deadly fire which invaded the entire atmosphere, making many people back away from Lin Feng.

Pure Qi fire condensed on his fist and Lin Feng's fist transformed into a blazing sun.

“You have broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer, not bad, unfortunately, you will not be able to withstand my power.” Said She Qiong with confidence burning in his eyes. A cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer couldn't fight back against the strength of a cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer. His fist was going to be merciless, its sole purpose was to crush Lin Feng.

Lin Feng ignored She Qiong, in his heart, there was no self, nobody, no emotions, only darkness. Besides, in Lin Feng's world of darkness, there was his grim fire.

The pure Qi on his body kept undulating and rushing towards Lin Feng's fist, the pressure increased, the energy slowly transformed into a pitch-black fire. That deadly black fire was terrifying, it looked abyssal. It was absorbing insane amounts of pure Qi from the flames, it was constantly absorbing the strength of the sun, however, its size didn't change at all.

“Huh? What kind of fire is that?” The crowd was startled when they saw Lin Feng's black fire. Besides, the strange fire seemed to be controlled by Lin Feng. The crowd couldn't feel the deadly Qi from the fire. It wasn't as intense as the scorching heat from normal flames, that black fire was extremely calm and tranquil.

She Qiong frowned but immediately relaxed, Lin Feng had just broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer, that's all, even if he knew some special skills, it would be of no use against him.

“Fool, even if you studied a few skills, you can’t do anything, I am much stronger than you, all that you do will be in vain, basically, you stand no chance of withstanding my punch.” Said She Qiong indifferently. He wanted to see hatred in Lin Feng’s eyes, Lin Feng was too calm which made him feel upset.

However, She Qiong saw nothing at all in the eyes of Lin Feng, he just looked as calm and serene as before. His pure Qi continued moving towards his fist.

Flames, darkness, deathly silence, the flame greatly resembled Lin Feng right now, emotionless.

She Qiong saw that Lin Feng was ignoring him which made him grow angrier and angrier. Finally, he started walking forwards and his flood dragon roared furiously, as if it was a real dragon.

“Rooooaaarrrr!” She Qiong’s fist bombarded the atmosphere towards Lin Feng. A white flood dragon was rushing towards Lin Feng.

At the same time, Lin Feng also moved. His calm and ordinary fist whistled towards She Qiong. Then, the black fire moved into the atmosphere and the black fire turned into a lotus flower, the atmosphere was then invaded by the terrifying power of the grim fire. This time, She Qiong’s heart skipped a beat, he was surprised.

How was that possible? How could that lotus flower have such a terrifying energy?

She Qiong's heart was brutally pounding in his chest. Everybody was looking at She Qiong and Lin Feng's fists as they collided. In an instant, the flood dragon was annihilated, it was consumed by the black lotus, it was incredible and thrilling!

Chapter 358: Leng Yue's Blade

The grim fire lotus was way too terrifying, it had destroyed She Qiong's flood dragon. She Qiong had lost.

Besides, it wasn't over yet, the grim fire lotus continued to move forwards, and that small ball of energy as big as Lin Feng's fist crashed into She Qiong's fist.

“Crrrr.... Crrrraaack....” Crackling sounds spread in the atmosphere. She Qiong's pure Qi collided with the black lotus and immediately dispersed. Nothing could stop the black lotus.

“Ahhhhhh.....” A horrible shriek of agony spread through the atmosphere. She Qiong's body was blown back several hundred meters. His face had turned deathly pale.

She Qiong raised his fist, it was burnt black, his facial muscles were twitching from the extreme pain.

He had been too careless. From the beginning, he had assumed that he would be able to cripple Lin Feng's cultivation with a single punch. He had never thought that Lin Feng was able to injure him. After he noticed the terrifying energy of the black lotus, he didn't have the time to dodge anymore, and then that black lotus crashed into his fist and burnt his flesh.

When the crowd saw that, they remained silent, especially the noble young men. Surprisingly, Lin Feng had won. They had thought that when She Qiong attacked, he would definitely cripple

Lin Feng's cultivation but reality was completely different.

Lin Feng had released a black lotus which burnt She Qiong's fist.

“You overestimate yourself, you're pathetic. Even if you say that I can't protect the princess, could you?” Joked Lin Feng coldly which made She Qiong feel awkward. His heart was pounding and he was shaking from the intense pain. How excruciatingly painful! That fire was terrifying. Considering his strength, he wouldn't be able to recover from the injury naturally, he would definitely need the assistance of pills.

“Xin Ye, you should head back. I will leave first, that's alright. I will deal with the nobodies that get in my way.” Said Lin Feng turning his head. His voice was soft. Duan Xin Ye remained silent for a second and then immediately nodded: “Well then, be careful.”

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng while walking. He glanced at the crowd with a cold glare. He looked at the rich and noble cultivators, surprisingly, they didn't dare make eye contact, they were all worthless.

Lin Feng's strength was so terrifying that it scared them. Even though they all had noble backgrounds, what amazed them the most was still extreme cultivation strength. If someone was strong enough, they could reach the heavens and look down on humanity. A single powerful cultivator could have more power than all the great spheres of influence combined. Would he care about these influential nobles? If they provoked him, he would crush them.

Lin Feng walked through the crowd and nobody stood in his way. If anyone dared to try, they might end up dying after being burnt by the black lotus.

Not only did they not obstruct his path, but those noble young men, who had acted in an aggressive way a moment before, were also slightly backing away, that was the way things were when one was recognised as an extremely strong cultivator.

Lin Feng didn't even spare these people a glance. He was just calmly and coldly looking ahead. In the direction he was looking, there was She Qiong and Leng Yue.

She Qiong was fixedly staring at Lin Feng with hatred in his eyes. Not only did he not get to show Duan Xin Ye his strength, he wasn't able to cripple Lin Feng's cultivation, instead he had also been injured by Lin Feng. His face was filled with shame. All of this had happened in front of Duan Xin Ye. She Qiong was enraged and had killing intent in his eyes. He wanted to kill Lin Feng no matter what.

When Lin Feng sensed She Qiong's wrath, pure Qi started undulating in his hand, and a deadly black fire appeared.

But Lin Feng was, as before, calmly walking forwards. He was releasing a terrifying deadly Qi. He was moving nearer and nearer to She Qiong by the second.

She Qiong was fixedly staring at Lin Feng approaching. At that

moment, he had a dilemma, should he stand his ground and fight or should he move out of Lin Feng's path?

If he fought against Lin Feng, would he be able to survive another black lotus? He had already been injured from briefly encountering the lotus. He already had lost any ideas that he could defeat Lin Feng and no longer thought that he was stronger than Lin Feng. That lotus made from grim fire was way too terrifying. A moment before, the flesh from his entire fist had been burnt black, if that black lotus was aimed at his chest, he would be burnt alive in an instant.

But if he didn't fight, could he really open a path? In front of everybody, he, the youngest imperial guard officer, would move out of the way because he was scared of facing Lin Feng?

If he really did that, the news would quickly spread throughout the city, which would allow the people from the Imperial Palace to humiliate him and make fun of him.

Lin Feng was getting nearer and nearer. He was only a few meters away from him. She Qiong still hadn't come up with a decision but while he was still thinking, he heard a voice.

"She Qiong, let Lin Feng pass." Said Duan Xin Ye. Even though Lin Feng had just won the fight, she still didn't want them to continue fighting, it wouldn't be beneficial for Lin Feng, no matter if he won or lost.

When She Qiong heard Duan Xin Ye, he was surprised, he then

turned to Lin Feng and said: “Since Xin Ye says, it’s over for today but I will remember this injury, and I will have my revenge.”

After saying that, She Qiong moved out of the way and let Lin Feng pass. He was happy to hear Duan Xin Ye’s words, he didn’t want to fight against Lin Feng.

Lin Feng smiled coldly, he passed by the side of She Qiong, then slightly stopped, he then looked at She Qiong with a mocking smile as if he found him extremely amusing. He didn’t say a word, and continued walking towards the exit.

When She Qiong saw that mocking smile, his mouth twitched and he started shaking. That was the first time that he had ever been so humiliated.

She Qiong had high natural abilities and people who were as outstanding as him were rare. However, because of his background, even cultivators stronger than himself would not humiliate him. He had never been so humiliated.

The woman he loved wanted to be with Lin Feng. She worshiped Lin Feng. He wanted to cripple Lin Feng’s cultivation and in the end, he was injured instead.

What made him the most furious was that Lin Feng could have left from anywhere but he decided to walk towards him, and that was on purpose.

Lin Feng was imposing and domineering, he had obviously done that on purpose.

She Qiong was still filled with fear and had moved out of the way, he even had to endure Lin Feng's mocking smile, a cold mocking smile.

He had the feeling that everybody was laughing at him and Duan Xin Ye would despise him.

Lin Feng passed next to She Qiong and continued walking forwards without even turning his head to look back. He looked confident, he had the attitude of a winner.

“Lin Feng.” Suddenly shouted She Qiong in an ice-cold tone which made Lin Feng stop. He turned around and saw She Qiong running towards him. She Qiong's flood dragon roared, his entire body seemed to transform into a flood dragon as he threw himself towards Lin Feng, it opened its mouth and an extremely sharp set of teeth could be seen.

Lin Feng abruptly turned around and raised his hand. His grim fire was already in his hand. Lin Feng, when facing a cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer, remained extremely cautious and vigilant, he was fearless but not arrogant.

The black flames moved towards the illusory flood dragon. Those black flames could burn the world to ashes, so they destroyed the flood dragon. At the same time, Lin Feng sensed an oppressive energy envelop his body.

“Rooooaaarrr.....”

She Qiong kept moving forwards, from his back a gigantic terrifying dragon appeared. It had extremely sharp claws and razor like teeth, that dragon spirit almost looked like a real dragon as it threw itself at Lin Feng.

She Qiong had decided to fight against Lin Feng and immediately released his spirit.

“Burn!”

Lin Feng didn't flinch and instead moved towards the dragon. When his grim fire collided with the dragon spirit, the flood dragon was surprisingly engulfed in flames.

The two fighters were looking at each other, the power of the dragon and the grim fire were clashing, but at that moment, an incredibly sharp blade energy filled the atmosphere. It was extremely dazzling, without leaving even a second to react, it moved straight towards Lin Feng.

That blade was extremely quick, and was filled with a terrifying blade force. The blade seemed to radiate a multitude of different lights.

That energy blade could adopt many different forms, thousands and thousands of different energies combined to create that energy

blade.

Leng Yue had been condensing energy in his blade for a long time and was finally attacking. His blade was earth shattering, recently, the Blademaster entered just like Lin Feng, had broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer.

In the past, he had been defeated by Lin Feng, now, he had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, the Blademaster Leng Yue was continuing to grow stronger.

“Dodge!” when Lin Feng saw that blade moving towards him suddenly, the first thought he had was to dodge. The timing of that blade was perfect. It was an attack aiming for vitals.

Leng Yue obviously wanted to kill Lin Feng with that attack!

Chapter 359: Who Will Save You?

In the past, Leng Yue was extremely arrogant and was considered as the most gifted disciple of the Hao Yue Sect. Even though he was only the second best disciple in the sect, everybody thought that it was only a matter of time before he would rise to the top.

Leng Yue was independent in mind and action. No matter where he went, only his blade would accompany him. His blade was worshiped and revered by others. Many beautiful women had openly declared their love for him.

However, everything changed after he went to Celestial River and met Lin Feng. His pride had been destroyed by Lin Feng and his prestige now belonged to Lin Feng. If he hadn't been saved at the last minute, he would have been killed by Lin Feng, therefore, Leng Yue deeply and bitterly hated Lin Feng.

Since Celestial River, Leng Yue had been suffering everyday and practicing cultivation. He had constantly improved himself and worked to become stronger every day. That was how he had reached his current level at using his blade. With one blade, he could condense all the energies from a thousand blades, his energy blade had reached perfection.

“Roaaarr....” A terrible roar spread through the air, the flood dragon rushed forwards with She Qiong to use this opportunity to attack Lin Feng. Lin Feng was still under the pressure from the energy blade, he didn't have any time to waste.

“How shameless!” Shouted Duan Xin Ye to She Qiong and Leng Yue who were suddenly fighting together against Lin Feng, how sly and cruel!

Leng Yue was also surprised, She Qiong was the youngest imperial guard officer and he surprisingly stooped to such methods to fight against Lin Feng, besides he had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer which was two more layers than Lin Feng, how shameless!

These noble young men were also stupefied, it seemed like She Qiong was determined to kill Lin Feng. A moment before, the humiliation had been too great, he couldn't bear it, he needed to kill Lin Feng.

Calm!

At that moment, Lin Feng's heart was limpid as water. He was so calm that it was scary. The grim fire in his hand was facing the flood dragon, he couldn't use it to fight against Leng Yue, but Lin Feng knew that he had to be extremely precise with his actions, if he made even a single mistake, it would become very dangerous.

Lin Feng's thoughts suddenly became extremely calm and tranquil. Everything surrounding him was extremely clear and distinct, the wind, their movements, the blade, everything was clear to him.

Lin Feng slightly moved and created several afterimages with his movement.

Lin Feng just made an extremely faint move, but his grim fire was still facing the flood dragon.

A light flashed one of Lin Feng's afterimages was sliced in two. That blade had nearly reached Lin Feng, but it was dodged by a hair, Lin Feng could perfectly sense how powerful that blade was.

“Huh?”

“How quick.”

When the crowd saw how quickly Lin Feng dodged Leng Yue's blade, they were astonished. It was so close that it almost brushed Lin Feng's skin, but at that moment, his silhouette flickered and an afterimage appeared when he dodged the attack, how incredible, how splendid!

Leng Yue was also dumbstruck. Lin Feng, even though he was still facing She Qiong, had managed to dodge his energy blade. As expected, Lin Feng was becoming stronger and stronger.

But Leng Yue's desire to kill only increased, he raised his blade horizontally.

“You want to die.” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. In his calm eyes appeared a dazzling light. He stamped onto the ground and a rumbling sound emerged. A crack appeared on the ground and cracks quickly started to spread in all directions.

At the same time, Lin Feng jumped forwards, the flood dragon was crushed, knocking She Qiong a few steps back while Lin Feng's body had spun around in the air and his black lotus was now moving straight towards Leng Yue. His black lotus collided with the blade and in flash, black flames engulfed the beautiful blade. The grim fire continued to rampage and engulf the blade. The flames quickly started to spread up the blade and instantly engulfed Leng Yue's arm.

“Ahhhhh.....”

“BOOM!”

Two sounds emerged in the atmosphere at the same time. The first sound was Leng Yue's agonising shriek, he immediately dropped his blade. On his body, a pure Qi started to fluctuate and rushed to seal his arm which was engulfed in black flames. However, as before, the black flames continued to rampage and spread further up Leng Yue's arm. His entire arm had turned completely black, it was incredibly shocking.

The fire of the black lotus was extremely powerful. Even though Leng Yue's blade level was extremely high, he was still extremely far from being a match for She Qiong who had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer. She Qiong's attack was destroyed and his fist was burnt by the black fire, but this time, Leng Yue's entire arm had been swallowed by the flames. His arm was destroyed, it was just hanging loose from his shoulder, he couldn't even feel his arm anymore. It could even fall off and turn to ashes and Leng Yue wouldn't even realize.

The second sound was She Qiong's attack crashing into Lin Feng's body which sent him rolling backwards. Lin Feng had turned around to attack Leng Yue, She Qiong took advantage of Lin Feng's weakened position to attack again and his flood dragon bombarded Lin Feng's body sending him flying, Lin Feng groaned and blood started flowing from his mouth.

"Lin Feng is monstrously strong." Thought people in the crowd. Even though Lin Feng had just been injured from the exchange, surprisingly, when facing two strong cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, he wasn't even flinching, especially in front of She Qiong who was at the third Xuan Qi layer.

In such circumstances, Lin Feng had destroyed She Qiong's attack, forcing him back and used the opportunity to incinerate Leng Yue's arm, it was amazing.

Those black flames were terrifying, they seemed like they could burn anything. Leng Yue who was at the first Xuan Qi layer didn't even stand a chance. The crowd had personally watched Leng Yue's arm burn, besides, if he hadn't released his pure Qi and isolated his arm from the rest of his body, his entire body would have been consumed by the flames.

At that moment, Leng Yue was shaking in agony.

He lowered his head with his face flushed in pain. He looked at his black burnt arm with a cold stare.

“Ahhhhhh.....” Leng Yue raised his hand which turned into a blade and he immediately cut off his burnt arm. The burnt arm immediately fell onto the ground, the crowd was shocked, that move sent shivers down their spines.

Leng Yue had cut off the arm which was engulfed by the flames.

“How brutal.”

In order to cut off his own arm, it required a great amount of consideration as he would never be able to use that arm again.

“Lin Feng.” Said Duan Xin Ye running towards Lin Feng’s side. When she saw that Lin Feng was deathly pale, she was extremely worried.

“I’m alright.” Lin Feng shook his head but his weak Qi betrayed him, even though he could rely on his black lotus to fight against She Qiong, his grim fire was what covered for his lack of strength. Of course, one of She Qiong’s punches had gravely injured him.

Duan Xin Ye took out a bottle, it was the same bottle as last time, it contained Xuan level pills of medium quality. Duan Xin Ye poured them out and immediately tried to shove them all into Lin Feng’s mouth.

Lin Feng looked at Duan Xin Ye whose face was covered with worry, he slightly shook his head and said: “Xin Ye, with that kind of pill, one is enough.”

Lin Feng then took one pill and just like last time, the feeling was pleasant and refreshing, Qi was revolving around his body and his injuries were healing quickly. His Qi seemed return to normal as well.

The grim fire was extremely useful. If Lin Feng wanted to make the black lotus stronger, he just had to allow the grim fire to absorb all of his pure sun Qi and transform it into grim fire. In other words, that terrifying black lotus could contain the entirety of his pure Qi. A moment before, if Lin Feng wasn't in great danger, he could have put all of his Qi into the black lotus without needing to protect his body.

“Take them.” Said Duan Xin Ye while giving the bottle to Lin Feng. Duan Xin Ye looked extremely worried. Lin Feng smiled wryly and nodded. He then accepted the bottle of pills.

When She Qiong saw how close the two of them were, he pulled a long face. He obviously knew what was in that bottle, Xuan level pills of medium quality. Divine Healing pills... And Duan Xin Ye had given them to Lin Feng because she was worried about him being hurt.

When Lin Feng sensed the evil energy being released from She Qiong, he pulled Duan Xin Ye behind him and raised his head, he then coldly looked at Leng Yue and She Qiong.

Lin Feng looked like he wanted to make a joke, then said while sounding cold and detached: “I took your punch, after that, you

didn't dare to fight against me and instead attacked me when my back was turned, the youngest imperial guard officer is so incredible, so amazing, just wow!"

When She Qiong heard Lin Feng, a hideous expression appeared on his face. A moment before, he had actually used a surprise attack against Lin Feng, Leng Yue even helped him.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Leng Yue with killing intent.

"Blademaster, this time, who will save you?"

When he finished talking, Lin Feng started walking towards Leng Yue.

Leng Yue, who only had one arm left, started shaking brutally. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng, this time, Lin Feng was going to kill him.

Even if Lin Feng didn't plan on killing him a moment before, it was also because Leng Yue hadn't tried to kill him. Lin Feng was furious. Lin Feng wanted to kill Leng Yue!

Chapter 360: Frightening Persuasion

Leng Yue slightly moved back. He looked at Lin Feng, even though he looked cold, he also looked a bit scared.

In the past, he was unable to defeat Lin Feng. Now, both of them had broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer, while Leng Yue also had the advantage of his blade spirit and an advanced understanding of blades. Amongst the cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, he could be considered as a relatively strong individual, however, when facing Lin Feng, he didn't have even a slither of confidence.

At that moment, he was unable to compete with Lin Feng. He didn't look glorious at all before Lin Feng. He had even lost one of his arms.

“Huh?” She Qiong frowned. He only looked at Leng Yue who was moving backwards in She Qiong's direction. As expected, Leng Yue expected She Qiong to protect him.

She Qiong was intensely staring at Leng Yue. That guy was under his wing, in the future, he would become a useful subordinate.

She Qiong knew how talented and determined Leng Yue was. He had an extremely advanced knowledge of blades, and he would definitely become stronger, otherwise, they wouldn't have searched for him and brought him back to the Imperial City.

Therefore, She Qiong hoped that Leng Yue would stay alive. She

Qiong would need a few strong and loyal subordinates on the path of cultivation.

Even though he had immediately been able to become an officer, he still wasn't strong enough, he wasn't authentically strong, he only managed to impress people by working hard to progress.

She Qiong moved in front of Leng Yue while staring at Lin Feng.

“He's one of my men, you cannot kill him.” Said She Qiong while still staring at Lin Feng.

“So what? Are you saying that I can't kill your men?” Said Lin Feng sounding amused. How ridiculous. She Qiong was really the laughingstock of the world.

Pure Qi started to surge forth from Lin Feng, rampaging flames started to soar around his body, and in Lin Feng's hand, black flames started to burn, it looked incredible.

She Qiong was fixedly staring at that black fire, he couldn't help but feel a bit scared. He was wondering how Lin Feng managed to condense such a powerful fire. It was perfectly clear to him that Lin Feng had only broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer but that terrifying fire could possibly kill him, even though he had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer.

He obviously knew that Lin Feng's grim fire was terrifying. Lin Feng had also practiced the Cosmos-Burning Sun and could absorb

the fire essence of the seven-tail fox, which transformed into pure sun Qi, after that, he spent time studying to understand how to use the grim fire, thanks to the work he had done, he had been able to transform all of his sun Qi into the deadly grim fire, how couldn't it become overwhelmingly strong?

Even though Lin Feng had just broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer, he could already absorb the Xuan beast fire essence, which allowed him to boost his strength significantly, from absorbing the beast fire, he was already much stronger than any normal cultivator who would have broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer.

When She Qiong saw that Lin Feng was still steadily walking towards him, his eyes flashed.

The atmosphere was invaded by a deathly silence, only Lin Feng's steps could be heard.

Leng Yue was hiding behind She Qiong, so She Qiong had to bear the incredible pressure.

“Clack, clack, clack.”

Just like before, Lin Feng was silently walking, he remained absolutely silent. In the air, it seemed like there was only his oppressive Qi and the black fire burning in his hand.

A strange deadly energy emerged from Lin Feng's body and

enveloped She Qiong and Leng Yue's bodies which made She Qiong shiver.

“Should I move out of the way or not?”

She Qiong hadn't thought that things would escalate to this so quickly, he was confronted with the same decision yet again. Lin Feng was giving him the same choice once again.

It was clear to She Qiong that Lin Feng wasn't going to be as careless as a moment before. If he didn't move out of the way, it would be extremely unfavourable for him, but if he did, Lin Feng would kill Leng Yue.

Actually, a moment before, after She Qiong moved out of the way for Lin Feng, he attacked him from behind because he couldn't stand the pressure of living with his humiliation. He felt like everybody was making fun of him and looking at him. They had both attacked by surprise yet Leng Yue's arm was swallowed by the black flames and he had to cut it off himself, that was the price to be paid for offending Lin Feng.

“Don't think that I would not dare to kill you where you stand, I killed Duan Tian Lang's son as he watched. Even though killing you might have unfavourable consequences, if you continue to push me, I, Lin Feng, will kill you without hesitation and deal with the consequences after you're dead.”

At the moment when She Qiong was still hesitating, Lin Feng spoke. He felt a sense of fear rising in his heart, he was terrified.

For a very short moment, he had stopped being scared, but those words had brought the terror back. She Qiong hated himself. He wanted to shout furiously but he was unable to emit any sound. All he could feel was the contradiction between what he wanted to do and what his body was doing.

Ten steps, nine steps, Lin Feng was getting nearer and nearer to She Qiong. Lin Feng just had to make a slight jump and he would arrive directly in front of She Qiong.

“Get lost!” Said Lin Feng domineering voice. Immediately after, She Qiong’s heart started to race and he moved back.

In front of everybody, She Qiong was moving backwards.

Seven steps separated Lin Feng from She Qiong. Lin Feng raised his hand and the grim fire was flickering in front of She Qiong’s eyes. The black lotus was slowly becoming clearer in his vision.

“Phewwwww.....”

She Qiong took a deep breath, he was trembling with fear, he then quickly moved aside. He was unable to stand the pressure for a moment longer. He could only see Lin Feng’s calm and tranquil expression. She Qiong was scared, he couldn’t endure it.

That shocked the crowd once again. She Qiong had moved out of Lin Feng’s way a second time. From that moment on, She Qiong’s cultivation would never be the same again, his heart would be

haunted because of these events. Lin Feng would become the demon in his nightmares. Lin Feng had crushed his confidence, he might never be able to recover from the trauma.

Lin Feng and Leng Yue were facing each other once again. She Qiong wasn't standing in the way. Lin Feng was releasing a cold energy which enveloped Leng Yue's body and shocked him. Leng Yue was staring at Lin Feng with hatred in his eyes. He hated Lin Feng with all his soul.

"I already said it, today, nobody will save you." An incredible purple spirit emerged from Lin Feng's body and rushed towards Leng Yue, he wasn't using his black lotus to attack.

"Back!"

Leng Yue immediately retreated as Lin Feng attacked him, his purple spirit was extremely fast and in the blink of an eye it had already arrived at Leng Yue's body, it then transformed into a gigantic purple dragon which wrapped around Leng Yue.

Chapter 361: She Qiong's Enlightenment

After having broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, Lin Feng's purple spirit had also changed, it looked even more real than before, it looked like a real ferocious beast.

After appearing, the spirit opened its gigantic mouth and stared at the people with its gigantic eyes. It looked bestial and terrifying.

“Arrghhh.....”

At that moment, the dragon had constricted Leng Yue's body and was staring at him with its ferocious eyes. Leng Yue felt a chill run through his body. He then shouted furiously and released a fierce blade energy which emitted a whistling sound as it sliced through the air. Leng Yue's body was just like a huge blade, slicing the purple dragon.

“You still want to live?” Said Lin Feng sounding ice-cold, he started rushing towards Leng Yue who was constricted by the purple dragon. In Lin Feng's hand, there was still a black lotus.

“Get away!” Shouted Leng Yue furiously when he saw Lin Feng's black lotus. He knew how terrifying that black lotus was, if landed on his body, he would burn to death.

However, at that moment, Lin Feng wasn't stopping at all. Initially, he didn't feel like killing Leng Yue but Leng Yue tried to kill him so of course, Lin Feng wasn't going to show any mercy.

Lin Feng raised his hand and was moving nearer to Leng Yue.

“Leng Yue is dead.” Thought the crowd when they saw Lin Feng’s black lotus. These two both tried to kill Lin Feng but in the end Leng Yue would be killed by Lin Feng.

“Die.” Said Lin Feng evilly.

“Would you dare?” At the moment when Lin Feng was about to kill Leng Yue, an extremely loud voice spread through the air. Then, an incredible blade energy filled the atmosphere and surrounded Lin Feng’s body. Lin Feng had the feeling that he was inside a sea of blades. Behind him was another cultivator at the Xuan Qi layer, with a blade spirit.

The terrifying blade energy was unleashed in an instant, Lin Feng jumped through the air and at the same time, the light from a blade attack streaked through the sky and cut through the position where Lin Feng was just standing.

“Die!” Another blade light streaked through the air and sliced through the purple spirit which was constricting Leng Yue’s body. In a flash, the purple dragon roared and immediately after transformed into a countless number of purple snakes, which moved to Lin Feng’s side.

Lin Feng was standing in the air surrounded by a sea of purple snakes and looked down, the man with the blade was walking towards him, he raised his head and looked at Lin Feng. His blade

energy had invaded the entire atmosphere.

“We’ve already met.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached.

“Indeed, we’ve met.” Said that person while staring at Lin Feng in the sky, he sounded as cold and detached as he looked at Lin Feng.

That person was precisely the person who had appeared in Celestial River to save Leng Yue. He had even attacked Lin Feng with his blade before leaving. Lin Feng didn’t know what status he had to bring Leng Yue to the Imperial Palace.

“Officer, he has tricked you.” Said that person while looking at She Qiong. She Qiong was astonished, tricked by Lin Feng?

“What do you mean?” Asked She Qiong while narrowing his eyes.

“When he uses his fire black lotus, he puts all of his Qi into it, when he used his black lotus a moment ago, his Qi would have been completely used up and he should only have recovered a fraction of his Qi in such a short period. Right now, the black lotus is just for show, it’s a bluff, nothing more.”

That man was looking at She Qiong and said slowly: “Officer, he wouldn’t be able to defeat you, therefore, he didn’t want to fight against you either. He just put enough pressure on you so that you wouldn’t fight.”

After hearing that, She Qiong frowned and glared at Lin Feng.

“Impossible.... Impossible....” She Qiong’s face turned deathly pale. He didn’t feel excited at all after hearing that, it was the opposite, he couldn’t stop shaking his head. Had he really been tricked by Lin Feng?

Lin Feng clearly didn’t have the strength to fight against him, but relying on his confidence and persuasion, he had managed to scare She Qiong away and crush his pride. How could She Qiong ever look people in the eyes again?

But when thinking about it twice, maybe the man’s words were true. Lin Feng only had the strength of the first Xuan Qi layer, using such a monstrous black lotus definitely had side effects. Besides, Lin Feng must have been trying to scare him and impress everyone, Lin Feng hadn’t revealed his true colours until now.

“Is that so?” Shouted She Qiong towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at She Qiong as if he wanted to laugh, as if the situation was amusing. Indeed, the man was right, he required the entirety of the pure Qi within his body to transform his sun Qi into grim fire and then condense the grim fire into a black lotus, a moment before, he had already used his black lotus once and it used an incredible amount of pure Qi. Even though he had taken a pill and recovered from his injuries, his pure Qi hadn’t returned to normal in such a short space of time.

Concerning the black lotus in his hand at that moment, it was really just for show, it was basically impossible for him to create a real black lotus right after unleashing one.

Lin Feng walked towards the man while narrowing his eyes. That the man's strength was weaker than that of She Qiong but he had much more experience, which was obvious considering his age. Besides, he had been watching them since the beginning.

She Qiong paid attention to Lin Feng's facial expression and his heart started pounding. The man was right, Lin Feng had clearly consumed too much of his Qi, he couldn't condense a black lotus that would unleash its full power. He couldn't fight against She Qiong, but even when you consider all of this, Lin Feng only used his confidence and persuasion to scare She Qiong away from fighting, he had scared him and made him move out of the way.

She Qiong looked pale and wanted to find a hole to crawl into.

As far as he was concerned, all of this was becoming more humiliating for him the longer it continued.

“Officer, you are extremely young and have already broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer, you have extremely high natural abilities. Since you want to achieve great things in your life, you must harden yourself and be as determined as ever. You can never allow yourself to stay down, you must welcome difficulty and break free from your mental chains that hold you back. You must have willpower, you need to be determined and tough. All officers must gain experience, it's only way for them to reach the heavens. After all, there is always someone stronger than

you.” Said the man slowly while looking at She Qiong.

She Qiong’s soul was shaking as if he had just gained enlightenment. He finally understood what the man was telling him. Even though he continued to be knocked down by Lin Feng, he needed to view it as a challenge and get back up, it was a way for him to gain experience and strengthen his determination.

Lin Feng was also looking at the man. That person used a blade, he was a middle-aged man and had already broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer. He didn’t have very high natural abilities but his heart was like a blade, silent and determined.

“Thank you for your guidance.” Said She Qiong in a polite tone. His eyes weren’t filled with hatred anymore at all, instead his eyes were sparkling with enlightenment. In fact, everything in his life seemed to be happening for a reason. He had extremely high natural abilities and a powerful background. On the path of cultivation, he had never experienced extreme difficulties, even the battles required for him to break through to the next cultivation layer were planned, those people didn’t fight with him to the death and made sure not to harm him, when you look at it from that aspect, Leng Yue was stronger than She Qiong.

Leng Yue had gone through many difficulties and fought in a number of battles to the death. That’s how he was able to break through to the Xuan Qi layer in such a short time.

Therefore, because of these factors, She Qiong had run away when faced with the threat of death. He was proud, arrogant, but he still lacked experience, real battle experience. Lin Feng only

needed to release a slight pressure to scare him away, She Qiong was still very far from being able to achieve something like that.

“Young master, when you’re mature, wherever you go, you will be able to adapt.” Said the man to She Qiong. This time, he wasn’t calling him officer anymore, just, young master.

“From today, I, She Qiong, am leaving my function as an officer in the imperial guard.” Said She Qiong calmly. He used to be arrogant because of his station as an officer but what was the point if it was just the title they feared and not him. Could he fight against Lin Feng that way?

She Qiong turned around and looked at Lin Feng: “What has started today is not over, we will meet again.”

When he finished talking, She Qiong started walking away, he was surprisingly leaving. He didn’t pay attention to Lin Feng and the others and he didn’t even spare a glance at Duan Xin Ye. After what had just happened, he could no longer pursue her affection anyway, he wasn’t able to protect her.

Many people were astonished when they saw him leave, then, the man also said: “We’re leaving too.”

“Alright.” Said Leng Yue while nodding. He glanced at Lin Feng but then Lin Feng said in an ice-cold tone: “Leaving? I said it already, nobody will save you today.”

“Huh?” the crowd was stupefied. They raised their head and looked at Lin Feng, was he really planning to kill Leng Yue?

Was he even still able to kill Leng Yue?

Chapter 362: Burnt to Death!

Leng Yue started shaking, the man was also looking at Lin Feng.

“You consumed so much of your Qi already that it’s impossible for you to condense another full strength black lotus, you want to keep us here but have you thought clearly about the consequences?”

The man was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Even though Leng Yue was in a critical position, the man on the other hand, had broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer and it wouldn’t be easy for Lin Feng to defeat him.

“I admit that I used up most of my Qi, I wouldn’t be able to condense another powerful black lotus like a moment ago but I still have the power to kill Leng Yue. Last time, you managed to stop me by attacking me with your blade, past mistakes cannot be repeated.” Said Lin Feng while staring at his interlocutor. Lin Feng slowly raised his which contained his black lotus and said: “Would you... bet your life on it?”

” Would you... bet your life on it?”

That question echoed through the silence of the atmosphere. The crowd looked at Lin Feng, he had confessed that he had used up the majority of his Qi, but then told his interlocutor that he would kill Leng Yue anyway. He then dared to ask the man if he was willing to bet his life on the power of the black lotus, if he didn’t intervene, Leng Yue would die, if he tried to stop Lin Feng, then

the black lotus would be used against him.

The man was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Would he gamble with his life at stake? For instance, if Lin Feng was bluffing, then the man would have the opportunity to kill Lin Feng in his weakened state, but if Lin Feng's black lotus was still powerful enough to kill him, then the gamble would cost him his life.

“I admit that you are incredibly gifted, I am thinking that we should put the past behind us and build a bridge of friendship. I could send you to a place where you will have incredible privileges, if you went there, nobody in Xue Yue would dare to bully you ever again.” When the crowd heard the man, they were all stupefied, he wanted to send Lin Feng to such an incredible place? The crowd obviously understood what it meant and where that place was. It was a special place filled with countless incredible geniuses.

But Lin Feng didn't feel that the proposition was interesting, nobody would dare to bully him again?

If Lin Feng wasn't mistaken, She Qiong and Leng Yue were also intending to go to that place. If Lin Feng was weaker, then She Qiong would still be able to bully him, however, if he was strong enough, would he need to rely on any external help to protect himself? Who would dare provoke him.

As before, everything was always reliant on personal strength. The weak would inevitably be bullied by the strong, no matter where they were or what their status may be, whereas the strong could oppress and control the weak.

Lin Feng was unrestrained, natural and carefree. He wanted to soar into the heavens and do whatever he wanted, then nobody would dare to humiliate him.

But he also perfectly understood that the world was cruel, the only way to achieve what he wanted was to become incredibly strong, becoming stronger step by step until he reached the heavens. He longed to soar into the heavens more than anything else, he longed to be able to fly beyond the clouds and look down on the world from above.

Just like an incredible hero, he wanted to be able to kill his enemies with a wave of his hand, that way, nobody would ever dare to bully him, if anybody dared, they would die.

Those days, Lin Feng's strength was extremely far from soaring into the heavens, but at least he could already prevent a great number of people from humiliating him.

In Celestial River, Leng Yue had been extremely arrogant and tried to kill him, and now, in the Imperial City, Leng Yue once again made an attempt to kill him, if Lin Feng didn't kill Leng Yue, his heart would never be peaceful. He had to kill Leng Yue so he could rest easy.

"I'm sorry, I'm not interested." Replied Lin Feng. He then summoned the purple dragon spirit again, and an incredible purple energy appeared around him, he looked like a ferocious beast.

Lin Feng's refusal astonished the man. Lin Feng wasn't interested... It was the third time that he had ever heard of someone refusing to go to the holy land for cultivators. Eighteen years ago, two other people also refused an invitation, one was the genius Zhuge Wu Qing but the man didn't know name of the other person, all he knew was that cultivator had a dual spirit.

Back then, the man was still young, he hadn't even broken through to the Xuan Qi layer at the time, and wasn't able to go to that place.

Ever since he had access to that holy land, nobody had ever refused an invitation. Everybody wanted to get the chance to go there more than anything... Yet Lin Feng just refused.

Not only did Lin Feng only take a second to decide, but he also started to focus on Leng Yue again while ignoring the man.

Lin Feng moved forward, his body was surrounded by his purple spirit, he raised his hand which contained the black lotus and walked towards Leng Yue.

Leng Yue was shaking, he thought that he had managed to escape by the skin of his teeth, but in the end, Lin Feng was still going to kill him.

Leng Yue looked at the man as he was Leng Yue's last hope, he only hoped that the man would be able to defeat Lin Feng.

The man had told Leng Yue that he was going to become an legendary cultivator in the future, how could his legend end here? He couldn't die!

“Lin Feng, are you sure? Do you know what you just refused? Besides, do you know whom you are trying to kill?” Threatened the man while fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

“I don't know, all I know is that I will kill anyone who tries to kill me.” Replied Lin Feng indifferently.

“Do you know the name of the Snow Dragon Guards, the protectors of Xue Yue?” Shouted the man furiously when he saw that Lin Feng was refusing his offer, the man had shouted aggressively and loud enough to frighten anyone, including Lin Feng.

“Snow Dragon Guards?” Lin Feng was astonished, he had never heard of them. He only knew that Liu Cang Lan was the only person protecting Xue Yue for the last decade and in the end, he was sentenced to death for it, in Lin Feng's eyes, the Snow Dragon Guards were nothing but a joke.

What Lin Feng didn't know was that the Snow Dragon Guards were also the most mysterious of all the armies. They were amongst the strongest soldiers in the entire country. The people who were able to become an officer of the Snow Dragon Guards was revered and respected.

“Leng Yue is already set to join the Snow Dragon Guards in the

future, if you kill him, you'd kill a recruit of the Snow Dragon Guards." Continued the man when he saw that Lin Feng stopped.

Lin Feng had stopped in the air and was looking at him. His eyes sparkled and his lips moved as he then said: "What do the Snow Dragon Guards have to do with me?"

Then, Lin Feng's purple spirit burst through the air and in a flash, it was already tightly wrapped around Leng Yue, that move had shocked everybody.

What did the Snow Dragon Guards have to do with Lin Feng?

The purple dragon roared, deadly Qi filled the air and the crowd saw spirit start to move. Leng Yue's body was still tied by the purple dragon which lifted him into the air, he was completely unable to move. Lin Feng raised hand which was surrounded by black flames and attacked Leng Yue with all his cruelty.

"Ahhhhh....."

A gut wrenching scream of agony exploded in every direction and painfully pierced into everybody's ears. Black flames had engulfed Leng Yue's body which burned every inch of his flesh.

The purple spirit was still in the air, it was still tying Leng Yue's body but at that moment, there was nothing remaining but ash. Leng Yue was burnt alive, the only thing left of him was the gut wrenching scream which was still echoing through the

atmosphere.

Lin Feng was standing there with his grim fire surrounding his hand, he looked cold and emotionless. Of course he didn't even feel a tinge of pity.

He turned around and looked at the man once again. The man was also staring at him coldly.

"I already said, today, nobody will save him, you saved him once, I wouldn't let it happen twice." Said Lin Feng while looking at the man: "I have already killed him, do you still want something?"

"Do you still want something?"

Lin Feng asked the man because he was trying to stop him from killing Leng Yue, but he still killed him, so what did the man want by staying?

At that moment, in Lin Feng's hand, there was still a black lotus but it wasn't as black in colour anymore, it didn't look as powerful as a moment before anymore.

The man's facial expression changed a few times, Lin Feng was asking him what he wanted, what could he do?

He had attached a great deal of importance to Leng Yue for a long time, he had even brought him to the Imperial Palace, Leng Yue was destined to become a Snow Dragon Guard. However, Lin Feng

hadn't shown the tiniest shred of mercy and burnt Leng Yue alive. The Snow Dragon Guards, the protectors of Xue Yue, what did they have to do with Lin Feng?

The protectors of Xue Yue were under the control of the Duan Clan, that's all. Lin Feng wasn't a fool, he wasn't going to become a servant of Xue Yue or for the Imperial Clan.

"You will regret what you did today." Said the man while staring at Lin Feng for a while. He had killed a future member of the Snow Dragon Guards, besides, he even offended She Qiong, Lin Feng would definitely have to pay the price for his actions.

"If you want to fight, I will fight, if you don't want to fight, scram already!" Said Lin Feng who ignored the man's superfluous words. Lin Feng had heard the same idle threats from everyone he crossed, they always said that he would regret his actions, but in the end they were just words, he never felt the slightest regret as he was always acting in harmony with his principles.

Chapter 363: Wu Ya's Mountain

If he wanted to fight then, Lin Feng was willing to fight him; if he just wanted to run his mouth, the man should scram.

Lin Feng was standing in the air and looked at the man with a piercing look. If he had doubts about Lin Feng's strength, he could fight here and now, he could gamble and see if Lin Feng still had the strength to fight him.

The man glanced at Lin Feng and immediately after glanced at Duan Xin Ye, he immediately made a decision, no matter what the situation was, Leng Yue was already dead, he had been killed by Lin Feng and that couldn't be changed.

If he fought and Lin Feng still had strength to fight, Lin Feng would definitely kill him. If Lin Feng didn't have the strength to fight anymore and was just bluffing, if he really consumed all of his Qi, could the man even kill Lin Feng? Could he ignore Princess Duan Xin Ye's feelings and kill Lin Feng?

He couldn't forget that Lin Feng was part of Duan Wu Ya's faction, if She Qiong was strong enough, he could have killed Lin Feng but the man could not take the same action, otherwise, he would end up being punished.

Therefore, he quickly decided that it would be best to leave, Lin Feng would regret it in the future.

"We will meet again." Said the man to Lin Feng sounding cold.

Immediately after, his silhouette flickered and vanished without trace which astonished the crowd.

She Qiong, Leng Yue and the man were three extremely strong cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and they all wanted to cripple Lin Feng's cultivation and some even wanted to kill him, but the result was She Qiong and the man had escaped while Leng Yue was burnt alive.

They had finally realized that the young man whom Duan Xin Ye liked so much was more mysterious than they could imagine. His natural abilities were much more frightening than they had first thought.

Lin Feng turned around and glanced at the crowd with an ice-cold glare. Immediately the people in the crowd felt their hearts start pounding. After that, the crowd quickly dispersed and left.

Once the crowd was gone, Lin Feng floated down to the ground. He took a deep breath, he no longer had a sharp expression, he just looked exhausted.

Exhausted. Lin Feng had pushed himself to the point of exhaustion.

He had condensed his pure Qi to unleash the full power of his black lotus twice. He almost no pure Qi left. Lin Feng could barely raise his hand. If the man had attacked him, Lin Feng wouldn't have stood a chance, that man was much more terrifying than Leng Yue.

“Lin Feng.” Said Duan Xin Ye while moving next to him. When she saw that Lin Feng looked deathly pale, she started to feel guilty. Lin Feng had ended up in this position because she selfishly wanted to see him again.

“Don’t worry, I’m alright.” Said Lin Feng softly to Duan Xin Ye after which an adorable expression appeared on her face. She was hiding her sadness of not being able to marry him.

“No need to fly back, I will accompany you to the exit.” Said Duan Xin Ye to Lin Feng. Lin Feng slightly nodded and said: “Alright, let’s walk through the palace.”

The Imperial Palace was gigantic, it seemed like an endless landscape. There were seven thousand two hundred large residences, three thousand six hundred dining halls, an innumerable amount of ordinary halls and people, there were even more than four thousand mountains and three hundred rivers within the territory of the palace. The Imperial Palace was like a small world within the world.

Besides, considering all of this, the Imperial Palace was extremely calm and tranquil. It was surrounded by mountains and rivers, beautiful bridges were built over the lakes, the high mountains had rivers peacefully flowing down, every now and again there were people who could be seen taking a walk through the scenery. Of course, other roads also led to vast plains where Lin Feng could see people fighting, some of these battles were arranged to test their strength, while others were actual dangerous battles.

When the people saw Duan Xin Ye, they were surprised. Duan Xin Ye was surprisingly walking alone with a young man, Duan Xin Ye looked soft and gentle, she looked like a young girl in love.

This news would quickly spread through the Imperial Palace.

Lin Feng was also casually looking around.

“Lin Feng, can you see over there? It’s called Wu Ya Mountain, that is where my brother Wu Ya lives.”

At that moment, Duan Xin Ye was pointing at a distance mountain, the landscape was breathtaking. The foot of the mountain was emerald green and rivers were twisting through the lush greenery, it was extremely beautiful.

Besides, on the tip of the mountain, there was a small palace, on the edge of the palace, there was a large waterfall flowing from the mountain to the river below.

“Such beautiful scenery.” Lin Feng sighed in amazement. Lin Feng had just thought that everything would be gigantic and imposing in the Imperial Palace, but while walking through the different places, he understood it’s the unique beauty and magnificence that it held. Living there was indeed something marvelous, especially in the locations where Duan Wu Ya and Duan Xin Ye lived. The places where they lived were breathtakingly beautiful and tranquil. Duan Wu Ya lived in a breathtaking mountain scenery while Duan Xin Ye lived in a tranquil forest with a stream.

“It is great indeed, but I will not get to see it in the future.” Said Duan Xin Ye who sounded a bit sad, but then immediately her sadness turned into a smile, did such scenery really matter? The most important thing was that she would get to be with Lin Feng.

At that moment, Duan Xin Ye felt a hand next to hers, Lin Feng started to hold her hand with his warm and gentle hand.

Duan Xin Ye shivered and looked at Lin Feng. He was looking at her with a resplendent smile on his face.

Duan Xin Ye beautifully smiled while looking at Lin Feng. Duan Xin Ye also started to hold onto Lin Feng’s hand.

The sun was radiating its light down onto these two bodies, a talented and handsome young man, walking hand in hand with a beautiful noble girl with the beautiful scenery in the background, the scene was like something only told in stories.

Lin Feng was smiling warmly, Duan Xin Ye was walking with him and holding his hand so that everybody would know that Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye were together. One can only imagine the kind of pressure Duan Xin Ye was under. She was a beautiful young woman, she was a princess, but for Lin Feng, she would abandon her status, her family and her right to live in the Imperial Palace, only to be with him.

She felt an uncontrollable yearning for Lin Feng, would he ever disappoint her?

At that moment, in the mountains, beside a waterfall, two people appeared. Just like Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye, these two people were a handsome young man and a beautiful woman.

“Huh?” When these two people saw Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye, they were a bit surprised.

“What a beautiful woman.” Thought that young man when he saw Duan Xin Ye. She looked precious and elegant just like a lotus flower in blossom. She had a beautiful smile which radiated from her face.

The beautiful girl by his side was a fellow disciple, she was exceedingly beautiful but she still couldn't reach Duan Xin Ye's beauty.

Immediately after, the young man slowly turned his head and looked at Lin Feng. He had the feeling that he had already seen Lin Feng in the past, but he could not remember him.

“Have we met him before?” Asked the young man while frowning.

The young girl was looking at Duan Xin Ye. She hadn't even paid attention to Lin Feng. Duan Xin Ye was very beautiful which made her feel slightly uncomfortable, especially since her fellow disciple was looking at her in such an ambiguous way a moment before.

When the young girl heard her fellow disciple, she turned to Lin Feng and also had the same feeling, as if she had already seen Lin Feng somewhere, but she couldn't remember where.

“Eeeeeeeee.....” In the air, an eagle cried out and then landed beside the young man.

When Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye heard the call of the eagle, their attention was drawn in that direction as well. At that moment, they both raised their heads and looked at the place beside the waterfall. Lin Feng frowned and a dazzling light flashed through his eyes.

“It's him.” Lin Feng's eyes looked extremely cold. Even though he had never seen them before, judging from their descriptions and the eagle, he had guessed who they were already.

On that day he returned from Celestial River to Yangzhou City, as he rushed towards Yangzhou City, two silhouettes had appeared atop an eagle, he only had time to see them fly away into the distance. When Lin Feng had arrived in Yangzhou City, he saw that these people had crushed Liu Cang Lan and Lin Feng's statues and killed the Chi Xie soldier that were on guard, they were extremely cold-blooded and savage.

They said that if Lin Feng wanted his revenge, he could find them in the Imperial City.

Lin Feng could still remember his name: Ling Tian.

“Huh?” Ling Tian noticed Lin Feng’s cold glare and felt a cold chill of killing intent. Ling Tian frowned hideously when he noticed this.

Ling Tian was sure that he had never seen Lin Feng but he looked extremely familiar. He had long forgotten about the statues and the slaughter of some insignificant guards.

“Ling Tian, what’s wrong?” At that moment, in the sky above the waterfall there was soft and gentle voice. Immediately after, Duan Wu Ya appeared to their side and saw the two silhouettes in the distance.

Surprisingly, it was his sister Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng.

However, Lin Feng and Ling Tian didn’t look like they were on good terms.

Chapter 364: Against the current

“Your Highness, who are those two people over there?” Asked Ling Tian to Duan Wu Ya. Duan Xin Ye was a graceful, elegant and gorgeous young woman, he wanted to know who she was. Also, Lin Feng was looking at him in an extremely cold way and was surprisingly releasing killing intent with his glare. Ling Tian also wanted to know who he was and why he recognised him.

“The young woman is my sister, Duan Xin Ye.” Said Duan Wu Ya which surprised Ling Tian. Her Majesty the Princess... No wonder that she looked so elegant, graceful and beautiful.

“I already heard that the princess was extremely beautiful but this exceeds my imagination. She’s extraordinarily beautiful.” Said Ling Tian who revealed the thoughts in his mind. Duan Xin Ye’s beauty profoundly affected him.

“It’s just.... Who’s that person with her? I don’t know him.” Said Ling Tian while looking at Duan Wu Ya. Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye were walking hand in hand together and their silhouettes were becoming clearer as they moved closer. Ling Tian had the feeling that he knew Lin Feng and his intuition was growing stronger.

He had never seen Lin Feng but still had a very familiar impression.

“Am I imagining things?” Thought Ling Tian but immediately after, he refuted this idea, as a cultivator, his senses were extremely acute, especially after he broke through to the Xuan Qi

layer, he couldn't be wrong.

“He is.....” Said Duan Wu Ya who initially wanted to speak.

“We already encountered each other!” Said a voice suddenly interrupting Duan Wu Ya. Ling Tian saw that Lin Feng was fixedly staring at him. Lin Feng's eyes looked as cold, Lin Feng was able to hear what Duan Wu Ya and Ling Tian were saying from so far in the distance.

“You seem extremely familiar...” Said Ling Tian while looking at Lin Feng and then added: “But please forgive me, I can't remember where I have met Your Excellency in the past?”

“As expected, he can't recognize me.” Thought Lin Feng. Ling Tian didn't remember him. In Yangzhou City, he had destroyed the statues, Lin Feng didn't care about that, what he cared about was the dozens of lives that had been lost because of Ling Tian's arrogance. These soldiers were all killed because someone wanted to pick a fight with Lin Feng.

“You've never seen me face to face, it's also the first time that we have met in person, but I could never forget you.” Lin Feng's voice was ice-cold and he then said: “The place we encountered each other, it was in Yangzhou City.”

“Yangzhou City?” Ling Tian frowned, Yangzhou City was only a small city, he didn't remember much about it, he only knew one person that was associated with it.”

“It’s you.” Ling Tian was stupefied and then looked at Lin Feng in a cold way. He remembered the name on the statue, Lin Feng.

“It seems like you remember me now.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. In the Imperial Palace, he had seen Leng Yue and now he even encountered Ling Tian. However, he was within Duan Wu Ya’s palace.

The Imperial Palace was a complex place.

“Ling Tian, Lin Feng, it seems like you know each other. You don’t need me to introduce you then.” Said Duan Wu Ya when he saw Lin Feng and Ling Tian were furiously glaring at each other. He couldn’t help but speak in a gentle voice and smile. He wanted to soften the atmosphere.

But they were already enemies, could a few simple words possibly change the situation?

Of course, it was impossible, especially since Lin Feng and Ling Tian’s conflict was based on blood. A few dozen soldiers had lost their lives, could Lin Feng just forget that?

The two of them were aggressively staring at each other, like predators.

The young girl on Ling Tian’s side was looking at Lin Feng as well. It seemed like that Marquis of Yangzhou City wasn’t as simple as she believed, surprisingly, he was with the princess. It

also seemed like Duan Wu Ya was extremely friendly with him as well. Initially, she thought that Duan Wu Ya was just the person who granted Lin Feng with the title of marquis, she didn't think that they had a relationship.

But Lin Feng probably couldn't be compared to Ling Tian.

She knew how gifted and talented Ling Tian was. He was infinitely stronger than her, now that they came to the Imperial City, everybody would know them sooner or later, the entire city would admire them, they were destined to become the names on everyone's lips.

"Xin Ye, what are you and Lin Feng doing here?" Asked Duan Wu Ya when he sensed that atmosphere was a bit strange. This time, he was talking to Duan Xin Ye.

Duan Xin Ye looked at Duan Wu Ya and said: "I'm sending Lin Feng off as it is his first time coming to the Imperial Palace."

"Alright, you should leave." Said Duan Wu Ya in a soft and gentle tone. He didn't want Lin Feng to stay there, apparently, there was a conflict between them so Duan Wu Ya didn't want them to end up fighting each other.

Duan Xin Ye pulled on Lin Feng's hand. Lin Feng obviously understood what Duan Wu Ya meant as well. He was looking at Ling Tian. Lin Feng had already used up a lot of energy at that moment, fighting right now wasn't an option. Besides, he couldn't afford to not give face to Duan Wu Ya. After all, Duan Wu Ya's

strength and power were inconceivable for Lin Feng. Also, Duan Wu Ya was constantly helping Lin Feng and he appreciated their friendship.

Duan Wu Ya was extremely friendly to Lin Feng, Lin Feng didn't want to cause problems for him. Duan Wu Ya, as an enemy, would be terrifying. He was also Duan Xin Ye's brother, Lin Feng obviously didn't want to get into a conflict with him.

Therefore, Lin Feng wouldn't fight Ling Tian there.

"I came to the Imperial City." Said Lin Feng towards Ling Tian which made Ling Tian narrow his eyes. He, of course, knew what Lin Feng meant. Back in Yangzhou City when he left, he said that if Lin Feng wanted revenge, he could come and look for him in the Imperial City and Lin Feng had come.

"So what?" Replied Ling Tian. He looked extremely proud and arrogant. Ling Tian had dared to destroy Lin Feng's statue and kill some of Lin Feng's army, he was fearless all the way, for him, Lin Feng was nothing, a simple marquis, nothing more. In front of him, these people he had killed weren't considered geniuses, so they were just insects, nobodies.

"You will pay for shedding the blood of my brothers." Said Lin Feng looking calm, but his insides were boiling.

"A few insects are dead, so what? They were useless." Said Ling Tian with disdain. He was humiliating the guards he killed.

A few insignificant insects, nothing more. How could Ling Tian care about them?

“Concerning your revenge, I said already, if you want to get it, come and find me, we will fight. Of course, I hope you’re strong because I will not show mercy to the weak.” Said Ling Tian in an extremely arrogant tone, looking down on Lin Feng.

When Lin Feng was starting to gain his reputation, Ling Tian decided to go to Yangzhou City and destroy Lin Feng’s statue, what gave a nobody like him the right to have his own statue?

Besides, Lin Feng was with the elegant princess, Ling Tian hated Lin Feng even more from that moment, or more precisely, he was jealous.

“Be patient.” Said Lin Feng and then started walking away. He was leaving with Duan Xin Ye.

Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye soon disappeared into the distance.

Duan Wu Ya stayed behind with the two people. Duan Wu Ya was annoyed, how did he not have any information about Lin Feng and Ling Tian being enemies?

“I will wait.” Thought Ling Tian. Lin Feng was threatening him? It had been a long time since somebody had dared to threaten him. Since Lin Feng was making him wait, he would look forward to seeing what would happen.

A trivial Chi Xie Marquis, nothing more. He just cared about not making Duan Wu Ya lose face, otherwise he would have immediately attacked Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, why are these people your enemies?” Asked Duan Xin Ye while walking slowly with him in the Imperial Palace. She couldn’t help but ask, she was too curious.

“Initially, there was no enmity between us, we didn’t even know each other. They didn’t know me, but they came to Yangzhou City, destroyed the statues of Liu Cang Lan and me, if it had just been that, it would have been alright, but they also killed some of my personal soldiers and shouted a message to the entire city, everybody was to tell me that if I wanted my revenge, I should come look for them in the Imperial City.” Explained Lin Feng slowly, he was still furious. Lin Feng would definitely avenge the Chi Xie soldiers that died.

“Since I have encountered him here, Ling Tian will definitely meet his end in the Imperial City, no matter what, even if he is good friends with the second prince.” When he finished talking, a cold and ruthless light flashed in his eyes, he looked like a vicious murderer. In not even a year, Lin Feng had learnt many different skills and he understood a great deal more than in the past. In the Imperial City, the situation was becoming more turbulent, even though Lin Feng didn’t despise outstanding geniuses, he also had to go against the current sometimes.

Chapter 365: Fellow Students

When Duan Xin Ye saw that Lin Feng was releasing a cold energy, she held Lin Feng's hand even tighter and smiled to him in a gentle way. She looked at Lin Feng and said: "In our world, many people will try and crush another person's pride by killing the people associated with them. They are extremely talented, monstrously strong, and think that they are at the top of the food chain, for them, the lives of a few normal people do not mean much.

Duan Xin Ye perfectly knew that Lin Feng was carefree, sometimes aggressive and cold, he showed no mercy to those he killed, but in his heart, he still had compassion, otherwise, he wouldn't be so angry that a few soldiers had lost their lives. On the continent, there were many people who were kind-hearted, honest and exceptionally gifted, they didn't like killing people, however, once they experienced the coldness and cruelty of the world, these honest and kind-hearted young people had no choice but to take up the sword to kill.

Lin Feng had also gone through a similar conflict in his heart. Heaven and earth were cruel, they treat all creatures as straw dogs, even Liu Cang had these feelings.

"But the most important thing is that your heart doesn't change, if your heart stays the same, my heart will forever be yours." Said Duan Xin Ye with a sweet smile on her face, as if she was trying to calm Lin Feng down.

When Lin Feng saw Duan Xin Ye's smile, he smiled softly. Actually, as a princess, Duan Xin Ye was constantly witnessing

people using plots and machinations against each other.

But Duan Xin Ye's smile was pure and soft because she didn't allow anything to pollute her heart.

Lin Feng stretched his other hand and gently caressed her face which made her blush. She had the feeling that her body was on fire, and she slowly lowered her head.

"I will always stick to my principles." Said Lin Feng slowly as if he was declaring his intention. No matter how cold he was or how many people he killed, he always stuck to his principles.

"Lin Feng, my brother's friends are extremely gifted, they all have extremely important backgrounds, Ling Tian and that young woman must be extraordinary people if they were able to draw my brother's attention. You have to be careful." Said Duan Xin Ye while raising her head. People who could come to Wu Ya's mountain were all exceptional individuals.

"I understand." Nodded Lin Feng. He wanted to kill Ling Tian but it didn't mean that he was going to act carelessly. Ling Tian and that girl rode a Xuan level ferocious beast, they were arrogant and proud, their strength had to be incredible as well, besides, they could curry favour from Duan Wu Ya which proved to Lin Feng even more that they were not ordinary people.

In order to kill them, Lin Feng still needed to become stronger.

Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng continued to chat as they walked for a long time, without even realizing it, they had already left the Imperial Palace.

Around the Imperial Palace, there was a long river and a beautiful forest. In the middle, there was a large road, the people entering and leaving were very few, at the moment when Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye were leaving the Imperial Palace, they only saw a few silhouettes and there was also a motionless carriage, as it had been waiting for someone.

The few people present were all amazed when they saw Duan Xin Ye, they all looked at her in an extremely respectful way and everyone bowed to her. They were also looking at Lin Feng with eyes filled with curiosity. Duan Xin Ye didn't care about them wondering who Lin Feng was.

But when Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye arrived next to the carriage, it was still motionless. There was only one person leaning against the side, they could see that person's back, he was carrying a sword. He looked sluggish and had his eyes closed.

“You two are really slow.” Suddenly said a lazy sounding voice.

He slightly moved and then turned around. That young man looked at Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng, he had beautiful feminine eyes and was smiling indifferently.

“Wen Ao Xue.” Lin Feng was stupefied. But immediately after, the surprise disappeared from his face and he also smiled: “Long

time no see.”

Wen Ao Xue smiled as well and immediately after, he stood perfectly straight and released an extremely sharp energy which suddenly invaded the entire atmosphere, Lin Feng was surprised, then the young man with his feminine beauty, started moving towards Lin Feng with a strange expression on his face.

Lin Feng was stupefied, then Lin Feng’s eyes flashed with a dangerous light as well and he moved to intercept Wen Ao Xue.

“Sword!” Whispered Wen Ao Xue. He raised his finger which became as sharp as a sword as it started absorbing sword energy, it looked swift and fierce.

“Sun!” Said Lin Feng, at the same time, he also stretched his finger out towards Wen Ao Xue, his finger contained his sword Qi as well as his scorching sun Qi.

“Crrr, crrrr....”

The terrifying energies were clashing in the air, Lin Feng and Wen Ao Xue’s fingers collided and a cyclone of power burst out.

Lin Feng’s body was projected back two steps. While Wen Ao Xue was still standing in the same place, looking at Lin Feng.

“Xuan Qi layer.” Smiled Lin Feng. They hadn’t met for a while and it seemed like Wen Ao Xue had also broken through to the

Xuan Qi layer, but Lin Feng wasn't surprised, it was actually very normal. At the time when he joined the Celestial Academy, Wen Ao Xue's cultivation level was already higher than Lin Feng's, even when they joined the war, Wen Ao Xue's cultivation level remained higher than that of Lin Feng.

In such a short time, Lin Feng had learnt the basics of alchemy and had learnt many skills such as the surplus souls technique and on top of that he broke through to the Xuan Qi layer. Wen Ao Xue had high natural abilities so it was normal for him to eventually break through to the Xuan Qi layer.

Lin Feng could understand things better than most people because of his surplus souls and his earth fusion, because of this he was stronger than most people, however, Lin Feng couldn't be described as an incredible and unparalleled genius yet. Wen Ao Xue, She Qiong and even Leng Yue all were geniuses in their own right, they weren't any less gifted than Lin Feng.

Of course, this was just in reference to cultivation abilities, in terms of fighting capacity and combat effectiveness, Lin Feng was much more advanced than most people.

He had only broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer but was able to kill cultivators at the second Xuan Qi layer.

"Indeed, I am at the Xuan Qi layer but I just came back and heard that you are now the top ranked disciple of the Celestial Academy, that doesn't make me feel relieved but it doesn't matter, why did you give me face a moment ago?" Smiled Wen Ao Xue.

A moment before, when both of them had displayed their respective strengths, he had already lost in power but Lin Feng didn't use all of his strength. The scorching hot energy disappeared at the very last second, before it collided with Wen Ao Xue's finger, then Lin Feng had meticulously moved backwards, all of this was to protect Wen Ao Xue's face.

"Were you waiting for me here?" Asked Lin Feng while smiling. He was curious, why was Wen Ao Xue waiting there? They hadn't seen each other for a while and surprisingly, Wen Ao Xue was there, with a carriage, it really seemed like he was waiting for Lin Feng.

"Indeed, I was waiting for you." Said Wen Ao Xue while nodding which surprised Lin Feng. How could Wen Ao Xue know that Lin Feng was in the Imperial Palace, and on top of that why was he waiting for him?

"Teacher told me to come here to wait for you. If Xin Ye is with you, nobody would cause you trouble in the Imperial Palace but outside of it, you can rely on me to stop people causing trouble for you." Explained Wen Ao Xue while smiling at Lin Feng when he saw that he looked perplexed.

"Teacher?" Lin Feng looked startled, Duan Xin Ye and Wen Ao Xue seemed to be really close.

"Lin Feng, Ao Xue is my fellow student." Said Duan Xin Ye to Lin Feng while smiling which surprised Lin Feng. He had finally

understood, that's how it was. Wen Ao Xue and Duan Xin Ye were fellow students, Lin Feng obviously knew who their teacher was: Yan Yu Ping Sheng.

“But, this time our teacher made a mistake, many people caused trouble for Lin Feng when he was in the Imperial Palace.” Said Duan Xin Ye while smiling wryly. Yan Yu Ping Sheng had planned everything to the last detail but there were certain aspects which were overlooked.

“Caused trouble? Xin Ye, even though you were with him, some people dared to attack Lin Feng?” Asked Wen Ao Xue with his beautiful eyes filled with confusion.

“Lin Feng came across She Qiong.” Said Duan Xin Ye.

“She Qiong?” Wen Ao Xue's pupils shrank, no wonder. If Lin Feng had encountered She Qiong, it would go badly because he was madly in love with Duan Xin Ye. She Qiong wouldn't care about giving face to anybody.

“She Qiong didn't cause too much trouble for Lin Feng did he?” Asked Wen Ao Xue puzzled. Considering She Qiong's temperament, he wouldn't let Lin Feng off.

Duan Xin Ye shook her head and smiled, then she heard Lin Feng say slowly: “We fought, nothing came of it.”

“You fought?” Asked Wen Ao Xue calmly while frowning. Lin

Feng had said it in a very relaxed manner but She Qiong was incredibly strong, surprisingly, Lin Feng was saying that the two of them fought each other.

Chapter 366: The Nine Dragon Mountain Chain

“Yes, after the fight, he left.” Said Lin Feng as if it was absolutely normal. He then turned to Duan Xin Ye.

“Ao Xue and I will go together from here, you should head back.”

“Alright.” Said Duan Xin Ye while nodding in a cute way, but she tightly gripped onto Lin Feng’s hand, she felt reluctant to leave him, she said: “Be careful.”

“Don’t worry.” Said Lin Feng while smiling in a tender way. Immediately after, their hands slowly separated from each other. Duan Xin Ye then walked back while turning her head now and then, as if she was afraid that Lin Feng would run away and never come back.

Lin Feng had made her a promise but she was still scared to lose him, because she cared so much about him, she was terrified by the idea of losing him.

Lin Feng was smiling the whole time. Only when Duan Xin Ye’s silhouette completely vanished from his view did Lin Feng turn his head around. At that moment, Wen Ao Xue’s facial expression looked ambiguous, he had a smile yet not a smile on his face.

They hadn’t met for a very long time but Lin Feng had already broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, he had become the top

student of the Celestial Academy. He was worshiped and revered by many people and he even obtained the princess' heart, Lin Feng was really enjoying a good life recently.

“Why do we have a carriage?” Asked Lin Feng which made the ambiguous smile disappear from Wen Ao Xue's face. Lin Feng looked at the carriage, he wasn't a woman yet Wen Ao Xue had brought a carriage to pick him up.

“Who knows, you might have wanted to elope with the princess, so I brought a carriage.” Said Wen Ao Xue while laughing which made Lin Feng roll his eyes with exasperation. He ignored Wen Ao Xue and climbed onto the carriage.

Wen Ao Xue sat in the front of urged on the horses with the whip as they started trotting slowly.

“Where were you all this time?” Asked Lin Feng as he sat next to Wen Ao Xue on the front of the carriage.

I was at the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain, at the peak of Mount Sword.” Said Wen Ao Xue. “There, I closed my eyes for a while and managed to break through to the Xuan Qi layer. I was successful in my training.

“Nine Dragon Mountain Chain... Mount Sword...” Whispered Lin Feng. In the east of the Imperial City, there was a vast mountain range with many ferocious beasts, it was a bit like the Black Wind Mountain, it was an extremely large region and on the other side of the mountain chain was a neighbouring country.

“Lin Feng had also heard that the powerful Yue Clan lived in a forest within that mountain chain. Wen Ao Xue had mentioned the Mount Sword, it was one of the high peaks in that mountain chain.

“Yes, practicing sword skills at Mount Sword is great, I improved so much on my path of sword cultivation, you should also go there when you have time.” Explained Wen Ao Xue. In the Imperial City, strong sword cultivators particularly liked to go to Mount Sword to practice their sword skills, but rumors said that it wasn’t good to go there too often. For a sword cultivator, the best time to go was before breaking through to the next layer or when one was on the verge of understanding something new regarding swords, going there too many times would have the opposite effect and cause one’s path to become harder.

Of course, that was just a rumor.

“Let’s go then.” Said Lin Feng suddenly which shocked Wen Ao Xue.

“What, now?” Asked Wen Ao Xue while glancing at Lin Feng with his beautiful eyes.

“Yes, now.” Said Lin Feng while resolutely nodding his head. Wen Ao Xue was stupefied, he stared at Lin Feng and remained frozen in place, overcome with confusion.

“You’re insane, if I had known earlier, I wouldn’t have told you.” Said Wen Ao Xue upset. Immediately after, the horses were

charging forth at full speed, the wheels of the carriage were rolling at incredible speeds across the ground. The carriage was moving towards the east at full speed.

The Imperial City was an incredibly gigantic place. Wen Ao Xue was driving the carriage at full speed through the Imperial City, but they managed to arrive after only a day of travel.

Wen Ao Xue stretched while looking at the gigantic mountain chain filled with ferocious beasts. Wen Ao Xue looked exhausted, not because of training hard but because he had been driving the carriage at full speed for an entire day. He was breathing deeply, he was really exhausted.

Wen Ao Xue saw Lin Feng jump from the carriage and look at the mountain range with twinkling eyes. He looked excited.

It was the first time that Lin Feng had gone to the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain, it also had many ferocious beasts just like the Black Wind Mountain but there were still some differences.

In the Black Wind Mountain, the slopes were filled with trees, and their topography also differed because in the Black Wind Mountain, there weren't many precipices. Besides, the topography of the Nine-Dragon Mountain Chain was extreme, there were huge variations in altitude between the different mountains. However, they both contained terrifying ferocious beasts, therefore the thick Qi from the beasts filled the atmosphere.

Even though it was filled with ferocious beasts, there were many

people who journeyed to that mountain. Ferocious beasts were very dangerous and their forests were extremely dangerous places. Hunting and fighting ferocious beasts were a great way to accumulate battle experience, so cultivators would constantly risk their lives by fighting against ferocious beasts. They hardened themselves and strengthened their determination by fighting against ferocious beasts. At the same time, in beast forests, cultivators could also find rare treasures.

Therefore, practicing in a beast forest was extremely dangerous but there were many people who went there anyway.

“Where is Mount Sword?” Asked Lin Feng.

“Go straight for about five kilometres, you will see it.” Explained Wen Ao Xue. Immediately after, he added: “I just came from there, so I won’t be able to accompany you. We will have to part here.” When he finished talking, he immediately turned around and jumped back onto the carriage. Then, he used his long whip to urge the horses on as the sound of the carriage departing filled the air. It wasn’t long until he was gradually disappearing into the distance.

Lin Feng watched Wen Ao Xue leave, what a likable person. He looked strange, feminine and handsome, but he acted natural, unrestrained and unruly.

Wen Ao Xue was also extremely gifted. He was a man of unyielding character but he wasn’t reckless at all, he always stood head and shoulders above others, he wasn’t scared that people wouldn’t know how strong and prestigious he was.

Very quickly, Lin Feng turned around and walked into the mountain range. He intended to practice and improve his level.

After all, in the Imperial City, Lin Feng had a lot of enemies. If he wanted to fight against people like She Qiong and if he wanted to kill Ling Tian, he only had his own strength to rely on. Therefore, when he heard Wen Ao Xue say that this place was ideal to improve a cultivators sword abilities, Lin Feng had immediately decided to come without the slightest degree of hesitation.

Cultivation was something that had no set or defined end and could be practiced without end. Lin Feng was already able to carry out sword fusion, but he hadn't mastered it yet, he was far from it, besides, there had to be much stronger dimensions than that on the path of the sword, it's just that Lin Feng hadn't uncovered them yet.

The sun was shining upon the thick and dense forest, only a few rays of light could pierce through the dense vegetation.

Feng Ting was walking through the forest with the greatest of care. Around her were some guards from her clan to protect her.

"Xiu, we're already about five kilometres inside the mountain, if we keep moving forwards, we might encounter some extremely strong Ling level beasts. We have to be extremely careful." Said an old man next to Feng Ting.

"Yes, I know." Said Feng Ting while nodding. Even though she

was scared, she had to continue, her father was sick and she needed to find some Nine Sun Grass.

“Xiu, if you can’t do it, let’s give up. Your father will not blame you. Finding Nine Sun Grass is extremely difficult!” Said the old man while sighing. Nine Sun Grass contained an incredible amount of sun Qi, it contained the incredible vitality of the sun. It only grew in places where pure Qi was extremely dense, only places which were connected to the Qi veins of the earth could grow Nine Sun Grass. That kind of treasure was so precious that even if they found it, there was a good chance that it would get stolen by someone stronger.

Feng Ting slightly shook her head, she would never give up.

“Nine Sun Grass.” Precisely at that moment, Lin Feng was passing nearby and heard these three words which drew his attention. The grass was a Ling level ingredient, it could heal someone’s respiratory system and even strengthen it. It could increase the strength unceasingly. Besides, it was also one of the ingredients of Divine Water pills.

Lin Feng hadn’t forgotten that Yun Xi, who was frozen, needed Nine Sun Grass to keep living.

Lin Feng frowned while looking at Feng Ting and the guards surrounding her. They seemed to take their function of protectors extremely seriously. There were some other people who were looking at that girl in an evil and perverted way, they harboured evil designs, that young girl looked lithe and graceful and had developed curves. She couldn’t sense the looks from those evil

people, but with Lin Feng's acute senses and experience, he easily noticed them.

But Lin Feng was a stranger, would he be able to take care of her?

He made a slight movement and instantly arrived by the girl's group which surprised the guards, who then stared at him with murderous gazes.

"Who are you?" Asked the old guard who was in front of Feng Ting. He was of course very vigilant, in the Nine Dragon mountain chain, a few extremely strong cultivators killed the weaker ones to steal their precious treasures, It was an extremely common phenomenon, therefore if anybody suddenly appeared before them, they would have to be extremely careful.

"Do you know where to find Nine Sun Grass?" Asked Lin Feng towards the girl.

Feng Ting observed Lin Feng, he looked clean, mysterious and handsome.

"No, I don't." Said Feng Ting while shaking her head. She had come hoping to encounter it by luck.

Lin Feng didn't add anything, he only wanted to know if they had information on the Nine Sun Grass.

Chapter 367: Mount Sword

“Let’s work together, how does that sound?” Said Lin Feng after remaining silent for a moment. He wasn’t familiar with this place, if he could really find some Nine Sun Grass and improve his sword skills, he would definitely spend some more time in the Nine Dragon mountain chain helping with their search.

Such an opportunity was extremely rare.

Feng Ting remained silent and ignored Lin Feng’s question, and then Lin Feng heard the old man next to her say: “No need, sorry, we don’t need each other. It would be best if we go our own ways.”

“Indeed, besides, why would you want to stay with us? Who are you?” Said a guard sounding nervous.

Lin Feng rolled his eyes and released a cold energy which astonished the crowd. They felt like they were going to freeze on the spot. How cold. They all quickly went silent.

“Since that is the case, I will go.” Said Lin Feng while slightly shaking his head. If the young girl had agreed to stay with him, that would have been great for her, if Lin Feng was with her then she wouldn’t be in danger, but she stayed silent.

Lin Feng quickly continued on his way. Feng Ting’s eyes twinkled, how straightforward. Such people were rare to find. Lin Feng had come and asked if she knew where to find Nine Sun Grass and on top of that had asked if he could go with them, besides, he

had remained absolutely unperturbed when they rejected his offer.

Lin Feng continued walking forwards and suddenly accelerated rushing deeper into the mountain.

“Awooooooo....”

A wolf had noticed that some people had penetrated its territory and let out a low howl while running towards Lin Feng. Suddenly, the light from a sword glowed and the wolf's head was pierced as it fell onto the ground, it had become a corpse. Besides, Lin Feng's silhouette immediately vanished from that location.

The wolf wasn't the only one to end up like that, after that, many ferocious beasts attacked Lin Feng but it was all in vain, they didn't even manage to slow Lin Feng down. Lin Feng was streaking through the forest just like a meteor as he killed ferocious beasts, he looked majestic.

After a short period of time, Lin Feng came out of the mysterious forest and stopped. In front of him there was a tall mountain peak, it was so high that it looked like it was a pillar that supported the sky.

What amazed Lin Feng the most was that the mountain surprisingly looked like a sword. Its peak looked like the tip of a sword. It looked like it was cutting through the heavens.

“Mount Sword, it was a mountain chain of nine sword-shaped

mountains, that was Mount Sword.”

Lin Feng was stupefied, then his silhouette started flickering insanely towards a mountain peak facing the nine sword mountains, from that mountain peak, this angle was the best for observing them. He would be able to differentiate between each mountain.

No wonder Wen Ao Xue told Lin Feng to walk straight into the depths of the Nine Dragon mountain chain and after five kilometres later he would see, and indeed, that was the case. Anyone, when seeing these nine lofty mountains, would have known that they were Mount Sword.

But there were really some wonders created by nature, surprisingly, the earth had created nine lofty mountains which resembled swords that looked like they were cutting through the heavens, how extraordinary! What mighty swords!

Finally, Lin Feng arrived at the foot of the mountain and stood on a gigantic rock on a steep slope. He then calmly looked at the nine sword mountains, he needed to concentrate a great deal to see as far as their summits, so he could see the entire sword.

“How domineering.” Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the summit of the mountains. In front of him, there were the nine gigantic swords, they looked domineering, they could pierce the earth and the sky, it was extremely impressive.

“No, I can’t! Being domineering doesn’t play an important role at

all in my sword path. That mountain could really benefit swords which contained a domineering aura, but it's not appropriate for my sword. I cannot let the sword path in my heart be influenced."

Lin Feng was thinking deep in his heart. He gradually emerged from his thoughts. Indeed, if a cultivator had just started practicing the sword and randomly absorbed that sword energy and improved it, they would become much stronger. However, Lin Feng's sword already had its own path. His sword was almost alive and had its own type of energy. He couldn't carelessly follow any sword path, he wouldn't necessarily become stronger, on the contrary, it could actually hinder his current path and cause great harm to his future advancements.

What Lin Feng needed was a pure heart that followed a clear path. Because he was able to absorb some of the energy from these mountains, it could influence the sword path in his heart.

At the foot of the mountain, not far from Lin Feng, there was a silhouette brandishing their sword over and over again. It was becoming stronger with each movement, it contained a domineering energy as if it contained the strength of the mountains.

"Exactly as I thought, simply observing the Mount Sword will not make anyone advance, it's not that simple." Whispered Lin Feng. Without the slightest doubt, that person's sword was becoming stronger with each movement and was filled with a domineering energy which was growing stronger as well. As expected, that cultivator had been learning from the swords of Mount Sword but it contained the Qi of Mount Sword.

But, did he really understand swords?

Maybe practicing that way and studying the sword energy of these mountains could help them be outstanding for a short while but in the end, it was hollow. An authentic sword cultivator didn't need to study the sword energy of other sword paths, what they needed was to understand their own sword energy and only then could they walk down their own sword path, this was the only way it would benefit their future progress.

“Let's switch the angles, maybe there will be a difference.” Said Lin Feng. Immediately after, he flew towards the east at full speed, he was constantly flying around and once in a while, he was turning his head and looking at the mountains.

Lin Feng didn't stop flying higher and higher. The higher he was, the more he realized that these mountains were magnificent. It seemed that no matter where a person went, none could escape from them.

When Lin Feng looked at a sword mountain not far from him, he had the impression that the sword was on his side.

Lin Feng didn't stop flying higher, in his field of vision, there were now all nine sword mountains, they looked smaller and smaller, but they were still filled with an incredible sword energy.

When Lin Feng stepped on the top of a mountain, Lin Feng was stupefied. At that moment, he was higher than the nine sword

mountains. It was incredible. He was looking down at the nine swords.

“How powerful, it almost looks like they’re coming at me.” Thought Lin Feng. All the nine swords seemed like they were moving to kill him.

“A person’s strength can’t exceed the laws of the universe, no matter how strong you are, there is always someone who can surpass you in the end.” Said Lin Feng to himself, looking down at these nine sword mountains.

At the moment when Lin Feng was standing at the foot of the mountain, he was looking up at these mountains and had the impression that they were incredibly domineering, it looked like they were attacking the heavens.

But while standing at the top of another mountain and looking down on these nine mountains, his heart was filled with lofty sentiments.

Maybe everybody that came to study the energy of these mountains had different experiences and different ways to improve their sword path. Lin Feng had first looked up at them and now he was looking down on them.

Every sword cultivator trusts their sword. Cultivators are determined to constantly improve themselves, but to do that, they need an incredible courage and only then could they stand above everyone else, looking down.

Lin Feng didn't stay looking at the top of Mount Sword for long. A short while after, he went down again. Then he started to repeatedly go up and down the different mountains while observing the nine sword mountains from different angles.

Lin Feng kept doing that for three days. In three days, he had seen the nine sword mountains from every possible angle.

Finally, on the fourth day, Lin Feng came back to the top of that mountain where he could observe them and sat down cross-legged.

Calmly, he sat down on the top of that mountain and closed his eyes. Without making any sounds or any movements, there was only a gentle breeze blowing across Lin Feng's body at the top of the mountain, it was making Lin Feng's long hair sway gently.

Lin Feng meditated there for three days.

Lin Feng had observed the nine sword mountains from different angles for three days, and then he meditated for another three days.

On the seventh day, a milky white energy started rising into the air towards the sun. It was floating gently on the horizon.

Full of vigour and vitality, rays of sunlight were shining down onto Lin Feng's body, it felt warm and relaxing.

“In the past, I watched the sun rise and fall for three days and understood three new sword skills: Sword of the Rising Sun, Scorching Sword, and Sword of the Setting Sun.”

Lin Feng thought: “I have made great progress on the path of cultivation, I learnt the Cosmos Burning Sun skill, a sun skill, except the Scorching Sword which changed after I learn the sun skill, my Sword of the Rising Sun and the Sword of the Setting Sun haven’t changed at all.”

“My Scorching Sword and Sword of the Rising Sun as well as my Sword of the Setting Sun will become my ultimate attacks.” Said Lin Feng.

An extremely sharp sword energy appeared as Lin Feng suddenly moved.

Chapter 368: Shaking the earth!

In Lin Feng's hand appeared a brilliant sword light, he condensed it to create a pure Qi sword.

Lin Feng slowly used the sword in his hand to practice his movements. The sword had slowly risen into the air like the rising sun of a new day, it was filled with vitality.

Lin Feng's sword abruptly stopped halfway in the air. Lin Feng had stopped his movement and started to frown.

“My Sword of the Rising Sun requires the energy of the rising sun. Even though it is full of vitality, its killing potential is much too weak.” Thought Lin Feng. Immediately after, he condensed another sword and he started the movements again, but it still had the same weakness.

This time, Lin Feng was only practicing his sword skills and wasn't using deadly energy or battle energy. Combining multiple types of energy could strengthen the explosive power of a sword, but it wouldn't help Lin Feng break through another layer of the sword dimension. After having reached a certain sword level, it was necessary to understand one's own true nature, only a pure and unadulterated sword could help a sword cultivator progress on the path of sword cultivation, because each sword contained its own energy.

Lin Feng condensed another sword, and another and so on as if he had forgotten the passage of time. He didn't even stop to

breathe, all he was focused on was his sword.

“It’s slower now, impossible, even though it has the Qi of the rising sun, it’s still too slow, I can’t kill anyone with that.”

“This one is too quick, it doesn’t resemble a rising sun.”

It seemed like there was a flaw and Lin Feng couldn’t find a balance.

At that moment, he suddenly stopped. He didn’t condense another sword and instead he looked at the nine sword mountains in the distance, he seemed pensive and lost in thought.

The nine sword mountains looked very similar, they all had the shape of a sword, but they didn’t look entirely the same, from different angles, Lin Feng got a different impression, especially from above and from the foot of the mountains. When he was looking up at the mountains, Lin Feng had the impression that the swords were piercing the heavens, when he looked at the mountains from above, they looked unstoppable as if they were coming for his life, the same swords gave completely different feelings.

“The same swords, but different feelings.”

Lin Feng was stupefied, his eyes twinkled. He looked at the sun again, it was gradually rising in the sky, it was becoming more and more dazzling as it moved higher into the sky. The sunlight was

also becoming more and more powerful.

Another sword appeared in Lin Feng's hand.

Without any hesitation, Lin Feng started his movements again. That sword looked resplendent and very slow, as if it was only meant to be beautiful, it didn't have any killing potential at all, but without one even realizing it, that sword was becoming more and more dazzling and was filled with the endless power of the rising sun. By the time the sword was halfway up in the air, it was so dazzling that it could rival with the sun.

That sword was neither slow nor quick, it was just like the rising sun, at first it only drew people's attention because of the beauty and then as it moved higher into the sky, it became more powerful without even realizing, and in the blink of an eye, it had become scorching hot.

The sword of the rising sun was diffusing a bright and incredibly dazzling light across the surrounding area. Everything seemed to disappear into that light, only the sword was remaining.

"Scorching Sword!" Said Lin Feng. The sword of the rising sun turned into the scorching sword. There was absolutely no distinction that could be made between the sword of the rising sun and the scorching sword, the sword of the rising sun naturally turned into the scorching sword.

"Crrrr.... Crrrr...." A subtle crackling sound emerged from the atmosphere and suddenly a hundred metre long dazzling sword

light burst into the sky. Everything in the area was unable to escape from that dazzling sword light. It even contained the scorching heat of the sun which invaded the entire area. That Scorching Sword seemed like it had enveloped the entire universe.

“Sword of the Setting Sun!” The scorching sword was still illuminating the area around Lin Feng when suddenly, the sword energy started to change and it lost its radiance, just like the setting sun, it gave the feeling of nostalgia. At the moment when it was the most dazzling, that sword suddenly began to turn into a desolate and sombre sword. These three sword attacks formed a single sword attack, the rising sun would naturally turn into a scorching sun which then became a setting sun, this had been the same since the creation of the universe, it was never going to change.

“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!”

The ground started to burst and explode. The tip of the mountain had been split into two, there was an extremely deep cut on the top of the mountain, the deep cut looked like it led straight to the depths of the mountain and looked as if it was created by a sword.

“What an unbelievable destructive power!” Lin Feng looked at the dispersing light and sighed. At that moment, Lin Feng was merely studying his sword, he wasn’t using the power of his Cosmos Burning Sun, if he had used it, the destructive power of his attack would have doubled.

When thinking about that, Lin Feng started using his Cosmos Burning Sun skill and immediately, a powerful sun Qi was

released, Lin Feng's entire body was surrounded by flames as he bathed in the sunlight.

The sun in the sky shone down towards Lin Feng through the valley as if it was reluctant to leave Lin Feng's side. The sun was actually illuminating Lin Feng, besides, a sun pattern had distinctly appeared on Lin Feng's body.

When using his Cosmos Burning Sun skill under the sunlight, Lin Feng felt like his entire body was filled with an endless strength and power, as if he gained the power of the sun.

His sword started to move again, it was dazzling as it illuminated the atmosphere, a thunderous rumbling sound spread through the atmosphere and they all originated from the top of the mountain on which Lin Feng was standing.

Lin Feng was in absolute immersion with his sword, while practicing sword cultivation, his heart couldn't be distracted by anything else, the only thing he had in mind was his sword.

Sword cultivation.

In the distance, at the foot of the mountain, Feng Ting and the others were gazing into the distance. When they looked at the top of the mountain, they were all astonished.

"How strong! I wonder who that prodigy is, he has an extremely advanced knowledge of swords." Whispered Feng Ting. She could

only see the dazzling light of the sword of the rising sun. It was even more dazzling than the real sun above them in the sky. Even though she was very far away, Feng Ting could still sense the destructive power that the sword contained.

The sword cuts in the mountain left her feeling extremely puzzled.

Those who were with Feng Ting were also all staring at the top of the mountain. Each and every single one of them was astonished. They all wished that they would one day be that strong, when such a sword appeared, the earth and the sky looked colourless in comparison. The only reason they were able to look at it for such a long time, was because they were so far away from it, if they had been near it, they probably wouldn't even be able to keep their eyes open.

“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!”

Feng Ting and the others almost fell to the ground which stupefied them.

“What’s going on?” Asked Feng Ting in a low voice. Immediately after, thunderous rumbling sounds unceasingly invaded the atmosphere.

The ground beneath their feet was even shaking.

“What’s going on?”

“What is happening?”

Feng Ting and the others didn't dare to make a move. The ground was unceasingly shaking under their feet, as if the earth was about to crack open.

It was shaking more and more intensely with each passing second.

What was going on? They all had a massive amount of sweat on their foreheads, they had never experienced such a strange phenomenon. The entire ground seemed like it was going to collapse under their feet. They raised their heads and saw that the mountain was also shaking, it was terrifying!

Feng Ting and the ones accompanying her weren't the only people in the area, there were other people practicing their sword skills. At that moment, they had all stopped and were all astonished, gigantic boulders were falling down the slope of the mountain. It was emitting a rumbling noise which filled the atmosphere, but the most terrifying part was that, in front of them, the nine sword mountains were violently shaking and breaking apart.

The ground continued shaking more intensely throughout the entire area, everyone was panic-stricken and had all stopped whatever they were doing. They were all dumbstruck. Beasts were roaring, neighing and howling and going insane as they ran away from the source of the tremors.

Only Lin Feng was left at the top of the mountain practicing his sword cultivation, he was in full immersion with his sword dimension. The world around him could explode and fall apart, but he would remain focused on his sword. In his heart, there was nothing but his sword.

Lin Feng was in the sword dimension studying his sword, it seemed like he had forgotten about the rest of the world and forgotten the time.

According to rumors, those who could penetrate into the dimension of earth fusion had an incredible understanding and could reach their moments of enlightenment more easily. That rumor wasn't wrong, Lin Feng was precisely in fusion with the earth and having a moment of enlightenment.

An incredible sword energy emerged and oppressed the atmosphere across several hundred kilometres as it rose into the sky.

That incredible sword energy filled the sky, it was unceasingly growing stronger as the energy spread over a larger area. Several hundred kilometres around the mountain, all the retreating ferocious beasts no longer dared to move an inch and every cultivator had turned deathly pale.

How was such a thing possible? How could such a powerful sword energy appear in Xue Yue?

That sword energy could destroy the heavens.

“KACHA!” It seemed like that sound came from the sky. That sword energy which rose into the sky was growing even more terrifying, the nine mountains started shaking even more and looked as if they were going to collapse.

In the territory of the Yue Clan, an old white haired cultivator, who was practicing his cultivation, abruptly opened his eyes when he sensed that incredible sword energy, his facial expression drastically changed.

“Oh no, this is bad!” He howled furiously and then jumped into the air, smashing a hole through his roof, he then gazed into the distance in the direction of the nine sword mountains.

It seemed like there was a sword in the sky, a sword made completely from energy, sweat started to drip from the old man’s forehead.

The seal was going to break, who was trying to break the seal on the evil sword?

Chapter 369: The Evil Sword

In Xue Yue, those who understood the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain the best was the Xue Yue Clan.

The Yue Clan knew exactly why the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain had its name, it was a blurry part of the history of their clan.

According to the rumors, there were nine ordinary mountains where extremely strong sword cultivators went to practice their sword skills, and these strong cultivators had carved these mountains into nine mountains which were shaped like swords.

But only a core disciple of the Yue Clan would know that these nine swords mountains had that shape because one of their ancestors fought against an extremely strong sword cultivator. It had been a tremendous battle. That extremely strong sword cultivator refused to die and burned his soul strength with an incredible pressure which turned his sword into an evil sword. He then used that evil sword to severely injure the ancestor of the Yue Clan, almost killing them.

In the end, the ancestor of the Yue Clan and another extremely strong cultivator of that time acted together to suppress that evil sword and divide it into nine parts of power, which they named the nine dragons.

They are also the nine sword mountains, from that moment, only the strongest cultivators of the Yue Clan, who lived in a forest about fifty kilometres away from the nine sword mountains, knew

the truth.

On the horizon, black clouds were starting to gather. When the old white haired man saw these evil clouds, he heaved a sigh.

He didn't know exactly when the evil sword was sealed but at that moment, it seemed to be emerging once again and he didn't know if it was a fortunate or an ominous event.

In Xue Yue, there was surprisingly someone strong enough to break the seal of the evil sword and attract it to him.

Only a genius who had broken through to an incredible level of the sword dimension could have achieved such an incredible feat. The old man was wondering who that person could be. That person had surprisingly broken through to an incredible layer within the sword dimension. It was clear that they were already extremely advanced on their path of sword cultivation. Their natural abilities would also be considered terrifying.

“Fine, why do I need to think so much? The seal has been broken, that might not necessarily be a bad thing.” Thought the old white haired man while looking at the black clouds on the horizon. His sharp facial expression gradually turned into a relaxed expression. He didn't care, everything that was fated to happen, would happen.

At that moment, the nine mountains were shaking more and more violently. In the air, black clouds covered the sky. Sunlight was obstructed and darkness had invaded the mountain chain. An

extremely terrifying and oppressive Qi was covering the earth. Ferocious beasts were crawling on their bellies, even Feng Ting and the others had all fallen onto the ground. Sweat was unceasingly dripping from their foreheads. They had almost collapsed under the pressure.

These people didn't know what the old man knew. They didn't know what was happening at all. They just felt like the ground was going to collapse and crumble under their feet. It was too terrifying.

That oppressive sword energy made their entire bodies tremble. They didn't dare move, fearing that the celestial sword would kill them if they did.

At that moment, Lin Feng also regained consciousness from his flash of enlightenment. He was amazed by the topographical changes that occurred.

He would have never thought that when he regained consciousness from his flash of enlightenment, the sky and the ground would look so terrifying. Everybody, even hundreds of kilometres in the periphery, had the same feeling of dread. Lin Feng could also sense the oppressive Qi, besides, at the top of the mountain, the black clouds seemed to be forming directly above him, so he could sense the oppressive Qi even more intensely and distinctly than everybody else.

“What's going on?” Thought Lin Feng while a cold sweat dripped from his forehead. Lin Feng gazed into the distance and saw that the nine mountains were unceasingly shaking and emitting a

rumbling noise. These nine sword mountains were all slowly starting to break in half.

At the same time, in the sky above the nine sword mountains, a sword illusion appeared in the middle of the black clouds, it was a dark and evil sword.

“What a terrifying strength. What a powerful and brutal evil energy.” Thought Lin Feng who was astonished. He was just under the black clouds and could distinctly sense the evil energy it contained, wrath, humiliation, hatred and all sorts of evil energy was present, and they were all forming that evil sword.

“BOOM!”

The mountains seemed to be exploding and the earth was splitting apart. Lin Feng was in a state of shock and violently shaking. The nine mountains in front of him had suddenly exploded and were collapsing. Huge rocks were falling from the sky and creating whistling sounds as they fell to the earth. There were also some stones which were completely destroyed and turned into powder in the air.

A sword, surprisingly, there were swords.

Lin Feng's heart was pounding. The rocky surface of the nine sword mountains had exploded and in front of him appeared nine gigantic swords. They were gigantic pitch black swords that looked terrifyingly evil, they were facing the sky but their terrifying evil energy was absolutely shocking.

Not only Lin Feng but everybody else in the region remained frozen in their initial positions.

In Xue Yue, many people knew that there were nine sword mountains in the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain, they knew that by observing these mountains, sword cultivators could become stronger. Everybody knew that these mountains were special, they were filled with a sword cultivators' determination but what nobody knew was that these nine sword mountains surprisingly were nine gigantic swords, and they knew even less that they were terrifying evil swords.

At that moment, a deadly light was emerging from these nine gigantic swords. In the deathly silence of the atmosphere, the nine swords were shaking and emitting whistling sounds, the evil black clouds started rolling through the sky.

“BOOM!”

The nine evil swords rushed in the air and started to shrink. The energy was condensed into nine normal sized swords, suddenly, Lin Feng felt like his entire body was being oppressed by an incredible sword energy which prevented him from moving, his heart was violently pounding.

Lin Feng had felt that these swords were alive and they were all staring at him.

The dark swords suddenly fell from the sky and fell like meteors

towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng was terrified when he saw this, what was going on? Why would these swords suddenly attack him?

How could he resist the power of such terrifying swords?

Lin Feng couldn't defend himself against these swords, they were too quick. They were so fast that it was unbelievable. Lin Feng had a look of hopeless despair on his face, the evil swords were moving towards him at full speed. A rumbling sound emerged in the atmosphere and immediately after, Lin Feng blacked out. At the top of the mountain where he was standing, there was an incredibly deep crater. Lin Feng and the swords had disappeared into the depths of the mountain.

Deep in the darkness, there was no light at all. However, at that moment, Lin Feng felt omniscient, everything was much clearer and more distinct than usual.

"I'm not dead?" Lin Feng was astonished, he reached out his hand and touched the wall, it felt cold.

Lin Feng hadn't died because he could still feel his body. He was still alive but the nine swords....

At that moment, Lin Feng could sense the nine swords, they had penetrated into his body, it felt like he could make it appear at any moment, as if the evil sword fused into his body.

"How could such a thing happen?" Lin Feng felt like everything

was a nightmare.

Wen Ao Xue had told him about the mountain chain which is why Lin Feng had come hoping to make a breakthrough. When Lin Feng sensed that the mountains were influencing him, he did not absorb their energy and instead he studied the sword of the rising sun, the scorching sword as well as the sword of the setting sun. Because he had a breakthrough when practicing his skill, he suddenly had a moment of enlightenment, he fell deeply into his sword dimension, but when he regained consciousness, everything outside was collapsing. The nine sword mountains then exploded and revealed nine evil swords which attacked him and fused with his body. Everything was too insane, Lin Feng felt like it was too insane for it to be reality.

But this was reality.

The evil sword had been confined for a thousand years, it was weakened by a great deal. Over the years it had remained silent and never attempted to break the seal, but then, Lin Feng spent days studying the sword mountains and seemed to have a breakthrough in his sword dimension, that was probably what attracted the evil sword, which then broke the seal and merged with Lin Feng's body.

“Huh?” At that moment, Lin Feng frowned. He could feel the evil sword was consuming his soul.

Lin Feng Immediately moved the evil sword inside his body preventing it from having any contact with his soul. As expected, the evil sword calmed down after that and remained silent. It was

very intriguing.

That evil sword wasn't an ordinary sword. These nine heavy swords had a life of their own.

“It seems like I should find a place to give these evil swords a try.” Thought Lin Feng but he couldn't stay in these mountains.

Lin Feng's silhouette flickered, he absorbed the sword energy and seemed to transform into a sword. He didn't move towards the sky but instead he moved towards the ground.

A subtle crackling sound was spreading through the atmosphere. Lin Feng had cut into the mountain and travelled through the interior of the mountain.

After a short period of time, Lin Feng finally emerged from the mountain, at that moment, the black evil clouds had already vanished, the terrifying oppressive sword energy had disappeared as well, but the landscape was suddenly lonely and desolate. Lin Feng was astonished, the nine sword mountains had completely disappeared. After the swords disappeared, a terrifying pure Qi invaded the entire area!

Chapter 370: Veins of the Earth!

“That’s....” Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. After the nine sword mountains had collapsed, the pure Qi heaven and earth burst out. It was extremely dense, even if Lin Feng wasn’t close, he could still perfectly sense that extremely dense pure Qi

“A vein of pure Qi... It’s a huge well of pure Qi.” Lin Feng was astonished. That pure Qi had been accumulating throughout the years to the extent that it would condense into purity stones, more and more purity stones were appearing and it looked like it formed a purity stone mine. Besides, the nine evil swords were monstrously strong, they had been there for so many years, they were able to bathe in pure Qi all this time, no wonder they were so strong.

What excited Lin Feng was that nobody had ever suspected that in the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain, under these nine sword mountains, there were such precious natural resource, a priceless treasure.

Besides, Lin Feng was the first to find it, thus, he would be able to mine purity stones and extract the pure Qi.

“No... A moment ago, the evil swords caused some many tremors, they terrified and scared away a lot of people. Very quickly, people will come back and find out that this place is a well of pure Qi.” Lin Feng didn’t get too excited, he knew that in such situations, he had to stay clear headed. A well of pure Qi was priceless, besides, it contained a myriad of treasures, if it was found by someone else, they would fight Lin Feng for ownership of

it.

Even those who called each other brother amongst the noble clans, they would still fight each other over the Qi vein.

At the Celestial Academy, there were four wells of pure Qi. They had constructed the four cultivation towers above them, it was thus clear how precious and valuable pure Qi was.

“I will not be able to seize that well...” Thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng saw how thick and rich the pure Qi was, it was obviously huge, it would attract many people and lead to a war. Lin Feng didn’t have the power to seize it.

When Lin Feng thought about that, his silhouette flickered and he streaked through the sky towards the well of pure Qi. At the same time, he started using the acute senses from the earth fusion, everything that surrounded him could be clearly sensed by him.

In a flash, Lin Feng arrived at the place where the nine sword mountains were destroyed. Pure Qi was floating above the ground like a mist. Lin Feng released an incredible quantity of sword energy, a sword formed of pure Qi flashed, and started unceasingly absorbing the pure Qi. Lin Feng’s body transformed into a sword and immediately penetrated deep into the Qi well. He opened his Na stone on his ring and stored all the purity stones inside.

Even if he couldn’t absorb all the pure Qi of the well, he could at least pick up the treasures inside, especially since he was the one who discovered it. It contained so many precious treasures.

Cultivators would never refuse purity stones, even if they didn't use them, they could also exchange them for other things, purity stones was the basic currency of a cultivator.

“So many, there isn't even enough space in my Na stone.”

Very quickly, Lin Feng looked satisfied. That well of pure Qi was shocking. It was filled purity stones, stones of lower quality were numerous but they were mixed with purity stones of average quality as well.

It was so insane that here and there, Lin Feng even found some precious dazzling treasures, purity stones of higher quality.

One purity stone of higher quality was equivalent to ten thousand purity stones of lower quality. It was incomparable.

“I don't want those of lower quality.” Decided Lin Feng, the space in his Na stone was limited. If he used it all for purity stones of lower quality, he wouldn't have enough space for purity stones of average quality, besides, he didn't have to be worried about the well not having enough purity stones of average quality, therefore, Lin Feng had decided to abandon the purity stones of lower quality, that way he would be able to collect the greatest value.

Lin Feng had made a fortune, that place existed for thousands of years and it was the first time that Lin Feng had accumulated such wealth, being rich was a marvelous feeling.

Lin Feng would be able to give these purity stones to his Chi Xie troops to use for their cultivation. It would be extremely beneficial to them. Lin Feng would be able to create a monstrously powerful army.

Lin Feng surpassed many geniuses of his age, he had no social background, no influence, and relied only on himself. Because of that, he was constructing his own sphere of influence, Liu Cang Lan had given him the Chi Xie army precisely for that purpose.

Lin Feng was moving through the vein of the earth at full speed picking up the highest quality purity stones.

“What’s this?” At that moment Lin Feng suddenly discovered a precious treasure, it had nine leaves that were diffusing a bright white light. It was rich with sun Qi and was close to the ground.

“Nine Sun Grass...” Lin Feng’s pupils shrank, indeed, that energy was that of the Nine Sun Grass.

Nine Sun Grass had nine petals which absorbed sun Qi and condensed it. Pure Qi of heaven and earth as well as sun Qi all were extremely beneficial to cultivators, besides, they had to mature for many years and the probability of them reaching maturity was extremely low.

The Nine Sun Grass had been in the middle of these evil swords for so many years, and had absorbed sun Qi and pure Qi, all this made it perfect growing conditions.

“You can wear out iron shoes in fruitless searching, and yet find what you are looking for when you have stopped searching...” Lin Feng immediately thought this expression was appropriate to describe the situation he was in. He needed Nine Sun Grass and it had suddenly appeared in front of him when he wasn’t looking for it.

His silhouette flickered and he started picking up the Nine Sun Grass which he put inside of his Na stone, to store this grass, Lin Feng separated a special place in the stone.

Lin Feng was acting and reacting, he meticulously searched for more Nine Sun Grass, Lin Feng didn’t know precisely how much pure Qi it contained, but it was a real treasure.

“As expected, there is even more.” Smiled Lin Feng. His smile was resplendent. That place contained so much Nine Sun Grass, there might even be a second place where there is more, and then a third place... Anything is possible.

At that moment, some people appeared from the distance, it was Feng Ting and the others.

When they sensed the extremely dense and rich pure Qi, they stopped and immediately looked delighted.

Surprisingly, there was a well of pure Qi there. They were growing more excited.

There was a vein of the earth, did they need to remain the protectors of a clan? They could become extremely rich and grab a fortune of purity stones.

“So many purity stones.” Said a voice amongst the people. Immediately after, people’s silhouettes started flickering and they rushed towards the well and started picking up purity stones.

At that moment, they didn’t care about anything else, all they could see were purity stones, an endless stream of purity stones.

“Everybody stop!” Shouted the old man furiously next to Feng Ting when he saw all the guards going crazy.

“What are you doing?” said Feng Ting angrily as well but everybody ignored her.

These guards only looked at her and the old man in a cold and detached way, immediately after, they continued stealing purity stones, ignoring them.

“Didn’t you hear Xiu?” Shouted the old man furiously while releasing an ice-cold energy.

“Xiu? If we became guards of your Feng Clan, it’s only because we needed purity stones, now that we have purity stones, why would we need to listen to her? What does she intend to do? But against all expectations, she looks pretty good, wait until we’re done picking up purity stones and then we’ll have some fun

together.” Said a strong guard with an evil voice, he was fixedly staring at Feng Ting, especially at her voluptuous chest, the man’s eyes were filled with lust.

When the other guards, who were picking up purity stones, heard him, they all burst into laughter, she was ridiculous.

Feng Ting turned deathly pale. What a bunch of bastards! Besides, the old man’s heart was also pounding but they were both utterly helpless.

“Xiu, let’s pick up purity stones as well.” Said the old man. Feng Ting nodded and they both started picking up purity stones as they could no longer count on the guards.

“Xiu, look, over there.” At that moment, while picking up purity stones, the old man’s pupils shrank, he had seen something on the ground, it was twinkling.

“Nine Sun Grass, it’s Nine Sun Grass.” Feng Ting was astonished, she shivered from head to toe.

“Indeed, it’s Nine Sun Grass, Xiu, grab it quickly.” Said the old man in a quiet voice.

Feng Ting nodded and walked towards the grass, she stretched her little hand towards the Nine Sun Grass but her arm was too short to reach it.

“Seven.”

At that moment, a voice suddenly emerged in the atmosphere. Feng Ting hadn't managed to grab anything but at that moment, the Nine Sun Grass immediately disappeared, at the same time, a silhouette flashed past her.

“Seven.” Said Lin Feng while looking at the Nine Sun Grass in his hand, he was smiling wholeheartedly, he then stored it into his ring.

Chapter 371: How to Divide?

“That’s mine.” Said a cold voice. Feng Ting was standing in front of Lin Feng glaring at him furiously.

She had seen some Nine Sun Grass and suddenly Lin Feng grabbed it right in front of her.

“Yours?” Lin Feng smiled and indifferently shook his head. He turned around and prepared to continue his search for purity stones, he had already explored the entire place and had gathered seven stems of Nine Sun Grass.

But Feng Ting didn’t intend to let Lin Feng leave so easily. Her silhouette flickered and she obstructed Lin Feng’s way again. Feng Ting then looked Lin Feng in a cold and detached way and said: “I found it first, give it to me.”

“I was the first to find the vein of the earth.” Said Lin Feng coldly. “I even asked you if we could travel together but you refused, since you refused, why would I give you anything? What gives you the right to even say that it’s yours?” Joked Lin Feng while smiling.

“I say it’s mine, so it’s mine!” Said Feng Ting indifferently. Suddenly, she started releasing a deadly energy which invaded the atmosphere. For Nine Sun Grass, she would even kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng frowned and his facial expression became colder and colder, that girl wanted to kill him to steal his treasure?

“Get out of my sight.” Said Lin Feng sounding ice-cold. He suddenly released a terrifying energy which oppressed Feng Ting’s body, she felt like she couldn’t even move under such an intense pressure.

What a terrifying energy! Lin Feng’s Qi was so cold, how scary. Feng Ting felt like she was suffocating, so she instinctively moved backwards.

Feng Ting’s face suddenly turned deathly pale, she wanted to steal the Nine Sun Grass from Lin Feng but it seemed impossible. She couldn’t even stand the pressure from Lin Feng, Lin Feng was much stronger than her.

“I really need the Nine Sun Grass... Can’t you give me some?” Asked Feng Ting adopting a pitiful facial expression while looking at Lin Feng, she was trying to make Lin Feng’s heart melt.

“Alright, you might need the Nine Sun Grass... But does that have anything to do with me?” Joked Lin Feng. Immediately after, he turned around, his silhouette flickered and he moved into the ground again, Nine Sun Grass was a precious treasure, could Lin Feng give it to her because she asked for it? Impossible.

If, on that day, she had accepted to let him join, Lin Feng would have shared everything with her, but since she refused, why would Lin Feng even pay attention to her? She had missed her chance to gain his favour, she wouldn’t have another.

Feng Ting's eyes were filled with hatred and regret. She hadn't thought that Lin Feng would be so strong. If she had known that before, she would definitely have accepted his offer to travel together. If such a strong cultivator had joined them, they wouldn't have needed to be overly cautious when travelling, also her guards wouldn't have dared to betray her.

"Xiu, it's my fault." Said the old man while moving next to Feng Ting, he felt remorseful and uneasy, he was the one who refused Lin Feng's offer to join their search.

Feng Ting remained silent, she didn't know what to say or do.

At the same time, in the distance, many silhouette were unceasingly rushing towards that place. There were extremely strong cultivators as well as extremely powerful ferocious beasts.

Cultivators had just seen the sword illusion as well as the black clouds, all of this was very intriguing. They had noticed that the black clouds had finally disappeared so they were rushing over to see what happened.

Concerning the ferocious beasts, their senses were extremely acute, how could they not notice the pure Qi? It couldn't escape their extremely acute senses.

After a while, a few silhouettes descended from the sky. When they sensed that extremely thick pure Qi, they were stupefied. It was a vein of the earth. Surprisingly, a gigantic vein of the earth appeared there.

More and more extremely strong cultivators sensed the pure Qi and thus rushed over to that place. Lin Feng's eyes were filled with a sharp light, his silhouette flickered and he then moved towards a guard from the Feng Clan at full speed. That guard wasn't weak, a moment before, he had also gathered a great number of purity stones in the stone of his ring.

"Piss off." Said the guard while looking at Lin Feng and immediately threw a punch towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng smiled as if he found the situation amusing, sword light illuminated the atmosphere and a horrible shriek spread through the air. The guard was killed and Lin Feng then picked up his ring, he was also the only guard to have a ring with a Na stone.

Lin Feng didn't stop there at all. His silhouette flickered again and he appeared in front of somebody else. In a flash, Lin Feng broke through the opponent's defense and punched backwards which created a strong wind around them. With a single movement he had taken another ring, that person only had purity stones of medium quality, if Lin Feng didn't steal them, someone else would and they would definitely kill the guard.

Very quickly, Lin Feng stole two more rings, after that he went back to the surface. At that moment, on the surface, there was already a great deal of strong cultivators. If Lin Feng continued to steal Na stones, he would become everybody's target, which would be terrifying.

At that moment, Lin Feng had already picked seven stems of Nine Sun Grass and a great number of purity stones, that was already a

great harvest.

“Little boy, you are very audacious. You surprisingly dare be so greedy.

Lin Feng looked at the person who spoke, it was a middle aged man, he smiled but didn't reply.

Lin Feng didn't want to become everybody's target, he had to remain discreet.

“Miss Feng, how come you haven't taken anything?” Asked the middle aged man sounding indifferent while looking at Feng Ting. Surprisingly, they were acquainted with each other.

Feng Ting's eyes sparkled, she looked at Lin Feng with a murderous glare which stupefied Lin Feng.

“Mister Li, if I tell you that, apart from purity stones, there is another thing which is extremely precious and valuable but ended up in his hands, if you manage to get it, would you share some with me?” Asked Feng Ting while looking at the middle aged man. Immediately, Lin Feng's facial expression looked even colder, this girl had pushed her luck.

“Huh?” Mister Li was stupefied when he heard Feng Ting. Immediately after, he looked very interested and said: “If there is enough of the precious treasure, I will share a little with you.”

Feng Ting bit her lip, she of course understood what he meant, it was not a definite answer, but what could she do other than this? The only thing that mattered was that she still had a chance to get some Nine Sun Grass.

“He has a treasure.” Said Feng Ting while pointing at Lin Feng, and then added: “A moment ago, when you still hadn’t arrived, he was not only picking up purity stones but also he gathered Nine Sun Grass, it’s definitely in his ring.”

When Feng Ting finished talking, she felt ice-cold from head to toe. She slightly inclined her head and saw Lin Feng who was coldly glaring at her, which made her slightly shiver.

Besides, the strong cultivators who were around also seemed very interested. Nine Sun grass was indeed a great treasure, it was invaluable.

So there was a great deal of treasures inside Lin Feng’s ring?

Those strong cultivators immediately looked at Lin Feng which made Lin Feng feel an intense pressure.

Lin Feng looked around at the crowd, there were six people and they all had the strength of the Xuan Qi layer.

“Everybody, I am the one who discovered this vein of the earth, so I have obtained some items as compensation, you can split the rest between you six, I will not take anything else.” Said Lin Feng

to the crowd, immediately making a compromise, however, nobody rushed to pick up the items. In such a huge area, there were certainly enough purity stones to divide between them. It was clear to everybody that even stronger cultivators would come later and dividing the well into six, would be impossible.

Those who would come after wouldn't agree, they would continue to divide it or maybe that some people would get thrown out because they weren't be able to compete with the newcomers.

“Picking up the best treasures and thinking that you would be able to walk away is a bit naive.” Said Mister Li while smiling in a cold and detached way: “You can leave, but everything you have in your ring is now mine. Purity stones and the Nine Sun Grass, everything is mine and nothing is yours.”

“Indeed, leave the things here and get lost.” Said someone wearing a black chang pao. Lin Feng tried to seize every chance to gain an advantage by using his words, but it wouldn't work with them, they were selfish and greedy, Lin Feng obviously didn't want to give anything to them.

“I am the first one to discover the vein of the earth, I didn't even say that I wanted it, I just picked up a few items, that's my compensation.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold.

“Telling you to get lost is to give you face, you're acting recklessly.” Said Mister Li sounding ice-cold, he believed Lin Feng was a weak cultivator, so he was looking down on him.

Lin Feng would never want to share anything with them.

Chapter 372: Sword of the Rising Sun

“Telling me to get lost was giving me face? Act recklessly?” Lin Feng looked at the middle aged man while narrowing his eyes. Immediately after, Lin Feng smiled coldly.

“Is that so?” He slightly stepped forwards, as a sword energy emerged from Lin Feng’s body.

“Huh?” Mister Li looked at Lin Feng walking forward and sensed the cold energy which made him frown. He then said coldly: “Could it be that you want to battle?”

Lin Feng didn’t say anything, he started walking forwards and in a flash, a rumbling noise spread through the atmosphere. The ground under their feet caved in. Lin Feng swiftly jumped through the air and released a colossal amount of sword energy.

Then, dazzling flames started to unceasingly burn around his body.

“It’s pure Qi.” the crowd was astonished, Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng was also a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer like them, a moment before, he had tried to leave without taking a share in the vein of the earth, but surprisingly, some people foolishly tried to stop him and force him to abandon his items and told him to get lost.

Feng Ting’s pupils shrank, her heart started pounding, Lin Feng was a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, she had surprisingly refused his request, besides, she had incited people to fight against him.

Mister Li frowned, he looked like he was going to explode, Lin Feng remained silent and immediately attacked him.

Mister Li released some pure Qi and said coldly: “You don’t know how to distinguish good from bad, therefore I will teach you a lesson.” When he finished talking, he immediately jumped into the air and threw himself at Lin Feng. The man’s hand zigzagged and a hook illusion appeared as it released a black light.

“Sword.” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. Pure Qi started revolving in the air and a pure Qi sword appeared in Lin Feng’s hand, it was releasing a terrifying sword energy.

“Sword of the Rising Sun!”

Lin Feng hadn’t arrived at his opponent’s side, but he was slowly starting his sword of the rising sun, it wasn’t quick, that sword could even be described as slow but it was filled with vitality. Just like the morning rising sun, it wasn’t dazzling and extremely beautiful which caught people’s eyes.

Mister Li smiled as if he found it amusing, what a ridiculous sword attack! It looks so slow, how could such a sword ever reach him, he just had to unleash a weak attack and the sword attack would disperse.

People in the crowd were also shaking their heads. Both fighters had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer but Lin Feng must have only just broken through, his fighting power was still too weak, he

probably wouldn't even be a match for Mister Li.

However, Lin Feng was still moving forwards.

That slow sword, just like the sun, was slowly rising into the air, it was becoming more and more resplendent, it was also growing brighter and brighter.

“Die!” Shouted Mister Li furiously. His hook-like hand moved forwards, it contained a deadly energy and it looked amazing.

However, that amazing hook, when it collided with Lin Feng's slow sword was completely swallowed and disappeared. The only thing left was the splendour of the sword which was magnificent. It looked so captivating, as if nothing else existed other than that dazzling magnificence.

“Huh?” The crowd was a bit surprised. That sword was slow and calm, giving them a beautiful and serene impression but it was as if their eyes couldn't escape from it.

Mister Li frowned as well. Immediately after, he moved backwards, however, he found out that even though he was moving back, the sword was still moving towards him and the distance separating him from the sword wasn't increasing at all.

That sword was still moving slowly and looked like an illusion, but it was closely following him and growing brighter and brighter.

That sword, was it a real sword or was it a sword skill? It seemed like it was constantly changing, it was also growing more and more powerful. The crowd was dumbstruck and immediately after, they realized that the dazzling sword was crashing into Mister Li's body, on his forehead there was a blood mark, and immediately after, he fell from the sky and his corpse crashed into the ground.

A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was just killed.

Lin Feng needed only one sword attack to kill him. He had demanded that Lin Feng give him his ring and to get lost, but in the end, Lin Feng killed him using only one sword attack. Mister Li's eyes were still filled with remorse for starting the conflict. He was a majestic cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, being killed because of this, wasn't worth it.

"You acted recklessly." Said Lin Feng using the sentence which the opponent said to him. Unfortunately, Mister Li couldn't hear these words.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the five other people. He then said coldly: "I will leave, it's not because I'm scared of you, it's because I know that I will not be able to seize that vein of the earth. It will most likely be seized by an influential group of the Imperial City. One person alone is nothing, one of us seizing that vein of the earth is impossible."

"You are all just like me, you cannot seize it. The best thing you can do is, like me, steal a few purity stones and then leave. That

guy was ridiculous to think that he could take my ring, he was an arrogant fool, and he had even believed that he would be able to seize that vein of the earth with his power.”

The others were a bit surprised, when they had arrived, they wanted to seize the treasure and were blinded by their own greed, a moment before, they had been just like Mister Li, they thought that they would be able to seize the well of pure Qi, especially at the moment when Lin Feng had said that he would let them share it together without joining, it had made them feel even more excited, but Lin Feng’s words were like a cold shower.

They wouldn’t be able to seize the well of pure Qi with their power.

“What if we all act together and seize part of it? If people come, we join together against them, how does that sound?” Said one of them who didn’t want to give up. Even if it meant only having a small section, it would be enough to constantly improve their cultivation levels, they would never have problems with purity stones again. After all, cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer required a terrifying amount of pure Qi which could be gained from purity stones. Relying on the pure Qi that was in the air, it would be too slow.

“Impossible, we are only six people, we are barely even a small power in the Imperial City. Steal some purity stones, take as many as you can, otherwise, the most influential groups of the Imperial City will come and you will not be able to obtain anything.” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. The news that a vein of the earth had appeared would spread very quickly, they wouldn’t be able to

hide it and the most influential powers of the city would soon learn about it.

The Yu Clan, the Yue Clan and even the Imperial Clan would try to seize it for themselves, six people together would never be able to keep it.

The other five looked unrelenting to give up but what Lin Feng was saying was true, they wouldn't be able to cope with the influential groups of the Imperial City, they could only rush, grab as much as they could and leave.

They weren't resigned to give up but they had to admit that Lin Feng was right.

Someone's silhouette flickered and he immediately dived into the well of pure Qi, then he started picking up purity stones, very quickly, the others did the same and started extracting purity stones as well.

"Aahhhhh....." A horrible shriek spread in the air. A guard of the Feng Clan was killed. A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer who was wearing the black chang pao then said in a cold and detached way: "That piece of trash also wanted to take away some purity stones."

After that, the air was filled with shrieks as people started to die. Many of the Feng Clan's guards were killed while trying to grab some purity stones. If they had the bad luck to come across any of the cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, they would end up dead.

They had no strength but wanted to grab purity stones, that was reckless. Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were merciless, would they allow the weak cultivators to take purity stones that they wanted?

Very quickly, each and every single Feng Clan guard stopped picking up purity stones, they moved back to the ground and all pulled long faces.

Feng Ting also wanted to pick up some purity stones but Lin Feng prevented her from moving forwards, he glanced at her and said coldly: "You have ten seconds, if I still see your face, I will kill you." Lin Feng said the word "kill" in a particularly emphasized way which made Feng Ting's face go rigid and turn deathly pale.

A moment before, she had told Mister Li that Lin Feng was carrying the Nine Sun Grass, Lin Feng had a good reason to kill her, in Lin Feng's eyes, her beautiful face was hideous to look at.

"Xiu, let's go." Said the old man next to Feng Ting. Lin Feng was too strong, they couldn't afford to provoke him any further. If they didn't leave, Lin Feng would kill Feng Ting... The old man was full of remorse, why did he refuse Lin Feng's proposition in the beginning?

After they left, the guards also left with them, their silhouettes were disappearing one after the other.

Lin Feng didn't pay attention to them, with his acute senses, Lin Feng opened the space of his ring and started sorting his purity

stones of medium and higher quality.

However, at that moment, ferocious beasts roared and the ground started to shake, many ferocious beasts were charging towards the vein of the earth.

At the same time, many troops from the Imperial City were rushing through the air emitting whistling sounds, they were rushing towards Mount Sword.

Chapter 373: Wan Shou Men

After Lin Feng finished sorting his purity stones, his silhouette flickered and appeared in front of the cultivator wearing the black chang pao.

“What are you doing?” Asked the cultivator in the black chang pao while frowning, and then said: “Take some purity stones, you take your things, I take my things, let’s not intervene in each other’s affairs.”

“The others can, you can’t.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached which made the man in the black chang pao frown even more.

“Earlier, you told me to leave my things here and to get lost, well, now I will repeat that back to you, give me your ring and get lost.” Said Lin Feng coldly. A moment before, the one in the black chang pao had supported Mister Li and tried to rob Lin Feng. At that moment, Mister Li was dead but the one in the black chang pao was still there, Lin Feng wouldn’t let him off so easily, he tried to steal from Lin Feng, he had to get his revenge.

“Why didn’t you attack me a moment ago? Why did you wait until now?” Said the one in the black chang pao pulling a long face. Actually, after he had seen that Lin Feng killed Mister Li, he was shocked and had feared that Lin Feng would then kill him for demanding his ring and telling him to get lost, but Lin Feng, acted as if he hadn’t heard it and ignored him until that moment.

“I thought that I should let you pick up some purity stones for me, isn’t it better that way?” Said Lin Feng moving forwards, the one in the black chang pao suddenly started shaking and rushed into the ground.

Lin Feng smiled coldly, his sword diffused a powerful energy which split the ground open and Lin Feng jumped inside.

Lin Feng had just dived into the ground, but immediately, an incredibly brutal punch attacked him by surprise, it was filled with pure Qi and unleashed a cold wind.

Lin Feng stopped in a flash, Lin Feng inclined his body to the side and dodged the attack, immediately a rumbling noise spread through the atmosphere, the punch struck the earth and a huge hole had appeared.

“You might have killed him but that doesn’t mean that you can act wildly.” Said the man in the black chang pao coldly while staring at Lin Feng.

“Is that so?” Said Lin Feng while staring at him as well, he then slowly walked forwards while releasing his sword energy, then he said: “Since you don’t want your life, I will take it.” When Lin Feng finished talking, deadly energy flowed into the atmosphere.

Lin Feng took a step forwards and his sword immediately descended in the direction of his opponent, sword Qi was piercing through the air emitting tearing sounds.

The man in the black chang pao didn't try to dodge, he joined both his hands and a terrifying black vortex condensed from his hands, it was emitting some a whirling sound in the air, it looked powerful.

The pure Qi sword started to cut through the black vortex emitting ripping sounds and then it suddenly stopped, it was stuck in the vortex unable to move forwards.

“You are way too arrogant! You killed a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer, but that doesn't mean anything, the one who will die here is you.” Said the man in the black chang pao while looking at Lin Feng. The distance between them was extremely short and behind the strong cultivator in the black chang pao appeared many strange black bestial-looking tentacles which then rushed towards Lin Feng to constrict him.

“You're not the only one who has a spirit.” Said Lin Feng as coldly. Behind him an endless stream of purple tentacles emerged, every tentacle looked like a ferocious beast, it seemed like there was an endless quantity of them, there were at least ten times more purple tentacles than black tentacles, maybe even several times more than that.

In the blink of an eye, the purple tentacles subdued the black tentacles and moved towards the man in the black chang pao to constrict him, the sudden change made his facial expression change drastically, the vortex he had in his hands broke and released an incredible energy as he abruptly retreated backwards.

“How dangerous.” Thought the man in the black chang pao when

he saw that the purple tentacles still hadn't appeared in front of him, there was only the black vortex dispersing. He felt like luck was on his side.

But at that moment, he was startled, immediately after, he saw that there was a subtle glittering light coming from the shadows, which made him frown.

“That looks bad!” An extremely sharp Qi reached his body, it was becoming a critical situation which made his facial expression change once again, he wanted to move back but it was already too late. A black cross emerged, it looked incredibly lethal and then a deep cross mark appeared on his chest, he lowered his head and saw that a bleeding cross shaped wound appeared on his chest, and suddenly, Lin Feng was standing in front of him.

Deadly Cross Shadow, Lin Feng transformed into a shadow and attacked with deadly precision.

“I had told you to leave your ring here.” Said Lin Feng coldly. He then released a deadly Qi which streaked through the air and blasted through the opponent's body. Immediately after, his ring rose into the air and Lin Feng caught it. The man in the black chang pao slowly collapsed. Another cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had just been killed.

Everything had happened in an extremely short time, at that moment, the four other cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer stopped picking up purity stones and looked at Lin Feng as well as the corpse on the ground.

They had both broken through to the Xuan Qi layer but Lin Feng had killed him like he was butchering a chicken, he had done it in a very relaxed and ruthless manner. That young man was terrifying and everybody was looking at him with both respect and fear in their eyes.

“Don’t worry, I do not attack anyone who isn’t my enemy.” Said Lin Feng when he saw the four other cultivators looking at him with a slight fear in their eyes. Immediately after, he gazed into the distance and only heard the terrifying roars as fire ignited in the atmosphere.

“We should leave and let the others fight.”

“You want to leave like that?” Said someone who was not resigned to leave, they still had time to pick up so much from that well of pure Qi, giving up and leaving was too frustrating.

“If you don’t want to leave, you can stay here.” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent. Lin Feng and that person weren’t acquainted, Lin Feng was just warning them, whether they listened to him or not had nothing to do with him.

That person was a bit surprised and gnashed their teeth, unwilling to give up but he still ended up nodding and saying: “Alright, let’s go,”

“Go? None of you will leave.” A voice came from the distance. It was incredibly aggressive and domineering which slightly

surprised Lin Feng and the others, they looked into the distance.

There was a fire which was moving nearer to them. Surprisingly, it was a ferocious beast that seemed to be on fire.

That ferocious beast looked extremely majestic, it was gigantic and fire-red, there were also extremely sharp thorns covering its body. The most amazing thing was that on the beasts back, there were two fire-red wings flapping in the air.

“Daemoniac fire lion?” When Lin Feng saw that ferocious beast, his pupils shrank. Surprisingly, it was a daemoniac fire lion, in the past, he had obtained it from the prisoner’s arena of the Imperial City, however he immediately sold it.

“As expected, the daemoniac fire lion was extremely strong, it has surprisingly already become a Xuan level beast.” Thought Lin Feng. The highest level a daemoniac fire lion could reach was the Tian level. Back then, Lin Feng was too weak, he only had the strength of the fifth Ling Qi layer, so he was unable to control it, otherwise he wouldn’t have given it up.

Of course, in his hands, the daemoniac fire lion wouldn’t have been able to reach the Xuan level that quickly, after all, people of the Wan Shou Men were experts at raising ferocious beasts, they could make them grow stronger very quickly, they were obviously more skilled than Lin Feng.

The master of the daemoniac fire lion was a disciple of the Wan Shou Men Sect who obtained it in the auction sale: Kuang Shi. Lin

Feng could remember how terrified the arrogant Meng Cong had been of Kuang Shi. Almost two years after, Kuang Shi had also broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.

Apart from Kuang Shi and the daemoniac fire lion he was riding, there were other people surrounding Lin Feng and the other four, they were also riding all sorts of ferocious beasts and hiding in the forest, they were just encircling Lin Feng and the others, however, these ferocious beasts seemed much weaker in comparison.

Kuang Shi recognized Lin Feng and said: “What a coincidence, thank you for the daemoniac fire lion, but today, since I discovered this vein of the earth, it belongs to the Wan Shou Sect, if you don’t want to burn, give me all the items that are in your ring and I will let you off.”

“Wan Shou Sect.” Lin Feng and the four other cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer around him were astonished, as expected, one of the influential powers of the country had appeared.

“You discovered it? I am the one who discovered it first.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached.

“I don’t care, I don’t want to talk nonsense with you, you either give me your ring and I will let you off or you can choose to die.” Said Kuang Shi in an extremely aggressive way.

“Hmph, how audacious. You’re only one person, and you only have a single ferocious beast, how can you believe that you can compete with us?” Said a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer sounding

ice-cold.

“I am alone?” How ridiculous.” Said Kuang Shi sounding cold and detached. He hadn’t even finished talking when his ferocious beast roared, in the dense forest not far away from the Mount Sword, many ferocious beasts and silhouettes appeared, all of them riding ferocious wild beasts.

“That vein of the earth is ours.” Said one of them sounding ice-cold. They had all come to the Nine Dragon Mountain to hunt, they hadn’t thought that they would find a vein of the earth.

Chapter 374: Merciful?

The Wan Shou Sect was situated in Xue Yue, even though it was standing side by side with the Luo Xia Sect, the Hao Yue Sect and the others, they were much stronger than the rest, that's how they gained such a prestigious reputation.

Their strength came from the fact that they incorporated ferocious beasts into their skills, the Wan Shou Sect only accepted disciples who had a beast spirit, they also required every disciple to be extremely gifted. For those who had a beast spirit, this sect was paradise, they had extremely powerful beast skills which helped their spirit grow much stronger.

The core disciples of the Wan Shou Sect could also learn how to tame wild beasts, that made them extremely formidable. This was precisely why the members of the Wan Shou Sect liked to go to the beast forests, if they were lucky, they could come across a wild beast with similar strength and tame it. Once tamed they would be able to ride the beast as a mount immediately.

Beast forests were the perfect locations for them to practice.

Lin Feng was very unlucky to meet them after they had all captured so many ferocious beasts which they were all riding at that moment.

Lin Feng looked at Kuang Shi in an ice-cold way, he had only two choices, one was to give away his ring with all the items and get lost, the other was to die.

“Isn’t there a third choice?” Asked Lin Feng indifferently while looking at Kuang Shi. “We are only a few people, we took some purity stones, in comparison with that vein of pure Qi, that’s just a drop of water in the ocean, it’s not even worth mentioning. Besides, I am the one who discovered that vein of pure Qi, don’t you think that your requirements are a little exaggerated?”

“Exaggerated?” Kuang Shi didn’t even have the time to reply when another member of the Wan Shou Sect spoke with a cold smile: “You discovered the vein of the earth but that isn’t a stroke of luck at all, on the contrary, for you, it’s actually a calamity, it’s an invaluable discovery but you can’t keep it and we can’t let you leave just like that.”

“If we let you leave in peace, what will we say to the sect when they question us? Are we not able to confront a few nobodies? Since we discovered the vein of the earth, it belongs to us in its entirety, we will not abandon even the tiniest part, then we will let the sect decide what they want to do with it.”

“Brother Shi is right, there is no third choice, initially, when you came across that vein of the earth, that was already bad luck, but we will not hesitate and burn you to death, proposing for you to leave your things here was already polite enough, don’t be too greedy with your requests.” Said Kuang Shi.

“If you put it that way, shouldn’t I thank you as well for giving me the opportunity to get lost?” Joked Lin Feng. Telling him to abandon his items and get lost surprisingly was considered merciful, as if they were giving a wrongdoer a way out.

When Kuang Shi heard Lin Feng's joke, he frowned and said in a cold and detached way: "I don't care about what you think, that is the situation and it cannot be changed."

"I don't care about your politeness or proposition, I do not choose either of your options... let's see how strong you are."

Lin Feng released an ice-cold energy after spitting out his words.

"Indeed, we can act together, we're five, if they want to kill us, at least half of them will die." Said a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer next to Lin Feng with a cold expression. These few people of the Wan Shou Sect were simply going too far.

"Half of us? It seems like you don't know that this time, only the best core disciples of the sect have come." joked someone. Immediately after, each and every single disciple of the Wan Shou Sect released their Qi, it was brutally revolving in the atmosphere emitting whistling sounds, it was terrifying.

"How strong!" Lin Feng and the others were a bit surprised. Amongst these people, there were six cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and eight of the Ling Qi layer, besides, the beasts they were riding were at similar levels. Therefore, there were six cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and six ferocious beasts of Xuan level, besides, amongst them, there were two cultivators who were releasing a more powerful energy, they were probably at the second Xuan Qi layer.

They were extremely scary, they were all core disciples of the Wan Shou Sect.

The six cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer riding their six Xuan level beasts were rushing towards Lin Feng and the others while the cultivators of the Ling Qi layer moved back and smiled coldly as they enjoyed the show.

Lin Feng and the others had a death wish, initially the Wan Shou Sect had given them a chance but they didn't appreciate it, they were going to die and could only blame themselves.

"You four, fight together, help each other, we can't give them an opportunity that can be exploited." Said Lin Feng in a low voice, the four of them then gradually moved close to each other, they had to stick together, if they dispersed, three enemies with their three ferocious beasts would be able to fight against one of them, they would be killed in an instant."

"What about you?" Asked one of them to Lin Feng.

"They are not strong enough to kill me." Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached which made the others stupefied, it seemed like Lin Feng hadn't shown his full strength when he killed the two other cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. They all respected him, he was extremely strong.

"I will not waste time, if I have the opportunity, I will help you." Said Lin Feng to the others. At that moment, they were all in the same situation, they had to support and help each other.

“Alright, well then be careful.” Said the four people sounding solemn and respectful while nodding. They didn’t believe what Lin Feng had just said though, how would he even be able to help them? Even though Lin Feng wasn’t weak, they were facing members of the Wan Shou Sect, they were terrifyingly strong, he was probably just lying to himself to gain confidence.

“How ridiculous.” Said the members of the Wan Shou Sect while shamelessly laughing when they heard Lin Feng and the others. Lin Feng really wanted to die, surprisingly, he was still dreaming and thought that he had a chance of escaping alive.

“Kuang Shi, keep the situation under control, we five will fight against those five, we can choose our opponents and see who will get a kill first.” Said a young man with a snake pattern on his chest. Immediately after, everybody nodded indicating that they found the idea interesting.

“Viper, you choose first.”

“I will take him, the four others are yours.” Said Viper with evil eyes while pointing at Lin Feng.

“I will choose him, I choose him....” The four others then chose their opponent one after the other.

Lin Feng looked at Viper and determined from the Qi he was releasing that he had broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer, besides, with the green snake which he was riding, it was the same

as fighting two cultivators of the first Xuan Qi layer.

“My four brothers, let’s have a competition and see who can kill their opponent first.” Said Viper with bestial eyes. Immediately after, he started rushing towards Lin Feng with his snake, he looked like a deadly mounted warrior.

“Ssssss..... Ssssssss.....” The snake was hissing and spitting out a foul black fog which smelt like rotten meat.

“Dodge.” Lin Feng quickly jumped into the air, the four others dodged one after the other and rose into the air as well.

“Where are you going?” Viper smiled coldly and his snake moved into the air, it wanted to wrap around Lin Feng up with its gigantic tail.

Lin Feng didn’t dodge the tail, instead his body released a sharp sword energy, he quickly condensed a pure Qi sword in his hand which immediately sliced out towards the snake.

Lin Feng’s sword immediately sliced the snake’s tail off, a brownish blood flowed out from the wound and a terrifying expression appeared in its eyes. Its body started to writhe.

“Die!” Shouted Viper, he was facing Lin Feng and wasn’t far when he saw this happen, at that moment his speed dramatically increased and he threw himself at Lin Feng. His speed was incredible.

Pure sun Qi emerged from Lin Feng's body and he released his scorching hot Qi. Flames enveloped Lin Feng's body. The sun was shining down on his body which made the flames grow even more brutal and violent.

"Huh?" Viper was a bit surprised. At that moment, he had rushed towards the burning flames and felt like he was going to be engulfed in flames. Immediately after, he only saw a myriad of purple tentacles move towards him in order to tie his body up.

"Die!" Shouted Viper looking glum. He couldn't stand it anymore, even though his speed was incredible and already seemed to have reached his maximum speed, he managed to increase it even more with sheer willpower.

When he was about to arrive in front of Lin Feng, a black fire filled with deadly energy appeared in front of Lin Feng. At the precise second when he collided with the black fire, his body suddenly started shaking insanely, his body came to an abrupt stop and then he was brutally projected backwards.

What a terrifying black fire! When he had collided against it, it seemed like his flesh was burning.

"You want to leave now?" Joked Lin Feng while smiling. The purple light suddenly surrounded him. Besides, Lin Feng slowly raised his hand and an incredibly dazzling sword light started to shine through the atmosphere. That sword was so dazzling that the crowd didn't even dare look at it.

“Oh no....” Kuang Shi saw that Viper was being entangled by Lin Feng’s spirit and then noticed that dazzling sword, at that moment, his facial expression drastically changed. Immediately after, he saw a sword as dazzling as the sun fall down from the sky, it was so dazzling that he was forced to close his eyes. A moment before, it seemed like the golden sun was piercing into his eyes.

“Oh no, this isn’t good.” Kuang Shi had the feeling that things were far from good. After he opened his eyes, he could only see Viper’s body falling down from the sky and he had lost control of his Xuan level ferocious beast, it was fleeing from the fight.

“You would dare?” Shouted Kuang Shi furiously when he saw what Lin Feng was about to do. His daemoniac fire lion started moving and threw itself towards Lin Feng.

Surprisingly, Lin Feng was attacking another disciple who was still fighting, Shui Xi.

“Shui Xi, brother, be careful!” Roared Kuang Shi. At that moment, Shui Xi was raising his monstrous hand and was preparing to attack a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer who was with Lin Feng. If that hand reached him, the strong cultivator’s head would have been crushed into pieces.

But in response to that attack, a scorching sword fell from the sky.

That sword was extremely dazzling, Lin Feng condensed his pure

sun Qi and released it, Shui Xi was also forced to close his eyes at that moment.

“Aahhhh..... My hand.....” A shout of agony spread through the air. His hand attack which was supposed to topple mountains and overturn the seas had been destroyed by that scorching sword and Shui Xi’s hand was instantly cut off.

However, the sword didn’t stop there, it continued streaking through the sky like a meteor, blood splashed into the air and blood gushed from Shui Xi’s throat. Another cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was killed.

The battle had just started and two of the Wan Shou Sect’s cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer had already died, killed by Lin Feng.

Chapter 375: His Grandson

The battle abruptly stopped, the people of the Wan Shou Sect were all moving back in panic, Viper and Shui Xi were been killed by Lin Feng, their ferocious beasts had become uncontrollable and were running away.

At that moment, on the side of the Wan Shou Sect, there were only four cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer left with their beasts. In the blink of an eye, their power had significantly decreased.

The four cultivators were staring at Lin Feng, Lin Feng was way too dangerous, in an instant, he killed two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, he was terrifying.

Those who were accompanying Lin Feng were also surprised. At that moment, they were just starting to understand what Lin Feng meant before, he wanted them to delay the enemies and then he would come and kill them.

“Thank you.” Said the cultivator who had almost been killed by Shui Xi a moment before. Lin Feng had arrived at the perfect moment to save his life.

“We are in this together, it’s normal.” Said Lin Feng. That person heavily nodded. They were fighting together and needed to support each other.

“Leopard and I will fight against him. Kuang Shi, Tian Qing, you fight against those four.” Said one of the Wan Shou Sect’s

members riding a ferocious beast while pointing at Lin Feng. Leopard and he were the strongest of them all, they had both broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer. They wanted to kill Lin Feng first while Kuang Shi and Tian Qing delayed Lin Feng's partners. For Kuang Shi and Tian Qing, delaying four cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer who weren't very strong wouldn't be a problem.

“Alright.”

“Indeed, let's do it that way. Ji Feng and Leopard, kill him, then we will kill the other four together.” Said the third one of the Wan Shou Sect while nodding. Lin Feng was too dangerous, they had to kill him first, there was no other choice. Two cultivators of the second Xuan Qi layer and two Xuan level ferocious beasts should be enough to kill him.

When Lin Feng and the others heard them, they narrowed their eyes, the four with Lin Feng looked particularly worried as well. The opponents, even though they had lost two of their fellow disciples to Lin Feng's sword, they were still standing tall and were convinced that their strength was still superior. They had many solutions to deal with Lin Feng and the others, they were using two cultivators of the second Xuan Qi layer and two Xuan level beasts to fight Lin Feng, they were making sure that Lin Feng had no escape.

“You four, be careful.” Said Lin Feng to the other four which stupefied them. Lin Feng wasn't worried about himself, instead he was worried about them.

It seemed like Lin Feng hadn't used his entire strength yet and still had hidden cards in his sleeves.

"You be careful too." Said the four to Lin Feng.

The four of them were only fighting against two cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer and two ferocious beasts, Lin Feng wasn't too worried, the opponents were extremely strong but killing those four in such a short time would be impossible, as long as Lin Feng was alive, there would be no problem.

Their hope and their lives in general were in Lin Feng's hands, if Lin Feng died, they would be defeated and death was all that awaited them.

Lin Feng nodded and jumped into the air. Flames started to burn around his body giving off a dazzling light. It looked magnificent and dazzlingly to the eyes. Lin Feng looked like a fire god.

"Let's fight!"

The sun was shining onto Lin Feng's body which made the flames around him grow even more dazzling.

Ji Feng and Leopard surrounded Lin Feng with their beasts, they were not giving him any chance of escape.

Ji Feng was on his vulture and Leopard was on a beast that resembled a leopard's back, but that beast had large white wings.

“There are two core disciples and two ferocious beasts this time, let’s see what you can do now.” Said Ji Feng while glaring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng had killed their fellow disciples in front of them, if others members of the sect learnt about that, they would lose face, even though they had more numbers than the opponents, they still lost two of their fellow disciples.

“Is having more people useful?” Smiled Lin Feng. His flames were becoming more and more agitated, he slightly closed his eyes and released an energy which came from his soul as he used his surplus souls technique.

A thousand surplus souls broke free from his soul and fused with his pure sun Qi.

“Huh?” Ji Feng and Leopard frowned, soul energy, they could sense that Lin Feng’s soul energy was extremely strong but what did he want to do with it?

“Ji Feng, let’s kill him together.” Suddenly said Ji Feng, Leopard nodded, his vulture started rushing through the air towards Lin Feng and at the same time a hurricane was rushing towards Lin Feng.

“Die!” Ji Feng was moving at incredible speed to attack, he was going to kill Lin Feng!

Two people and two ferocious beasts were attacking Lin Feng in perfect synchronisation.

“Now!” Lin Feng suddenly opened his eyes and it seemed like an immense fire was burning in his eyes.

At the same time, the flames around Lin Feng’s body disappeared. However, a thousand flames suddenly burst out from his body, they were all so bright and resplendent that it looked magnificent.

“Burn!” Lin Feng shouted one word, immediately after, the flames condensed into four huge fire dragons, at the same time, they threw themselves in four directions, the atmosphere suddenly became unbearably hot as if everything was going to burst into flames.

That move made Ji Feng look ahead dumbstruck, he then raised his hand and unleashed a hurricane towards the fire dragon, the fire dragon just opened it’s cruel mouth to swallow the attack.

“Animal! Screw off!” Shouted Ji Feng, behind him suddenly a pair of black wings emerged.

The two wings flickered and another hurricane emerged which moved towards the fire dragons in all four directions, in a flash, the fire dragons dispersed which made Ji Feng smile, only for a second though, as immediately after, the dispersed fire of the fire dragons reformed and in a flash condensed back into the four dragons, and they were moving to attack again, these fire dragon’s couldn’t be killed.

Leopard and the two ferocious beasts were suffering from Lin Feng's attack and were unable to move in for the kill.

“Retreat!” Said Ji Feng and immediately started moving back. He moved back and the two ferocious beasts moved back encircling Lin Feng once again.

But Lin Feng didn't even look at them, his eyes were closed, the four fire dragons were revolving, burning around Lin Feng, their brightness was dazzling.

Lin Feng remained motionless, he was controlling these four fire dragons and using them to fight against his four opponents.

His soul power and his senses were extremely developed, Lin Feng could create a thousand surplus souls and make them merge with the pure sun Qi, then he could control the flames and form them into whatever he wished..

Lin Feng just had to use his mind to control them.

“Leopard, continue, I will kill him.” Said Ji Feng while staring at Lin Feng. At that moment, he started running towards Lin Feng with unmatched power and speed.

At that moment, Ji Feng had spread his large wings which started hovering in the air creating whirlwinds and pure Qi started to gather around his body.

“Die!” Shouted Ji Feng who suddenly looked like a sharp shadow moving straight towards Lin Feng.

A fire dragon roared and threw itself at Ji Feng but Ji Feng ignored it, he just continued moving forwards, a monstrous pure Qi tornado collided with the fire dragon. Ji Feng was in the middle of the pure Qi tornado which was moving step by step closer to Lin Feng.

Leopard was also furious, just like Ji Feng, he was also attacking Lin Feng at the same time, four cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer surprisingly couldn't kill Lin Feng, that was the worst humiliation they had ever suffered.

Lin Feng was determined, the fire dragon's continued to bombard the atmosphere towards Ji Feng and Leopard at full speed, each flame contained only one fourth of his pure sun Qi, even though his surplus souls increased his strength, it was still difficult for him to defeat two cultivators of the second Xuan Qi layer.

Ji Feng and Leopard were getting closer and closer to Lin Feng, besides, Lin Feng was also unceasingly increasing the power of his sun Qi and his surplus souls.

The two ferocious beasts were also unwilling to be outshone and quickly broke through while Lin Feng was in a difficult position, they both rushed towards Lin Feng to kill him.

The battle wasn't only happened there, the other six people and

two ferocious beasts were also locked in battle, it was so tense that nobody had noticed that some people were coming from the distance.

In the air, there was a vast group of people walking through the clouds and moving towards them. The one leading the group was an old white haired man, his facial expression looked profound and solemn and was filled with grievance.

“The evil sword has disappeared.” Said the old white haired man in a low voice. Where was the evil sword? They didn’t know but all they could see was that a well of pure Qi had replaced it.

“Father, look over there.” Said a middle aged man next to the old man while pointing at Lin Feng and the others.

The old man turned his head and noticed Lin Feng, dazzling lights started to glow in his eyes.

It’s him, her son!

It was his grandson!

Chapter 376: Everybody Arrived!

At that moment, Lin Feng was busy fighting against two ferocious beasts and two cultivators, he had no time to notice the crowd in the sky.

The power of the flames was growing more insane as the fire dragons moved straight towards Ji Feng and Leopard. When Lin Feng saw that the ferocious beasts were carrying out a surprise attack, Lin Feng released a cold energy.

“Break!” Said Lin Feng sounding ice-cold. Immediately, one of the weakest fire dragons dispersed and turned into small flames which started to attack the two ferocious beasts.

“Roaaaaarrrr....” The two ferocious beasts roared out in agony and their bloodthirsty eyes were staring at Lin Feng.

“Burn!” Said Lin Feng. Suddenly a powerful fire ignited on the bodies of the two ferocious beasts, the flames started to rampage across their bodies, in a very short time, the two beasts were surrounded by flames and were being burnt alive.

“Roaaar.... Roaaaaarrrr....” The two ferocious beasts were going insane as if they were enraged, they couldn’t stop the flames from spreading and burning them.

Ji Feng and Leopard’s facial expressions drastically changed, they moved towards their respective beasts, some pure Qi was condensed into water Qi.

However, at the same time, Lin Feng released an incredible purple lake which immediately submerged the two beasts, by the time Ji Feng and Leopard arrived, the purple lake had disappeared along with all traces of their beasts.

Ji Feng and Leopard were evilly staring at Lin Feng, their faces were filled with killing intent. Lin Feng had just killed their ferocious beasts. Domesticating a Xuan level ferocious beast required lots of personal investment and also required a great deal of luck.

The white haired old man and the others were calmly watching the battle, they saw that two beasts had just been set on fire which intrigued the old man. Her son was about eighteen years old at the moment and surprisingly, he already had such astonishing battle power, he was able to fight against two ferocious beasts and two prodigious disciples, it seemed like he had inherited the talent from his parents.

When the old man thought about that, he looked at the young man half a step behind him, that young man's eyebrows were as sharp as swords.

Yue Tian Ming was the best disciple of the Yue Clan, he was a dazzling genius.

Unfortunately, what happened in the past couldn't be changed, otherwise, Yue Tian Ming and Lin Feng could have trained together within the clan, they would have become like Duan Wu

Dao and Duan Wu Ya, they would both become the pride of the clan.

At that moment, Yu Tian Ming was also observing Lin Feng. For his age, Lin Feng had a terrifying strength, he was much stronger than most eighteen year old cultivators.

“You will definitely die!” Said Ji Feng with a glum expression in his eyes while looking at Lin Feng, he looked like a venomous insect.

“The members of the Wan Shou Sect are becoming more and more useless each day.” Said a faintly discernible voice which stupefied Ji Feng, he then raised his head and saw the crowd in the sky which made him frown.

The Yue Clan was based in the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain and they had arrived, besides, the head of the clan had personally come.

When Ji Feng heard them humiliate the Wan Shou Sect, his mouth twitched, he didn't dare to contradict him, the head of the Yue Clan was respected even by the patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect.

Lin Feng also raised his head and frowned. When he saw these people, a familiar impression invaded his heart, it was very intriguing and besides, he also noticed that many of them were also staring at him.

“Senior, this vein of the earth, we are the ones who discovered it, it belongs to the Wan Shou Sect, I hope that you will not intervene.” Said Ji Feng. When he saw the people of the Yue Clan, the first thing he thought about was that they wanted to steal the vein of the earth from them.

“If I am not mistaken, you definitely aren’t the ones who discovered it.” Said the old man. He had seen the battle between Lin Feng and the others, he perfectly understood the subtleties of the story, Lin Feng and the others had discovered the vein of the earth and the Wan Shou Sect had come to steal it, which was precisely why they were fighting at this very moment.

“Senior, how could they even compete with the Wan Shou Sect? This vein of the earth, they can’t protect it and they don’t even have the strength to seize it.” Said Ji Feng, his words were like poison.

“Because they can’t, you think you can steal it? They discovered the vein of the earth in the first place, then you wanted to use your power and influence to suppress them, use force to steal from the weak, in other words, the strongest are the ones who own this vein of the earth, since it’s that way, everything is very easy.” Said the old man sounding calm, without looking affected at all. He then shouted: “Tian Ming!”

When Yu Tian Ming heard the old man, he took a step forwards, looking majestic and detached at the same time, as if he was the only hero left in the world.

“Tian Ming, Yue Tian Ming.” Ji Feng frowned. He was the most

prodigious disciple of the Yue Clan and was the second ranked high-official, he was ranked second after Duan Wu Dao. It was said that he had only become famous when he was sixteen and left Xue Yue after that and trained elsewhere, very few people had ever met him. However, nobody dared look down upon him just like nobody dared look down on the Yue Clan.

“Wan Shou Sect, if one of you can take one of my attacks without dying, the vein of the earth will be yours.” Said Yue Tian Ming while looking at Ji Feng which made the crowd frown.

If they could survive one of Yue Tian Ming’s attacks, the Yue Clan would renounce their claim to the vein of the earth and give it to the Wan Shou Sect?

Ji Feng and the others were dumbstruck, who would even dare to try?

He was ranked second within the eight high-officials, apart from Duan Wu Dao, who could withstand a single of Yue Tian Ming’s attacks without dying?

Nobody dared gamble with their lives. Even if they didn’t die, they would be returning to the sect with their cultivation crippled, the vein of the earth would just be for the Wan Shou Sect and they wouldn’t have any more uses for it.

And if they couldn’t resist the attack, they would die.

Who would dare take such a huge risk? Death or be crippled.

Lin Feng was also looking at Yue Tian Ming, he looked outstanding. He didn't look arrogant and conceited like Yue Tian Chen. Yue Tian Ming was a really amazing and prodigious young cultivator, he had nothing to do with people like Yue Tian Chen who only abused their status, there was nothing comparable between them.

“Since you don't dare, don't even try to claim that the well of pure Qi is yours.” Said the old man when he saw that Ji Feng and the others remained silent, the old man sounded indifferent. Ji Feng and the others' mouths were twitching, but words weren't coming out.

“Senior, Head of the Yue Clan, don't you think the way you are treating the Wan Shou Sect's juniors is a bit exaggerated?”

At that moment, a voice resonated from far away in the atmosphere. The crowd turned around and saw that nobody was there, that made people shiver, it meant that that person was still extremely far from them and could not yet be seen.

Finally, a hurricane emerged from the atmosphere, the ground and the sky were transformed, it became extremely stormy and in the distance, something appeared in the sky.

In the sky, the first thing people saw was a terrifying ferocious beast, it looked extraordinarily ferocious and sanguinary. It also had a pair of gigantic wings flapping through the air and creating

gale force winds below.

On the back of that ferocious beast, there were two silhouettes, the first was a middle aged man who looked majestic.

By his side, there was another person who looked cold and detached.

When Lin Feng saw the second person, he frowned, he had already this person when the Yun Hai Sect had been annihilated, it was the vice patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect, Teng Wu Shan.

Lin Feng remembered Wen Ren Yan's teacher, the old woman, who had sacrificed her life to kill the ferocious beast, a flying python, which he was riding, that had allowed Protector Bei to successfully secure Lin Feng escape.

Surprisingly, it was the vice patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect, there was no doubt about it, the middle aged man on that beast must be the patriarch.

The nine sword mountains had collapsed, the evil sword had disappeared, and now the members of the Yue Clan and the members of the Wan Shou Sect were gathered there.

"If I wanted to bully your juniors, would they still be alive?" Asked the old white haired man without sparing a glance at the approaching figure. He had already guessed that these people would arrive sooner or later, so what if they came?

For many people, a vein of the earth was a fantastic and priceless treasure, but in his eyes, it wasn't invaluable at all, in comparison with the evil sword, that was insignificant, what the old man really wanted to know was... who had the evil sword merged with?

Nobody contradicted the old man, if the head of the Yue Clan wanted to kill a few juniors, it was very easy, he just despised them and didn't feel like wasting the effort.

“Hmph, Wu Qing, why not try against Yue Tian Ming, he is the second strongest high-official, let's see if his name matches his reputation.” Said the patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect indifferently. Wu Qing was ranked third amongst the high-officials, he was just above Duan Wu Ya.

Chapter 377: Kill Lin Feng!

Two of the eight high-officials, the second ranked Yue Tian Ming, and the third ranked Wu Qing, had appeared in the same place at the same time, that was extremely rare.

Many people were looking at them with impatience in their eyes. All the eight high-officials were extraordinary geniuses, and at that moment, two of the high-officials were in front of them.

Wu Qing was wearing a black cloak. He was extremely ugly, he had a mouth that stuck out and a chin like an ape, he looked particularly bestial, especially when he was staring at Yue Tian Ming.

Yue Tian Ming looked calm and serene, he wasn't like Wu Qing who looked like an animal. Wu Qing almost seemed like he wanted to tear Yue Tian Ming apart.

“What is the cultivation level of the second and third best high-officials?” Thought Lin Feng. Duan Wu Ya was the fourth ranked official, but was already monstrously strong. These two people had to be even stronger than Duan Wu Ya. Besides, according to the rumors, the mysterious crown prince Duan Wu Dao was unbelievably strong.

“Since you want to see if Yue Tian Ming's reputation matches the reality, how could a single attack be enough? Let's make it a battle to the death, when one of the fighters die, the battle is over, if Yue Tian Ming is the loser, I will not intervene, if Wu Qing is the loser,

you, members of the Wan Shou Sect, cannot intervene either.” Said the white haired old man looking completely expressionless and sounding indifferent, which astonished everybody.

He wanted Yue Tian Ming and Wu Qing to fight to death?

How confident! The white haired old man had absolute faith, he was convinced that Yue Tian Ming could easily kill Wu Qing without any risk.

Would the members of the Wan Shou Sect dare or not?

Everybody looked at the patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect, his mouth was twitching. How cruel, surprisingly asking for a battle to death...

Even though he admired Wu Qing's strength, he thought that Wu Qing's talent was much more incredible than his own and wanted to make him the future patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect, Wu Qing was indeed really an incredible and prodigious beast cultivator, he didn't know precisely how strong Yue Tian Ming was, he only knew that that he hadn't been in Xue Yue, nobody knew what cultivation level he had after returning, nobody dared gamble.

“Teng Wu Yao, will you dare or not?” Said the white haired old man while looking at the patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect for the first time, Teng Wu Yao, with his white hair fluttering in the wind.

“Teng Wu Yao, will you dare or not?”

“Teng Wu Yao, will you dare or not?”

The sentence was resonating through the atmosphere, it was incredible.

Teng Wu Yao looked glum, he really didn't dare. He had been bringing Wu Qing to the beast forests since his childhood to help him gain experience, he had become almost like a son to him, he had raised him since he was young, he couldn't put Wu Qing's life at stake and let him battle to the death against Yue Tian Ming.

“The situation in Xue Yue is constantly changing, the eight high-official's rankings will change as well, what is the point in trying to know who is stronger between Wu Qing and Yue Tian Ming? Why would I gamble with you?” Said Teng Wu Yao slowly which made people suddenly look disappointed. It seemed like Yue Tian Ming and Wu Qing's battle wouldn't happen.

The old man turned his head and stopped looking at Teng Wu Yao. He then said indifferently: “That vein of the earth is near my clan, the Yue Clan, I want it.” When he finished talking, the members of the Yue Clan gradually started moving and stood at every corner of the vein of the earth as if it already belonged to the Yue Clan, nobody else could have it.

He was calm, domineering and introverted but his voice was filled with sharpness, that was the head of the Yue Clan. The Yue Clan was mysterious, they rarely revealed themselves to the outside and rarely fought against other people, but the fact that

they didn't fight didn't mean that they couldn't fight, when they fought, they didn't retreat from anyone, including the patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect. Even if the Wan Shou Sect had discovered the vein of the earth before the Yue Clan, what could they do? The Yue Clan didn't care about their opinion.

Lin Feng looked at the old man's white hair fluttering in the wind and sighed.

That was strength, if Lin Feng had been stronger than the Yue Clan and discovered the vein of the earth, who would have dared to say the vein wasn't his? As the discoverer of the vein, who would have dared to attempt to steal it?

Because he was weak, everybody that discovered the Qi well after him tried to steal it from him, on top of that the members of the Wan Shou Sect even tried to make him hand over his ring along with all his items and told him to get lost, otherwise they would kill him, that was the only choice they were giving him, a ridiculous choice.

All that mattered was strength.

Each and every single member of the Wan Shou Sect looked furious. How detestable, the members of the Yue Clan were really abominable. They had completely ignored the Wan Shou Sect.

"Yue Qing Shan." Said Teng Wu Yao while staring at the old man with the white hair. People who knew the old man's name were rare.

“I already said it, that vein of the earth is near my clan, it is thus ours, do you need me to repeat it over and over again?” Said Yue Qing Shan who didn’t care about Wu Teng Ya’s feelings, he rolled up his sleeves and, even though he was usually calm, released a powerful energy.

The atmosphere became deathly silent. Nobody spoke and the silence was oppressive.

Lin Feng smiled, the members of the Wan Shou Sect had thought that they would be able to steal the vein of the earth but the Yue Clan was stealing it from them, that was definitely due to their bad karma.

“Qing Shan, brother, what a temper!” At that moment, a voice spread through the air, it came from far in the distance. Immediately after, another group of people walked through the sky. They were all walking on condensed pure Qi, they all had the strength of the Xuan Qi layer and were moving in perfect formation.

The Yu Clan had arrived, it was suddenly becoming bustling and lively. Three powers of influence had arrived, they constituted some of the most influential groups in the Imperial City, they could turn the Imperial City upside down.

Very quickly, the Yu Clan arrived in the air above the well of pure Qi. When Lin Feng saw these people, coldness invaded his eyes. The Yu Clan and Lin Feng had a deep hatred.

He had killed Yu Tian Xing, and the third elder of the Yu Clan had died because of him. Those days, the Yu Clan really wanted to kill Lin Feng. This time, the people of the Yu Clan who had come were all extremely high-ranked members, their leader was a middle aged man, he looked majestic, he was the head of the clan: Yu Liu Shui.

Back in the past, when people talked about Yu Liu Shui and Yue Qing Shan, they used to call them Qing Shan and Liu Shui but those days, they rarely came out so people who addressed them that way were extremely rare.

Lin Feng sensed that Yu Liu Shui accidentally glanced at him and revealed his killing intent.

But in the end, Yu Liu Shui smiled indifferently.

“Teng Wu Yao, brother, you’re wrong, the Yue Clan lives near this vein of the earth, they found it before you, since it’s that way, it belongs to the Yue Clan in its entirety.” Said Yu Liu Shui while smiling which stupefied everyone.

Yu Liu Shui was making Teng Wu Yao even more furious, the Wan Shou Sect had discovered that place before the Yue Clan.

“My Sect, the Wan Shou Sect found it in the first place.” Said Teng Wu Yao in an ice-cold way, he looked furious.

“Huh....” Yu Liu Shui looked extremely surprised, then, with a shaking smile added: “I made improper remarks.”

Yue Qing Shan smiled coldly, glanced at Yu Liu Shui and Teng Wu Yao, and then said: “I will repeat it once more, for the last time, from now on, the vein of the earth belongs to the Yue Clan.”

Yu Liu Shui then carelessly said: “We arrived too late, we cannot steal the vein of the earth, Qing Shan, brother, don’t worry about that, but there is someone I want to kill here.”

Yu Liu Shui looked glum, he had arrived too late and couldn’t steal the vein of the earth, but he was indirectly suggesting that if Teng Wu Yao had the opportunity to do so, he should.

“Whom do you want to kill?” Asked Yue Qing Shan.

“Him.” Said Yu Liu Shui while pointing at Lin Feng with killing intent in his eyes.

“That person killed my fifth son and my third brother, I have to kill him.” Said Yu Liu Shui while looking at Yue Qing Shan.

Yue Qing Shan frowned, it seemed like Yu Liu Shui had a few idea about Lin Feng’s identity, but with the power and influence of the Yu clan, finding the clues wasn’t too difficult.

“He’s Lin Feng?” When Teng Wu Yao heard Yu Liu Shui, he was astonished. Those days, in the Imperial City, many people were

talking about Lin Feng.

“Indeed.” Said Yu Liu Shui while slightly nodding which made a cold expression appear on Teng Wu Yao’s face.

“What a coincidence, he also killed some of my member, I want him dead too.”

Two old monsters wanted to kill Lin Feng.

Chapter 378: Who Wants To Kill Him?

Lin Feng really was unlucky, he had managed to provoke two huge spheres of influence.

In Xue Yue, if the Yu Clan and the Wan Shou Sect wanted the same person to die, that person rarely continued breathing. Those days, Lin Feng had enmity with them both.

It seemed like this time, Lin Feng was definitely going to die.

On Lin Feng's side, the four cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer looked at Lin Feng with a deep and profound expression in their eyes. They were just starting to understand that the young man who was fighting with them was famous in Xue Yue, he was Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was already extremely strong, to the extent that he could even easily kill a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. He was amazing.

But at that moment, Lin Feng was in a critical situation and they would be unable to help him.

Yue Qing Shan suddenly frowned, but immediately regained a calm and detached facial expression.

Even though he had lost contact with his daughter and even though he hated the man whom his daughter had fallen in love

with, even though he was unwilling to announce that Lin Feng was one of his direct descendants, blood was still thicker than water and Lin Feng was still his grandson, all the members of the Yue clan had meticulously come to see how strong his grandson was, the Yu clan would help them achieve their aim.

“Yu Liu Shui, you’re talking about Yu Tian Xin and Yu Qiu, right?” Said Yue Qing Shan indifferently. Yu Liu Shui nodded and said: “Indeed.”

“Your fifth son was neither talented nor strong, he only knew how to use the power and influence of your clan, if his family name hadn’t been Yu, he would have died many times over. Now, he’s dead and it could be said to be karma. Concerning your brother, he rushed into the Lovesick Forest for a fight, did you really have no idea that he would be punished? That’s not surprising at all. Now, you have come personally here to take it out on a young man? How majestic and prestigious!” Said Yue Qing Shan sounding which stupefied everyone. His words conveyed his meaning, Yu Tian Xing and Yu Qiu were supposed to die because they were foolish.

“The most majestic and prestigious thing about your sect, the Wan Shou Sect, is that a group of core disciples came to steal the vein of the earth that other people discovered and failed to seize it from them, besides, a few of your beasts and members were killed by a young man in the process, how humiliating. These pitiful creatures died, it doesn’t matter, but you Teng Wu Yao, the patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect personally came here, you’re really shameless, you have no limit to your humiliating actions.”

“Huh?” The crowd was astonished. The head of the Yue Clan was

surprisingly insulting Yu Liu Shui and Teng Wu Yao because of Lin Feng.

Yu Liu Shui's facial expression slightly changed, Yue Qing Shan surprisingly spoke for Lin Feng, it seemed like the old man still had some affection for a relative.

Teng Wu Yao looked cold and detached. After all, Teng Wu Yao was the patriarch of a sect and Yue Qing Shan dared to humiliate him, how detestable.

“Could it be that the head of the Yue Clan wants to prevent us from killing him?” Said Yu Liu Shui trying to figure out the truth.

“Juniors' affairs should be handled by juniors themselves. Why would a bunch of seniors intervene? If you want his life, there is no problem, just send a junior to kill him, if they kill him, that's life, but if you encircle him, use the numbers from your sect or have a senior interfere, don't blame me for getting involved.” Said Yue Qing Shan indifferently. That's all he could do to help, the rest was up to Lin Feng.

“Hehe, he's an insignificant kid, nothing more, of course we, the elders, will not attack him personally, the outstanding disciples of the Wan Shou Sect are all incredible and extraordinary, one of them could kill him very easily.” Said Yu Liu Shui indifferently, handing the token over to the Wan Shou Sect once again. He was now sure that Lin Feng was her son. The Yu Clan could obviously kill Lin Feng very easily but the problem was, would it be worth it for the Yu Clan to get involved?

If the Wan Shou Sect attacked, that would be much better.

“Guys, who can kill him?” Asked Teng Wu Yao to the disciples behind him in a cold and detached way. He was going to take care of Lin Feng. Earlier, Lin Feng had killed some of his disciples, therefore, making a disciple of the sect kill Lin Feng was also an opportunity to regain their prestige.

Therefore, Teng Wu Yao didn't even think about shifting the responsibility elsewhere and immediately accepted the job of killing Lin Feng.

“I will kill him.” Said Wu Qing looking like a ferocious beast. A moment before, he hadn't fought against Yue Tian Ming, he was slightly scared to fight Yue Tian Ming, but killing Lin Feng would be easy.

“No need, why would we need you to kill Lin Feng?” Said Teng Wu Yao immediately forbidding Wu Qing from fighting. He disdained Lin Feng so for Wu Qing, killing Lin Feng wouldn't regain their prestige at all, it would even be a bigger humiliation for them.

“Wu Qing, the patriarch is right, we don't need you to kill him, even I can handle this task.” Said a disciple of the Wan Shou Sect at that moment while taking a step forwards. That person had very thick arms and legs, he looked extremely strong, he was at least two meters tall and it seemed as if every part of his body was filled with immense strength.

Teng Wu Yao glanced at him and nodded: “Alright, Du Yan, you can kill him.”

“Alright.” Said Du Yan while walking forwards, it seemed like the entire atmosphere was shaking under his footsteps, his gigantic body then rose into the air, so he could better look down on Lin Feng.

“Die.” Said Du Yan without adding any superfluous words. He then swooped straight towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at Du Yan and had the impression that a ferocious beast was charging through the atmosphere towards him, his feet looked like they belonged to a beast and were releasing a wild Qi.

“How quick!” The crowd was astonished. Du Yan was extremely robust and looked clumsy, but he was extremely quick.

“Move!” Shouted Lin Feng, immediately the four cultivators who were with him moved out of the way. Besides, a pure Qi sword appeared in Lin Feng’s hand, without attempting to dodge or avoid fighting, Lin Feng’s sword energy invaded the atmosphere, it immediately started to pierce through the air towards Du Yan.

“BOOM!” Du Yan’s huge body collided with the whistling sword energy, the atmosphere vibrated and the pure Qi sword started to crack, it seemed like it was unceasingly being dominated and started to crack before finally breaking apart.

“What a monstrous strength.” The crowd was astonished. The pure Qi sword had been broken by Du Yan, what a terrifying explosive power.

“Hooves!” Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Du Yan’s feet, actually they already couldn’t be called feet anymore, they looked like the hooves of a ferocious beast, they were dark and covered in thick hair, they looked horrible.

Lin Feng’s body shook and he abruptly moved backwards.

“BOOM!”

Du Yan’s huge hooves collided with the ground and a huge crevice appeared in the ground which started to split and break apart. Du Yan didn’t stop moving, Lin Feng who was moving backwards and Du Yan’s hand was closely chasing him while creating a hurricane as it moved through the air.

How quick, it’s like his movements are illusionary.

Lin Feng was flying backwards and the hurricane brushed past him and the wind hurt his eyes. Not only did Du Yan’s feet look like hooves but his hands had transformed too, however his senses were still as sharp as a human.

The crowd was gasping in astonishment. The Wan Shou Sect, as expected, had a great deal of amazing disciples. Du Yan just seemed

like a simple and rough fellow but he was actually incredibly strong and intrepid.

Teng Wu Yao was smiling coldly. Du Yan wasn't extremely talented but his hooves were really powerful. He had been unceasingly practicing his cultivation for many years in order to achieve his current cultivation level. Amongst the disciples of his level, he was older than most of them already, but he had always relied on himself and his determination to finally break through to the third Xuan Qi layer. His cultivation was very solid and stable because of this, a regular cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer wouldn't be his match, thus Lin Feng was even less likely to survive.

“You want to run away...” Shouted Du Yan in an ice-cold tone when he saw Lin Feng move back. His gigantic hand was moving towards Lin Feng at full speed, it looked simple and ordinary, but it created an extremely strong wind which greatly oppressed Lin Feng's and his clothes were fluttering violently under the wind.

“That person has broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer, two more layers than me, he is much stronger than me and on top of that, he is extremely quick. He has a clear advantage. If I want to defeat him, I fear that I will have to use my black lotus.” Thought Lin Feng but his grim fire black lotus was his last resort, Lin Feng wasn't willing to use it yet.

At that moment, he still didn't know if he could defeat the opponent or not, if he used his black lotus to kill Du Yan, he would have no pure Qi left, if someone else wanted to fight against him, it would become extremely dangerous.

Therefore, the black lotus was his last resort.

A purple light emerged behind him which filled the atmosphere. A myriad of purple tentacles rose into the air, it seemed like there was an endless amount of purple tentacles. In a flash, Lin Feng was surrounded by an army of purple snakes.

“That’s his spirit?” Yue Qing Shan’s eyes flashed when he saw Lin Feng’s purple spirit, even though it felt like a beast spirit, it didn’t look like a beast spirit, it seemed like Lin Feng hadn’t inherited his spirit from his mother, the blood spirit of the Yue Clan.

Chapter 379: The Ability?

The purple snakes rose into the air, the myriad of purple tentacles then wrapped around Du Yan's gigantic body. A sharp light flashed in his eyes, he quickly used his full power to block the majority of the tentacles and move backwards. Using the tentacles still on Du Yan's body, Lin Feng catapulted himself towards Du Yan's body like an arrow released from a bow.

“Sword!” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. He quickly condensed a sword of pure Qi into his hands which thrust towards Du Yan at full speed like a needle.

“RAAAAAAH!” Du Yan unleashed a furious roar, he put all of his strength into his hand and destroyed the purple tentacles which were around his hand. After his gigantic hand continued its momentum towards Lin Feng's sword

“Pshhh ...Crr.... The pure Qi sword slightly pierced into the gigantic hand but then abruptly stopped and could no longer move. Du Yan's hand started to transform, it became extremely dark and thick.

“RAAAAAH!” Roared Du Yan furiously with his huge mouth wide open. His face had become absolutely hideous, just like that of a beast.

At the same time, behind Du Yan appeared a ferocious wild beast illusion. It was a huge black beast, a one-eyed rhinoceros ferocious beast.

Du Yan's name even corresponded to the spirit he was born with.

“Roaaaarrr.....” At the moment when the spirit appeared, Du Yan roared loudly and it seemed like his body was growing larger, his body was now the size of a mountain.

His two hooves stomped onto the ground and the ground started to crack as eight very deep crevices appeared. It was an incredible power, besides, his extremely loud roar was so powerful that it sent Lin Feng flying backwards.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!.....” The ground was trembling as Du Yan was walking forwards, each of his steps made the ground shake. Besides, with each step he crossed a distance of ten meters, he looked like he was moving slowly but in fact he was moving with incredible speed, it almost seemed unreal.

“Die!” Du Yan was not far from Lin Feng when he started to punch through the atmosphere with his gigantic hand. The Qi from his hand created the illusion of a black hand that was half the size of Lin Feng's entire body. If this struck Lin Feng, if he didn't die, he would be severely injured.

The sound of flowing water spread through the atmosphere, the purple snakes turned into a purple lake which flooded straight towards the gigantic Du Yan. Lin Feng used the counterforce from his attack to move back at full speed.

Lin Feng was swiftly forced down to the ground by the attack and

quickly jumped through the air, he raised his head and gazed at the sun on the horizon, on his body, pure sun Qi started to grow stronger and the flames grew more intense.

“What a monstrous pure Qi, if he was on the same level as Du Yan, then Du Yan wouldn’t even be his match.” Thought the crowd when they sensed how scorching flames from Lin Feng’s pure sun Qi. Unfortunately, Lin Feng’s opponent was the terrifying Du Yan.

“Boom!” Du Yan slammed his foot onto the ground and charged towards Lin Feng, he was becoming faster and faster.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked towards the sun. He started to focus on his Cosmos Burning Sun skill, the sun started shining its sunlight down onto Lin Feng, ray after ray of sunlight started to warm Lin Feng’s heart and on Lin Feng’s body, a dazzling sun pattern started to illuminate the atmosphere.

“What kind of skill is that?” Many people in the crowd were gasping in amazement. He could attract sunlight onto his body, that skill was awesome!

Yue Qing Shan and a few other extremely strong cultivators were astonished as well, the skill that Lin Feng had learnt was probably an extremely powerful lower sun skill, attracting sunlight could only be done using sun skills, this type of skill was extremely rare yet Lin Feng had managed to learn it.

The sword made from pure Qi was broken a few times, but this

time when it condensed, it was more dazzling than ever.

“Scorching Sword, Die!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously, his pure Qi sword and his sun Qi combined into a scorching hot sword. His sword then started to descend from the sky, flames were pouring from the edge of his sword leaving a trail of fire as it moved.

“RAAAAAAH...RAAAAAH...” Du Yan opened his gigantic mouth and started to roar furiously. His beast spirit also opened its gigantic mouth, it looked hideous as it then roared violently. Suddenly, multiple one-eyed rhinoceros illusions were pouring from the spirits mouth and they formed a stampede towards Lin Feng.

The dazzling scorching sword fell onto the stampede, endless roars of agony filled the air.

The roars of agony were continuously sounding when Du Yan and his rhinoceros spirit both opened their mouths again and more rhinoceros illusions poured out from the spirit’s mouth. The people in the crowd all started to cover their ears, the sounds of their roars were horrible.

“Boom!” The ground started to crack, that dazzling sword was still descending, but at some point its radiance started fading and eventually the radiance could no longer be seen. The rhinoceros illusions were still rushing towards Lin Feng from every direction which made some people start to worry about Lin Feng.

They also didn’t know what kind of trick Du Yan was using but it seemed like he could create an army of spirits to attack for him.

Du Yan finally closed his mouth but the roars were still resonating through the atmosphere. When he saw that the great dazzling sword had lost its radiance, he smiled coldly.

However, when the scorching sword lost its radiance, the sensation of a sunset could be felt.

Lin Feng looked calm and serene, he then said in a low voice: “Sword of the Setting Sun.”

His sword started to pierce through the atmosphere. It didn't look as dazzling as the scorching sword but it contained the power of the setting sun, which also gave his sword a unique beauty.

The sun was could be dazzling but at some point it had to lose its brightness, the scorching sword was incomparably dazzling but after, the sun needed to set, a uniquely beautiful sword descended from the sky and the rhinoceros illusions started to disappear one after the other as if they were disappearing with the light of the sun. Lin Feng's sword pierced through everything in its path and immediately arrived before Du Yan.

The crowd was astonished. That dazzling sword had lost its brightness but this was still part of Lin Feng's sword attack, it was unlike anything they had seen before.

That sword resembled the setting sun.

Du Yan was stupefied as well, he was preparing to kill Lin Feng when he saw the light from the sword fading, he hadn't thought that the sword would still have the power to attack him. Normally, the more powerful the sword, the more dazzling the sword became.

“RAAAHHH!” Du Yan raised his gigantic hand which caused the air to tremble. When the sword and the hand collided, cracking sounds filled the air and a thread of blood appeared, Du Yan's hand had been injured.

“Die!” When Du Yan sensed that he had been injured, he burst into rage and threw himself at Lin Feng.

“Pierce!” Lin Feng put his entire strength into his sword and attacked the gigantic hand which was heading towards him, at the same time, Lin Feng started to condense the flames that were burning around his body. Black flames suddenly burst out from the pure Qi sword which collided with the gigantic hand.

Du Yan pulled a long face, he was unwilling to give up but at that moment, black flames burst out from the sword which pierced further into his wounded hand, at that moment, an incredible pain surged through his body and his entire body was twitching in pain.

It was painful, it was incredibly painful. Flames were burning on the palm of his hand, his entire body, was covered with cold sweat, the pain was unbearable.

“Crrrrr..... Crrrrr.....”

The wound was emitting some subtle crackling sounds, Du Yan could see that his hand was being burnt black and he could feel his hand burning.

“RAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAHHHH...” roared Du Yan extremely loudly, in the end, he refused to surrender. He used his other hand to bombard the atmosphere towards Lin Feng.

However, Lin Feng’s pure Qi sword was continued to pierce deeper into the wound on his other hand and burning his flesh. He only retreated at the last minute and propelled himself backwards.

Du Yan had landed onto the ground, he was covering his wound with his other hand, his facial expression was absolutely hideous.

Lin Feng was still standing in the air looking down at Du Yan in an ice-cold way.

“Kill me? Do you have the ability?” Joked Lin Feng which astonished the entire crowd. Lin Feng was making fun of Du Yan.

Du Yan had an absolute advantage when it came to his cultivation level but in the end, he was defeated and was injured by Lin Feng.

Lin Feng knew that it was because he had voluntarily come to fight in front of such a large crowd that Du Yan hadn’t taken it seriously and held himself back, he didn’t use his full strength

from the start and instead used flashy moves, in order to look even more outstanding to the crowd.

The members of the Wan Shou Sect all had hideous expressions on their faces. He had lost. Du Yan couldn't kill Lin Feng and was even been injured by Lin Feng, and on top of that, he even had to release his spirit.

Du Yan had lost but... How was it possible? That was a guaranteed victory, otherwise, the Wan Shou Sect would be humiliated.

Next to Teng Wu Yao, Teng Wu Shan was staring at Lin Feng, his facial expression drastically changed. Back when the Yun Hai Sect was being annihilated, he had personally seen Lin Feng, but at that time, he had only broken through to the Ling Qi layer, he was just a tiny little insect. However, at that moment, Lin Feng could already look down on the majority of the most outstanding disciples from the Wan Shou Sect, he was really extremely gifted, he was a true genius, if they didn't kill Lin Feng, there would be no end to the trouble in the future.

Yue Qing Shan's facial expression was unfathomable, once in awhile, he heaved a sigh.

Chapter 380: Beast Metamorphosis

Between a cultivator of the first Xuan Qi layer and the third Xuan Qi layer, there was a difference of two layers, the difference between the amount of pure Qi they could use was colossal. Normally, a higher levelled cultivator could kill the lower layer in the blink of an eye.

But Lin Feng could rely on his strength of the first Xuan Qi layer to hurt Du Yan who had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng's sword attacks were already so incredible that Du Yan didn't have the required understanding to fight against them. Even if Lin Feng used all his strength, when facing an opponent who is two layers higher, even the difference in skills would not be enough. If Lin Feng was able to achieve such things, it was because he had penetrated into a special cultivation dimension such as the sword fusion dimension, it was the only plausible explanation that anyone could think of for his incredible battle power.

Lin Feng was only eighteen years old and already understood the sword fusion dimension. In the history of Xue Yue, even Wu Qing, when he was eighteen, could only carry out energy attacks, he hadn't understood sword fusion until he was twenty-one years old.

Lin Feng was an incredible genius when it came to swords, he had already surpassed the Wu Qing of the past, the Emotionless Sword, if he was born in the same period, he could have called himself his father.

Of course, only Yue Qing Shan and a few others could see just how incredible Lin Feng's skills really were, the others only knew

that Lin Feng was a genius who could defeat a cultivator of the third Xuan Qi layer.

Du Yan looked at the wound on the palm of his hand, he then raised his head, his eyes were filled with killing intent when he looked at Lin Feng.

“RAAAHHH.....” Du Yan was roaring while looking towards the sky. His spirit was growing larger and larger, it was gradually enveloping his entire body, his entire body was also becoming larger, four meters... Five meters.... His eyes were closed but between his eyes opened they were the eyes of a beast.

Very quickly after, Du Yan and his rhinoceros spirit seemed to have merged into a single entity. Du Yan had transformed into a very strange beast.

What astonished people the most was that Du Yan's arms and legs had entirely transformed. He really looked like a black demonic beast, a moment before, it was just an illusion from using his spirit, but at that moment his body had actually transformed.

“Beast Metamorphosis!” The crowd could not believe their eyes. There were rumors that said the Wan Shou Sect had a unique skill which allowed those who had a beast spirit to merge with it. It seemed like this rumour was true, at that moment, Du Yan had transformed into an evil one-eyed rhinoceros.

Lin Feng was also fixedly staring at Du Yan. He only saw his opponent walking on all fours across on the ground with his head

raised, looking directly at him. His head looked half-human and half-beast, it was disgusting, it looked like he wanted to tear Lin Feng into pieces.

“Beast metamorphosis?” Lin Feng whispered. He shook a little bit, in a flash, his purple spirit started to roar, just like an enraged ocean of purple blood. In front of Lin Feng, an incredible quantity of purple light was condensing and forming a shape.

“Roaaaaarrrrr.....” The sound of that roar was echoing through the atmosphere, it was incredible. The crowd could see the purple lights were transforming into a ferocious beast, a gigantic purple dragon, which seemed to be alive.

“Could I be wrong? Is that a beast spirit?” Yue Qing Shan was frowning. That purple energy was strange, it seemed to be taking the shape of a beast and becoming real.

“If that really is a beast spirit, it would mean that he might have inherited the Celestial Fangs Spirit of the Yue Clan.” Thought Yue Qing Shan whose thoughts were circulating at full speed but the probability was extremely low. If Lin Feng had inherited the Celestial Fangs Spirit, why would he care about being surrounded by members of the Wan Shou Sect? The Celestial Fangs Spirit could put the entire Wan Shou Sect in a very critical situation which was one of the reasons why they feared the Yue Clan so much.

Of course, there was another possibility, maybe Lin Feng didn't know how to use his Celestial Fangs Spirit.

Du Yan, who had the gigantic form of a evil one-eyed rhinoceros, and the gigantic purple dragon looked at each other with very different looks. Du Yan's eye was blood shot and he was releasing a brutal killing intent, however, the dragon looked down at the evil one-eyed rhinoceros with its eyes filled with disdain and arrogance.

The purple dragon spirit may have seemed to be weaker than the rhinoceros spirit at that moment but there was one significant detail, the purple dragon spirit was the blood that Lin Feng had absorbed from a Zun level dragon. A Zun level ferocious beast, how majestic!

“Die.” Shouted Du Yan and immediately after, his feet slammed into the ground creating a horrifying explosion in the earth under his feet. The ground caved in and a crater was created beneath him. At that moment, the rhinoceros was flying through the air and was releasing a colossal amount of beast like Qi.

“Rrrroaaaaarrrrr.....” The purple dragon roared furiously, its gigantic body hovered in the air and it started to breathe out monstrous quantities of purple energy from its mouth.

The ground started to shake as the purple dragon and the rhinoceros collided, it seemed like time had stopped all that remained was the tremors in the atmosphere.

“The purple spirit is extremely powerful!” Thought the crowd. Du Yan's beast metamorphosis was amazing, it was very powerful

but that attack, which was supposed to defeat the purple dragon, failed to disperse the purple dragon spirit. The two ferocious beasts refused to back down from one another.

The rhinoceros roared furiously as it landed on the ground then immediately shot back into the sky towards the dragon.

“BOOM!”

The ground and the atmosphere shook again, the purple dragon continued to sway through the air, however, Lin Feng was starting to look pale.

“If you want to suffer before you die, I can arrange that.” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone. Pure sun Qi to burn around his body and flames burst out from the air around Lin Feng’s body, it was incredibly beautiful.

The rhinoceros jumped towards the dragon again and at that moment Lin Feng shouted: “Disperse!”

Immediately after, the purple dragon immediately transformed into an endless lake, but the rushing water sounds of the purple lake only lasted for a second before it completely submerged the body of the rhinoceros.

“Huh?”

The crowd was stupefied, what was Lin Feng doing? Did he think

that a lake could stop a rhinoceros?

But they only saw Lin Feng rush forwards surrounded by scorching pure sun Qi as he immediately jumped into the purple lake. He then disappeared from their field of vision.

The Qi had disappeared, that purple lake was huge enough to cover everything that was happening inside, the crowd had no idea of what was happening inside as they couldn't sense any energy.

The area was filled with a deathly silence. Suddenly, something broke the silence, there was a small wave on the surface of the purple lake... Lin Feng dived into the purple lake but could a lake fight against the rhinoceros?

“Haha, Die!” Said Teng Wu Yao while smiling coldly. Lin Feng had surprisingly said that he would kill the rhinoceros but with the current strength of the rhinoceros, Lin Feng wouldn't stand a chance, besides, he had dived into the purple lake, he can only blame his death on his own foolishness.

All the members of the Wan Shou Sect were relaxed and confident. They were all smiling coldly as if they Lin Feng's fate was already sealed.

“Reeeeeehhh.....” A beast roar could be heard. Many waves started rolling across the purple lake, the roar was a roar of pain.

“Huh?” The people of the Wan Shou Sect no longer looked

confident when they heard that roar.

An enormous deadly Qi burst out from the purple lake, that deadly Qi was scorching-hot and demoniac which intrigued the crowd, they were wondering what could release such a devastating energy.

“Reeeeeeehhh... REEEEEEEHHH!!!” The beast roars could be heard again, it sounded like it was terrified and in agony.

“What’s going on?” The members of the Wan Shou Sect were shaking. At that moment, their confidence was completely shattered, they were all looking anxious.

The beast gradually stopped crying out, that endless lake of purple gradually became extremely calm again, it was silent and motionless. The crowd were all staring at the lake, it was abnormally peaceful.

What had happened inside the lake?

Finally, the purple lake started dispersing and then completely disappeared.

The crowd was staring at it as the purple lake was slowly fading, very quickly, the crowd saw a silhouette appear, a handsome young man, it was Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was calmly standing in the air looking cold and

indifferent. The purple lake continued to be absorbed back into his body until it completely vanished.

The crowd was astonished when they saw Lin Feng, they were all fixedly staring at him.

What about the evil one-eyed rhinoceros?

It had disappeared, that gigantic rhinoceros was gone.

What was going on? What happened?

Everybody was fixedly staring at Lin Feng, they were astonished. He had died, Du Yan had died. Incredibly, he was mercilessly slaughtered, to the extent that not even a trace of his body was left to bury.

“How terrifying!” Many people looked at handsome young man with an incredible respect in their eyes. Lin Feng had destroyed such an incredibly large beast without leaving a trace.

At that moment, the members of the Wan Shou Sect couldn't believe their eyes.

What was going on?

But that was the harsh reality, while Lin Feng and Du Yan were inside the lake, Lin Feng had mercilessly butchered Du Yan. Lin

Feng had already said it, he was going to make Du Yan suffer before he killed him, he would pay for his actions with his life.

Chapter 381: The Shaman Spirit

How could Lin Feng do that?

Nobody knew what had happened. They had only sensed some deadly Qi and when the purple lake had disappeared, Du Yan who had fused together with his rhinoceros spirit had disappeared.

Everybody remained silent and an oppressing deathly silence reigned over the atmosphere. The members of the Wan Shou Sect were staring at Lin Feng with killing intent, their eyes were burning with fury.

“I’m going to kill him.” Said Wu Qing at that moment. He took a step forwards, he wanted to kill Lin Feng.

“Wait, wait.” Said Teng Wu Yao aggressively making Wu Qing stop and turn his head.

“We don’t need you to go and kill him.” Said Teng Wu Yao while shaking his head. He had to prevent Wu Qing from going to kill Lin Feng, Du Yan had already been killed, if Wu Qing, who was the third ranked high-official, went to kill Lin Feng, everybody would believe that apart from Wu Qing, the Wan Shou Sect didn’t have any other talented and outstanding disciples. They would all believe that Wu Qing was the only person who could kill Lin Feng.

Teng Wu Yao turned his head and looked at a young man. That young man looked like a younger Teng Wu Yao, it was precisely because it was his own son: Wu Zhen.

Teng Wu Zhen, even though he wasn't one of the eight high-officials, he should be able to become one according to what the people in the sect believed. There were rumours that he held an extraordinary strength.

What amazed people even more was that Wu Zhen had inherited from his father's powerful spirit.

"Wu Zhen, go and kill him." Said Teng Wu Yao indifferently which stupefied everybody. With Teng Wu Zhen going up, Lin Feng was extremely unlucky.

"Alright." Said Wu Zhen while nodding. He took a step forwards and looked at Lin Feng.

"Bestial eyes." Lin Feng looked at Wu Zhen's eyes, they looked extremely bestial.

"Are Wan Shou Men's disciples going to fight one after the other? Are they planning on taking turns?" Joked Yue Qing Shan mockingly.

"Wu Zhen's strength is similar to that of Du Yan, he has also broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer, Lin Feng was able to kill Du Yan, so I told Wu Zhen to go and kill him, could it be that you have a problem with it?" Said Teng Wu Yao in a cold tone.

Yue Qing Shan groaned coldly and was about to speak when, Lin

Feng who had remained silent opened his mouth.

“If he wants to kill me, let’s see if he has the ability.”

“Huh?” When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they were stupefied, he was really audacious, he had killed Du Yan and still wanted to fight against Wu Zhen, even though Wu Zhen and Du Yan’s cultivation levels were the same, Wu Zhen was certainly much stronger than Du Yan, otherwise, Teng Wu Yao wouldn’t have asked him to fight against Lin Feng.

Yue Qing Shan silently looked at Lin Feng, Lin Feng’s temperament was similar to that of his grandfather.

Wu Zhen took a step forwards and arrived in front of Lin Feng, his eyes were diffusing a bestial light which could make a person’s soul shiver, it felt like Lin Feng’s soul was being sucked out.

“His eyes look so bestial.”

Lin Feng frowned, at that moment, he really thought that Wu Zhen’s eyes looked like those of a beast and he felt a sense of danger from those eyes. He had to be careful.

“You’re quite strong, you managed to kill Du Yan, but you have offended the Wan Shou Sect so even if you’re strong, you are still doomed to die.” Said Wu Zhen calmly. His black chang pao was fluttering in the wind. Immediately after, a hurricane formed behind him. He didn’t have a strong build and did not look like a

strong person, he actually looked much weaker than everyone.

“Come.” Said Lin Feng, he didn’t need to add anything superfluous, he only had the battle in mind.

Wu Zhen’s body shook, his weak and fragile body then started to glide on the wind and he quickly arrived in front of Lin Feng, he said, while staring at Lin Feng: “Look at me.”

Lin Feng looked at Wu Zhen and started to shake. It was as if his soul was no longer tied to his body, as if it wanted to break free and go to Wu Zhen.

Lin Feng felt a monstrous strength rushing towards him and his facial expression drastically changed.

Just like an illusion, Lin Feng quickly retreated backwards. A violent wind blew past his face and an evil coldness invaded his entire body causing him to shiver, how cold!

He retreated over a hundred meters and stared at Wu Zhen. Wu Zhen looked sinister and ruthless and his eyes looked even more dangerous, he was much more of a threat than Du Yan.

“Wu Teng Yao, your son is much stronger than those other disciples. His shaman spirit is incredible, it can influence the souls of other cultivators, and it can be used to control ferocious beasts. Having sent Wu Zhen to kill that young man really means that you have confidence in his ability.” Said Yue Qing Shan indifferently

sounding like he was flattering Teng Wu Yao but in fact, he was just warning Lin Feng about the spirit.

The Shaman Spirit was the best spirit of the Wan Shou Sect, it could entice the opponent's soul and even absorb it, when an opponent was struggling to regain control of his soul, it was easy for Wu Zhen to kill them.

A moment before, Lin Feng had struggled and barely managed to escape from Wu Zhen's attack, luckily Lin Feng's soul was stronger than most, otherwise he would have died.

"Hmph!" Teng Wu Yao coldly glared at Yue Qing Shan. He obviously understood that Yue Qing Shan had said these words so that Lin Feng could hear them.

Lin Feng looked at Yue Qing Shan with an appreciative look, Lin Feng didn't understand why the old man continued to help him.

When Lin Feng saw that Yue Qing Shan was looking at him, he gave a warm smile and nodded in thanks. That move made Yue Qing Shan's heartbeat accelerate and his eyes light up.

Blood is thicker than water. Lin Feng was, after all, the son of his dear and beloved daughter. No matter how much hatred he held in his heart, he couldn't blame Lin Feng, this was the reason he warned Lin Feng.

He hated Lin Feng's father, Lin Hai, because he caused his own

daughter to cut him off, but his grandson Lin Feng was still his grandson.

Lin Feng probably didn't know these things, with a simple expression, he had made the heart and soul of the old man shiver, and had even caused the old man to go deep into thought.

Lin Feng wasn't the only who didn't know about these things, apart from some members of the Yu Clan and two members from the Yue Clan, nobody understood why the head of the Yue Clan was helping Lin Feng.

Wu Zhen looked at Yue Qing Shan and smiled coldly. Warning Lin Feng was useless. He would still kill him regardless.

“Lin Feng, look at me.” Said Wu Zhen confidently. However, at that moment, Lin Feng didn't pay attention to him, he immediately closed his eyes and his perceptions and senses became much clearer. Everything around him was clear and distinct in his mind. He was in fusion with the earth.

“Huh?” Wu Zhen frowned and smiled: “Do you think that that will help you?”

Wu Zhen then started walking slowly towards Lin Feng. A mysterious energy started moving towards Lin Feng which made Lin Feng start to shake. As expected, even if he could perceive everything in his surroundings thanks to the earth fusion, he could still be affected by the shaman spirit.

“If you want to kill me, just come.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. His body rushed into the sky and transformed into an arrow which whistled through the air towards the horizon.

That move astonished everybody, Lin Feng wanted to escape?

“Chase him.”

Some members of the Wan Shou Sect started moving, they wanted to chase Lin Feng but Teng Wu Yao said in a detached way: “Don’t worry about it, stay here.”

“Patriarch?” Said some people, they didn’t understand, Lin Feng wanted to escape and he didn’t care

“He can’t escape, Wu Zhen will come back with his head.” Said Teng Wu Yao sounding extremely confident. Wu Zhen’s silhouette flickered and he also moved into the horizon, he was chasing Lin Feng to kill him.

When the members of the Wan Shou Sect heard Teng Wu Yao, they nodded. Indeed, Wu Zhen would definitely kill Lin Feng, he would soon return with Lin Feng’s head.

“Since the patriarch says so, my clan, the Yu Clan, will also stay here and wait for Wu Zhen to come back with Lin Feng’s head.” Said Yu Liu Shui with an indifferent smile on his face.

Besides, the middle aged man next to Yue Qing Shan glanced at

Yue Qing Shan and only saw that the old man was lost in thought.

A moment later, Yue Qing Shan looked in Lin Feng's direction and calmed down. Yue Qing Shan didn't move, Lin Feng had to rely on himself to survive.

The larger groups of influence weren't moving, no one was following him. They were just waiting for Wu Zhen to bring Lin Feng's head back.

At that moment, Lin Feng had already crossed a distance of a few hundred kilometres, his silhouette was still unceasingly flickering as he was rushing into the distance.

Besides, Wu Zhen was closely following behind him, he wasn't slow at all and was running through the sky with ease.

Lin Feng penetrated into a beast forest, was he trying to fight him there? Was he just looking to die?

Wu Zhen had a shaman spirit, he would be able to control any beast there as long as they weren't too strong.

After a long time, Lin Feng finally stopped, he had finally travelled far enough.

Lin Feng's silhouette flickered as he landed on a tree. He looked at Wu Zhen's approaching silhouette coldly. Lin Feng looked calm and serene yet his facial expression still contained cold killing

intent. No matter how you looked at it, he was showing absolutely no signs of fear.

Wu Zhen landed on a tree facing Lin Feng. When he saw that Lin Feng looked calm, he was surprised, he then immediately laughed and said: “You really don’t fear death, do you?”

Chapter 382: Beast Control

“Obviously you don’t fear death either.” Replied Lin Feng which astonished Wu Zhen. The bestial look in his eyes suddenly reappeared.

Lin Feng’s eyes also changed, two expressionless pitch black eyes appeared. Lin Feng hadn’t used his Celestial Spirit for a long time and thus had not viewed the world in darkness for a long time.

Lin Feng could clearly perceive everything that was happening around him. The earth fusion and the world of darkness were similar yet they caused Lin Feng to experience completely different sensations. At that moment, he was no longer in the same world. All his eyes could see was a world of darkness, a dark world that belonged to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was fixedly staring at Wu Zhen with his pitch black eyes, this time, he wasn’t trying to escape. At that moment, his brain could perceive everything clearly, it felt like nothing could influence him whatsoever.

Wu Zhen noticed Lin Feng’s eyes were completely black, it made him shiver. Lin Feng’s eyes seemed even more monstrous than his eyes.

Some bestial lights emerged from Wu Zhen’s eyes and rushed towards Lin Feng. However, these two black eyes looked emotionless. They didn’t even flicker, they were just filled with the sensation of endless darkness as they stared at Wu Zhen

emotionlessly, which made him frown.

Surprisingly, his eyes had become useless and were unable to influence Lin Feng.

“Not bad, but... So what?” Said Wu Zhen in a cold tone. He took a step forwards and abruptly disappeared. In a flash, he had arrived in front of Lin Feng, a dark and cold wind was blowing as a monstrous ice Qi rose and rushed towards Lin Feng, it was a surprise attack. Lin Feng sensed the ice Qi and calmly moved back. Lin Feng was wondering what skill Wu Zhen was learning to produce such a cold Qi.

“Retreating?” Said Wu Zhen with a cold smile on his mouth. His silhouette flickered again, he was closely chasing Lin Feng. Everywhere where the cold wind passed, a layer of ice would form on the trees, as the wind blew back and forth, the trees were quickly covered in multiple layers of ice which slowly began to kill all vegetation in the area.

“How quick!”

Wu Zhen was so moving quickly that Lin Feng was feeling the pressure, that cold wind was extremely dangerous and moved at incredible speed.

Lin Feng condensed a pure Qi sword and flames burst out from around his body, but at that moment, the pure sun Qi wasn't as dazzling as when he was fighting against Du Yan.

“When you killed Du Yan, you must have used a great deal of your pure Qi already.” Said Wu Zhen while smiling when he noticed that Lin Feng’s pure Qi had lost some of its power.

“You don’t need to try and hide it, I practice a lower moon skill, I perfectly understand your sun skill, you cannot fool me.” Continued Wu Zhen answering himself. Wu Zhen then suddenly attacked again and punched through the atmosphere creating a hurricane which blasted towards Lin Feng, when it collided with Lin Feng, his pure sun Qi and his sword instantly dispersed.

“Lower moon skill... No wonder...” Lin Feng seemed like he suddenly understood. Meng Qing practiced a lower moon skill, the moon and sun skills were able to nullify each other, besides, Meng Qing had also told him that his Cosmos Burning Sun skill currently only had the power of a lower sun skill.

Wu Zhen was practicing the a lower moon skill, but his cultivation level was higher, so his attacks were stronger, but that was to be expected.

Another ice-cold wind started to blow and another hurricane crashed onto Lin Feng’s body. Lin Feng felt like he was going to be frozen alive, how cold!

Lin Feng tried to move back but it didn’t seem like Wu Zhen was willing to give him any chances. He had been closely following him the whole time, using the cold wind to increase his speed. Even though Lin Feng’s perceptions were extremely acute when using his world of darkness and even though he could perceive every movements of Wu Zhen, he still was unable to escape from the

large area the cold wind was affecting, Lin Feng couldn't even dodge the wind, therefore, even if he could see the opponent's moves, it was still useless.

“Meng Qing's lower moon skill also created ice Qi, besides, Wu Zhen's lower moon skill was weaker but more viscous, the coldness contained within his attacks was no comparison with Meng Qing's, but it was extremely difficult to dodge.”

Lin Feng's eyes were pitch black as before and his thoughts were extremely clear. Wu Zhen's attacks were all aiming at his head, Lin Feng feared that sooner or later, he would be struck by the fist as well as the hurricane it created.

“It seems that if I don't use my full power, I will not be able to escape today.” Thought Lin Feng. Wu Zhen was extremely strong. Also, Lin Feng had consumed too much pure Qi when he fought against Du Yan. Inside his purple lake, he had used his black lotus to kill Du Yan... He had burnt him alive until there was nothing left but ashes. However, the problem was that he was now fighting against someone much stronger than Du Yan.

Another dazzling sword appeared, Lin Feng then abruptly turned to escape. If he had to kill Wu Zhen, it would be better to do it as far from the Wan Shou Sect as possible so he would have a head start when they started to chase.

If Lin Feng managed to go far enough and kill Wu Zhen, he would then have enough time to safely escape.

Wu Zhen's fist created another hurricane and rushed towards Lin Feng's sword. Wu Zhen still had a mocking smile on his face. Lin Feng wanted to escape? Lin Feng still thought that he could escape from here?

They could continue their battle through depths of the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain and Wu Zhen would use the chase to see if he could find any appropriate ferocious beasts to tame. He could kill two birds with one stone and find a beast which suited him.

Wu Zhen was neither quick nor too slow, he was just closely following Lin Feng. He had the feeling of complete control. To him this was a joke, Lin Feng was already dead, he was a dead man walking, there was no need for Wu Zhen to rush.

Lin Feng could guess what Wu Zhen was thinking. In his world of darkness, he smiled coldly, he also stopped moving at full speed. Lin Feng started running on the tips of the trees, so he could continue to move at high speed but without using pure Qi, he was able to recover his pure Qi while doing this.

Wu Zhen was acting cocky and over-confident.

“Aren't you sick of running farther and farther away? You can't escape me.”

The two people were above a dense forest, Wu Zhen said these words in a cold mocking tone. Lin Feng was still running swiftly through the trees and started to slow down until he finally stopped.

He turned around, his eyes were black and emotionless.

“Indeed, you’re right, this should be far enough.” Said Lin Feng indifferently before adding: “But I’m not trying to escape from you.”

“You’re not escaping from me?” Wu Zhen glanced around and saw a few wild beasts on the ground which were moving towards them. It seemed like they had noticed that two people had approached their domain. These beasts’ eyes looked ice-cold.

“Before you die, I will show you the power of the Shaman Spirit.” Said Wu Zhen in a cold and detached way. Immediately after, his spirit appeared in the air. His spirit looked like an evil spirit, it was floating majestically in the air. It didn’t look like anything living but with the extremely cold Qi which it was releasing from its eyes, it looked bestial and evil.

“A ghost!” That was the first word which came to Lin Feng’s mind. That shaman spirit looked like a ghost, it looked weak as if a strong gust of wind could blow it away. However, its ice-cold eyes looked monstrous and terrifying.

“Look at it clearly, now that you have seen the power of the Shaman Spirit, you can die happy.” Said Wu Zhen in an evil tone. Immediately after, his mouth shook and he said while sounding cold and detached: “I introduced you to my Shaman Spirit, now it’s time to die.”

When Wu Zhen finished talking, his spirit rose into the air, then strange and evil threads of Qi started to emerge from the spirit which stupefied Lin Feng. That shaman spirit seemed like it had its own life. Glancing at it gave Lin Feng the feeling that his soul would weaken until it was sucked away.

But the shaman spirit only glanced at Lin Feng for a second, immediately after, it swooped down towards a ferocious beast. Just like a ghost, it descended from the sky with an evil white light which enveloped the ferocious beast. The ferocious beast's vision blurred and then its eyes slowly became relaxed, it had quickly submitted.

“What an incredible spirit, it's quite scary.” Thought Lin Feng stupefied. That shaman spirit was terrifying, it could easily control ferocious beasts.

“Roaaarrr.....” The surrounding ferocious beasts started to run away, that shaman spirit was terrifying to them.

Ling level ferocious beasts were extremely smart, Xuan level beasts even more so, how could they not have noticed how terrifying that shaman spirit was?

“Wuuu... Wuuuu....” A few howls which felt like they had emerged from the depths of hell filled the atmosphere. The shaman's silhouette flickered and it landed on a Xuan level ferocious beast which was trying to escape but was too slow. That ferocious beast immediately stared at the shaman, and in a flash, that Xuan level beast became obedient. Very quickly, its eyes became like those of the first ferocious beast, it had been possessed

as well.

In the blink of an eye, two Xuan level ferocious beasts had ended up under the shaman's control.

“The shaman spirit comes from an ancient lineage, it is an honour for you to witness its abilities, you can die happy.” Said Wu Zhen. Lin Feng was watching him and shaking his head.

“The problem is that your spirit can only control beast souls and just like an enticement technique, your spirit is useless against people with a strong soul.” Said Lin Feng after thinking for a few seconds and then said while smiling: “I think now should be perfect, I will show you my spirit too.”

Chapter 383: Celestial Fangs

“Useless? How audacious!” Groaned Wu Zhen while looking angry. What Lin Feng had just said was the harsh reality. He had pointed out the weak spot in Wu Zhen’s spirit.

All the shaman’s power resided in its ability to entice an opponents’ soul and absorb it. This was how Wu Zhen could control ferocious beasts. Even though the level system of ferocious beasts was similar to that of human’s cultivation layer system, an ordinary ferocious beast’s soul, even if it was very strong, still couldn’t match with that of a human soul. Ferocious beasts could easily be controlled. The shaman spirit could control ferocious beasts and absorb their souls but it could only entice people’s souls, it didn’t have the power to control human cultivators.

Of course, just to be able to control ferocious beasts was already incredible.

“I really want to see what kind of spirit you plan on showing me.” Said Wu Zhen while staring at Lin Feng. At that moment, the shaman spirit moved back to Wu Zhen and the two ferocious beasts under its control also rose into the air, There was a winged tiger beast and a condor-lion.

The two ferocious beasts’ eyes looked bloodthirsty, they were fixedly staring at Lin Feng while looking extremely ferocious.

“Ferocious beasts? If you’re not scared of them, why would I be?” Said Lin Feng indifferently. An endless stream of purple lights

emerged and turned into an endless stream of purple snakes which instantly constricted the two ferocious beasts' bodies.

The winged tiger and the condor-lion started to shake, the purple snakes continued to add more and more pressure, the two ferocious beasts were being crushed.

“Is that the spirit that you want to show me? I’ve already seen it.” Said Wu Zhen sounding indifferent.

Lin Feng’s pupils were still pitch black.

“Didn’t you say that I could die happy because I saw your shaman spirit? I will show you my spirit, it is the first time that I will release it while using the purple spirit.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, a dragon roar filled the atmosphere. Behind Lin Feng there was a dragon with six heads. It’s gigantic body with six heads then steeply rose into the air behind Lin Feng, while looking up at the sky, it let out a powerful roar.

Lin Feng had another spirit and it was the first time that he was releasing them both at the same time.

“Dual Spirit...”

When Wu Zhen heard the dragon roar, he started shaking in fear. Lin Feng had been hiding his strength the entire time. He was

surprisingly the host of a dual spirit.

Besides, at the moment when the sixth dragon raised its head and roared into the sky, Wu Zhen had started to panic, he was fixedly staring at the six dragon heads, his face drastically changed and his heart started brutally pounding in his chest.

“How’s that possible... How is that even possible.....” Wu Zhen couldn’t believe his eyes, Lin Feng couldn’t have that spirit... It was the Celestial Fangs Spirit, the blood spirit of the Yue Clan, only direct descendants of the Yue Clan bloodline would inherit that spirit.

Lin Feng’s family name was Lin, how could he have the spirit of the Yue Clan?

When Lin Feng saw Wu Zhen’s facial expression drastically change, he was very surprised, even if he had a dual spirit, Wu Zhen was also a monstrously strong cultivator, why would he be so shocked to see a dual spirit, he probably had already encountered a dual spirit user before.

“Is your family name Yue? Or is it Lin?” Asked Wu Zhen while fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

“Yue?” Lin Feng frowned. Like the Yue Clan? He didn’t understand what Wu Zhen meant.

“It seems like you don’t know.” Said Wu Zhen when he saw Lin

Feng's facial expression. His eyes were twinkling. He suddenly remembered that a moment before Yue Qing Shan was helping Lin Feng, besides he had persuaded the seniors of the Yu Clan and the Wan Shou Sect not to attack Lin Feng.

Also, why were the Yu Clan constantly avoiding killing Lin Feng directly and instead shifted the responsibility to the Wan Shou Sect?

At that moment, Wu Zhen suddenly had countless questions. What was going on? He had also heard that the third elder of the Yu Clan, Yu Qiu, had had his cultivation crippled by the owner of the Lovesick Forest. After that, one of Duan Wu Ya's faction killed him.

Why did Duan Wu Ya choose to offend the Yu Clan because of Lin Feng?

Immediately after, Wu Zhen had the feeling that he was understanding the situation much better, besides, he was growing more surprised as he thought about it.

Eighteen years old, at that moment, Lin Feng was eighteen years old.

Could it be a coincidence?

Wu Zhen had the feeling that he had been tricked and was just a pawn for the Yu Clan who had persuaded the Wan Shou Sect to kill

Lin Feng.

If his conjectures were right, Lin Feng was her son. Under such circumstances, could he kill Lin Feng? If he did, wouldn't she come and kill him?

It had been eighteen years already and nobody knew what cultivation level the four most dazzling geniuses had. Wu Zhen had heard that the one from the Imperial Clan had already reached the peak of cultivation and that nobody could rival him in Xue Yue. As far as she was concerned, she had always been considered as the second strongest cultivator of Xue Yue, eighteen years had passed, nobody knew how terrifying her cultivation had grown.

On the path of cultivation, age didn't matter, the stronger a cultivator became, the older they would live.

Natural abilities weren't always enough to progress, after reaching a certain cultivation level, there was a bottleneck, it became more and more difficult to move higher. Sometimes, a few years or even a few dozen years were necessary to break through to the next layer, step by step. However, those who had extremely high natural abilities had a higher chance of breaking through those layers than others.

Therefore, the biggest spheres of influences attached a great deal of importance to juniors. Even if they were much weaker than the elders of the clans and sects, the disparity in strength between them and the elders was growing smaller and smaller with each day, at some point, the juniors would surpass the elders, that moment meant the beginning of a new era for the clan or sect.

The more gifted the juniors were, the faster the differences between the juniors and seniors disappeared. For example, in the Wan Shou Sect, there was one disciple who was one of the eight high-officials, three years previously, he was much weaker than the seniors of the sect, but after three years passed, he was much stronger than some of the elders, because some of the seniors had already stagnated on their path of cultivation.

Therefore, nobody dared to look down on those four outstanding disciples who had disappeared from sight eighteen years ago, the fact that they almost never appeared, caused people to be scared, they were so mysterious.

At the moment when Lin Feng's dragon appeared, the two ferocious beasts, the winged tiger and the condor-lion suddenly looked terrified. The dragon roar seemed like it was attacking the hearts of the two ferocious beasts.

“What is the real name for your spirit?” Asked Wu Zhen while staring at the six headed dragon.

“It's called Celestial Fangs.” Said Lin Feng sounding indifferent which made Wu Zhen's heart twitch. His last hope had just been crushed.

Celestial Fangs, one of the nine dragons.

As expected, the blood of the Yue Clan was flowing in Lin Feng's veins. That spirit was a blood spirit.

“We do not need to fight today. Let’s put all of this behind us. What do you think?”

Wu Zhen remained silent for a moment and then suddenly said these words. He no longer wanted to fight against Lin Feng, no matter who the stronger person was, he believed that his father would understand.

Killing Lin Feng for the prestige of the sect because of a few worthless disciples wasn’t worth it.

If the Wan Shou Sect killed Lin Feng, they would have to deal with her.

“Not fight? Put this behind us?” Lin Feng was astonished. He didn’t understand why Wu Zhen would suddenly say such things. However, he had already released his two spirits and his battle energy was burning all around him. After being pushed into such a desperate state, was making peace an option?

Wu Zhen, no matter whether he wanted to fight or not, would have to fight.

“Lin Feng, I have the strength of the third Xuan Qi layer and possess a shaman spirit, and I practice lower moon skill. Even though you have a dual spirit, if you fight you are doomed to lose. I am also giving you a way out.” Said Wu Zhen when he saw that Lin Feng didn’t want to accept. Wu Zhen was speaking like he was giving Lin Feng an incredible opportunity.

“Well, thank you very much for your opportunity.” Said Lin Feng whose eyes grew cold and emotionless. He then added: “However, I don’t need it.”

When he finished talking, his six-headed dragon rushed towards the two Xuan level ferocious beasts, the winged tiger and the condor-lion.

“Roaaarr.... Roaarr....” The two ferocious beasts were insanely struggling and managed to break free from the purple snakes, however, immediately after, more purple snakes wrapped around the bodies of the beasts, which had delayed them enough for the dragon to arrive and devour them.

“The Celestial Fangs spirit, as I thought, it can swallow any sort of ferocious beast.” Thought Lin Feng. His eyes were glowing with a dangerous light. Then, his dragon spirit moved back to his side. Multiple threads of pure Qi started spinning around him and in a flash, Lin Feng could feel how powerful his pure Qi had become.

That was the Celestial Fangs Spirit... It could swallow ferocious beasts and absorb their pure Qi.

“Celestial Fangs...” Wu Zhen’s pupils shrank, even though he was a disciple of the Wan Shou Sect, it was also the first time that he had actually seen the power of the Celestial Fangs spirit, his shaman spirit could control beasts but the celestial fangs spirit could swallow them and absorb their Qi, therefore, was his beast control useful?

Chapter 384: Devour!

“How comfortable.” Sighed Lin Feng. After the celestial fangs spirit devoured the beasts, it restored all of his pure Qi.

Lin Feng tried to recall the previous times when the celestial fangs spirit had appeared. He had absorbed Qi from the evil illusion, then the ice energy, then the purple lake, and each time he had penetrated into a strange dimension, each time his spirit would change, it was extremely strange.

Each time the celestial fangs spirit devoured a beast, it would also absorb its Qi. The celestial fangs spirit would also grow larger, at the same time it also created a new spirit for Lin Feng. The surplus amount of pure Qi could help him break through to the next layer.

“Now, my spirit has grown even bigger.”

Lin Feng was fixedly staring at Wu Zhen with unadulterated killing intent. Since he had led Wu Zhen all the way here, Lin Feng had already decided that he was going to kill him.

“Lin Feng, you really want to fight?” Said Wu Zhen while staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng’s battle energy was growing more and more powerful, but Wu Zhen was becoming more reluctant to fight.

Lin Feng nodded indifferently. Of course he wanted to fight, he had brought Wu Zhen here to kill him.

Wu Zhen remained silent for a moment and then released an ice-cold and evil Qi. Since Lin Feng really wanted to fight, Wu Zhen wouldn't refuse, the problem was that he already didn't feel like killing Lin Feng anymore. If he killed Lin Feng, he would make her furious, it wasn't worth it.

Defeating Lin Feng and beating him into submission would be enough.

The two of them were facing each other in a stare down. One was emotionless and cold, the other looked bestial and cold.

These two both had eyes that looked dangerous, neither of them looked human.

“Die.” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. The purple lake started to roar once again and rushed straight towards Wu Zhen. At the same time, the six-headed dragon moved through the air above Lin Feng, it looked terrifying.

Wu Zhen looked like a ghost, he retreated backwards, he really didn't look human anymore, it was as if he had transformed into an evil spirit.

Lin Feng flew through the air, his purple lake rushed towards Wu Zhen, it suddenly increased its speed in an attempt to surprise Wu Zhen.

Wu Zhen started to retreat, he couldn't understand what Lin

Feng was planning.

“You said that I was running away from you, what are you doing now?” Said Lin Feng in a mocking tone while moving forwards. Wu Zhen was moving through the air using his shaman spirit, he was extremely fast as if he had become a spirit in the wind.

Lin Feng couldn't compete with Wu Zhen in terms of speed, after all, the difference of their cultivation played a huge factor.

Wu Zhen looked cold. The dangerous bestial eyes of the shaman were staring at Lin Feng. However, at that moment, Lin Feng was looking in front of him and didn't seem to be scared at all, he wasn't affected by the shaman's eyes at all. His two dark eyes were like monoliths that were impossible to move. His eyes were like black holes. The shaman couldn't influence his soul.

Wu Zhen was becoming frustrated. His shaman could attack the soul of his opponent but it was useless against Lin Feng.

Wu Zhen could also control ferocious beasts, but against Lin Feng it was useless.

Lin Feng seemed like he had become the shaman's worst nightmare.

Wu Zhen raised his hand and an ice-cold white light condensed in the palm of his hand. On the shaman spirit, some threads of light were also condensing and the light was growing colder.

“Cold. How shockingly cold.” Wu Zhen had managed to make Lin Feng shiver. Lin Feng looked at Wu Zhen’s hand, however, Wu Zhen wasn’t trying to hide the fact he was gathering power for an attack, he wanted Lin Feng to witness his power.

“Lin Feng, since you definitely want to fight, I’ll show you my Dark Devil Strike.” Shouted Wu Zhen while moving through the air like a ghost, not only did he stop running away, but he was charging in Lin Feng’s direction again. That ice-cold energy made a few of the purple snakes freeze and shatter into small pieces.

“Roaaarrrrr.....” The six-headed dragon roared and then the six heads rushed towards Wu Zhen. However, the eyes of Wu Zhen’s shaman were still releasing a dazzling light which enveloped his body, then the six-headed dragon attacked the ball of energy and the dragon was actually immediately frozen.

“Wu Zhen is more monstrously powerful than I thought.” When Lin Feng sensed that piercingly-cold ice energy, he moved back, Wu Zhen merged with his spirit and rushed forward with his ball of cold energy to attack.

The dragon broke free from its prison of ice and roared while moving towards Wu Zhen joined by the purple spirit.

Wu Zhen ignored everything around him, his ghostly body was still moving forwards, in his eyes, there was only Lin Feng.

“Huh?” Lin Feng frowned. Wu Zhen was ruthless, he was

forgetting about defending and focusing on his attack. He was using his spirit to increase his speed to attack first.

“I offered you peace but you didn’t listen to me and insisted on fighting, since it’s that way, Lin Feng, you will have to suffer my fury.” Wu Zhen was glaring at Lin Feng. He raised his hand filled with ice-cold Qi and it seemed like it was moving closer to Lin Feng. Inside that ball of ice-cold energy, there were many threads of white Qi, which looked like writhing snakes.

“You want to risk your life, I will play with you then.” Said Lin Feng whose eyes were still emotionless. Suddenly, an explosion burst out, flames violently burst from Lin Feng’s body, and pure sun Qi bombarded the atmosphere.

The lower sun skill and the lower moon skill were both being used in close proximity with the other.

The burning sun Qi started to condense. Lin Feng and Wu Zhen both raised their hands, in Lin Feng’s hand, there was a ball of pure sun Qi. The flames then gradually turned black.

In Lin Feng’s pitch black eyes, it seemed like a black fire was suddenly ignited in his eyes. What a terrifying fire!

This time, it was Wu Zhen’s turn to make a move, he started to condense more of his pure Qi into his Dark Evil Strike. That strike had the power to completely destroy Lin Feng, that strike could kill him instantly if it landed with its full power.

But he hadn't thought that Lin Feng would do the same, he was also condensing all of his pure Qi into a ball of black flames in his hand.

Those flames gradually turned into a lotus flower, a black lotus in blossom.

“That must be how Du Yan died.” Said Wu Zhen while frowning. He couldn't sense the power contained within the black lotus, however, he still felt the danger when looking at it. That black lotus was definitely extremely powerful.

“I have the strength of the third Xuan Qi layer, my Dark Evil Strike uses the full power of a lower moon skill, Lin Feng has broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer and can use a lower sun skill and can condense its power into that black lotus. It can't be stronger than my Dark Evil Strike which has the power of the third Xuan Qi layer.” Thought Wu Zhen. He wanted to see how strong the black lotus that killed Du Yan really was.

“Dark Evil Strike, Destruction!” After spitting out these words, Wu Zhen raised his hand and it slammed it down, bombarding the atmosphere towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng also punched through the air and the black lotus shot forward to meet Wu Zhen's attack.

“Crrr.... Crrrrr.....”

The dark evil strike and the black lotus collided and a cracking sound filled the air. An incredible quantity of deadly energy burst out and rose into the sky. The deadly energy burst out in each direction and the atmosphere started to shake.

The black lotus had penetrated into the dark evil strike and was burning it which made Wu Zhen frown. He had broken through to the third Xuan Qi layer while Lin Feng had broken through to the first Xuan Qi layer, how could Lin Feng's pure sun Qi be stronger than his pure moon Qi?

However, was the black lotus really just pure sun Qi?

The grim fire of Lin Feng's celestial spirit had also merged with the sun Qi to create the black lotus, it had incredible destructive power.

A deadly energy invaded the skies. Lin Feng and Wu Zhen's facial expressions gradually changed. The deadly energy created from the collision of attacks was incredible, the trees beneath their feet were gradually disintegrating and turning to dust. Both of them looked unmoving and determined at that moment.

There was nothing to be said, only the sounds of destruction filled the air.

"Back!" Lin Feng suddenly realised that the deadly energy was going to destroy everything, including him.

Wu Zhen had the same idea, he couldn't control that much deadly energy.

Lin Feng and Wu Zhen retreated backwards at the same time. Their souls were shaking from the near death experience.

However, Lin Feng hadn't given up, he still wanted to kill Wu Zhen. His celestial fangs spirit roared and descended from the sky behind Wu Zhen. The six-headed dragon and the purple spirit moved in synchronisation towards Wu Zhen.

“Die!” Lin Feng's emotionless eyes were releasing a cold killing intent. Nothing could prevent him from killing Wu Zhen, and the desire to kill him was raging in his heart.

The shaman spirit released a white dazzling light, it wanted to stop the six-headed dragon as well as the purple snakes rushing towards Wu Zhen.

“Roaaaarrr....” The shaman move into the bright light which seemed to make the dragon and the snakes furious. At the moment when Lin Feng was watching in the distance, the purple spirit and the dragon started to fuse together which made the sky tremble. Meanwhile, their roars were also merging into a single roar as they attacked towards the shaman spirit.

With a single bite the shaman spirit was gone.

With another bite, Wu Zhen was devoured by the dragon as well.

Chapter 385: The Dragon's Heads

At Mount Sword, The Wan Shou Sect was still silently waiting for Wu Zhen to return.

The Yue Clan had seized the vein of the earth, the Wan Shou Sect and the Yu Clan were not attempting to fight over it. Even if they fought, they probably wouldn't be able to get it, nobody dared to gamble when it came to the strength of the Yue Clan.

At that moment, the crowd was gazing into the distance with impatience in their eyes, especially the members of the Wan Shou Sect, they all looked terribly impatient. Hidden in their impatient facial expressions was a ruthless coldness.

However, after a long time passed, a few members of the Wan Shou Sect started frowning, how come Wu Zhen hadn't returned?

These core disciples knew how strong Wu Zhen was. Killing Lin Feng wouldn't be a problem for him. However, did killing Lin Feng require so much time? Wu Zhen had been gone for a long time already.

“Maybe Wu Zhen killed Lin Feng and is now trying to tame some ferocious beasts which he come across.” Thought Teng Wu Yao. He also had a strange feeling, why hadn't Wu Zhen returned after so long? However, because he had absolute faith in Wu Zhen, he didn't think too much about it.

Besides, the others were also impatient to see Wu Zhen come

back with Lin Feng's head as a trophy.

Time passed slowly and the members of the Wan Shou Sect grew more and more impatient, they couldn't bear it anymore, Wu Zhen and Lin Feng had disappeared from sight, they couldn't remain calm as they all wanted to know the result.

"I should go and see." Whispered Teng Wu Shan in Teng Wu Yao's ears. Teng Wu Yao glanced at him and thought of the Yue clan then immediately shook his head while saying: "No need, Wu Zhen is more than capable. Nothing will go wrong."

Teng Wu Shan slightly nodded and moved back half a step. He didn't add anything else, he just continued waiting calmly.

Time felt like it was passing extremely slowly.

"Teng Wu Yao, I think that you won't need to wait anymore." Said Yue Qing Shan indifferently.

Maybe Lin Feng had managed to escape and Wu Zhen hadn't come back because he was still searching for him.

When Teng Wu Yao heard that Yue Qing Shan was making fun of them, he pulled a long face and immediately said: "Could Lin Feng escape from Wu Zhen even if he wanted too?"

Even though he was saying the word, he was no longer confident with what he was saying. He rolled up his sleeves and looked in the

direction of the depths of the mountain chain. He then started walking and followed the Qi left by Wu Zhen.

“We’ll come too.” Said Yu Liu Shui indifferently. His silhouette flickered and the entire Yu Clan started following closely behind the members of the Wan Shou Sect. They then penetrated into the depths of the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain. They also wanted to know if Wu Zhen had killed Lin Feng or was still searching for him.

Yue Qing Shan’s eyes twinkled, he then moved forward and said indifferently: “Let’s go.”

The Yue Clan followed the group.

After that, the other people remaining also followed that large group of people. They could follow the great powers of influence of the country along the road, that way they didn’t have to be afraid of ferocious beasts on the way, it would be a great opportunity to explore the depths of the mountain chain that they had never seen. Besides, they were also very curious to see the result of Lin Feng’s battle. The four cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer who were with Lin Feng were staring at each other, they could finally relax. They took a deep breath, they were finally safe from being killed.

Perhaps the members of the Wan Shou Sect wanted to kill them, but the person they wanted to kill the most was Lin Feng.

“If Lin Feng hadn’t been here, we would be dead by now.” Thought the four cultivators, they were very grateful to Lin Feng.

If Lin Feng hadn't been there, they would have been killed by Ji Feng. Fortunately, Lin Feng had been strong enough to protect them during the battle.

.....

At that moment, Lin Feng was standing in the air and looked like he was lost in thought.

At that moment, under Lin Feng's feet was a scene of destruction. The area around him looked desolate and apocalyptic. Everything living in the area had been destroyed and nothing but rubble was left, the area was empty of life and not a sound could be heard.

The collision between the grim fire and the dark evil strike had had such incredible destructive power. At that moment, Lin Feng's heart was still pounding with fear and astonishment. His black lotus was too terrifying.

At the same time, Lin Feng was also dumbstruck because of his spirit. His celestial fangs spirit and his purple spirit had surprisingly merged and had become so monstrous. The combined spirit swallowed the shaman spirit and even swallowed Wu Zhen whole.

Wu Zhen and his shaman spirit were eaten, the only one left at the scene was Lin Feng.

The celestial fangs spirit had six heads and was surrounded by

purple energy, it looked incredibly powerful.

“Can spirits merge?” Thought Lin Feng, his heart abruptly started pounding. He had suddenly realized that there was a problem. People who had dual spirits were geniuses on the path of cultivation, could it only be because of the dual spirit giving a stronger soul?

If someone had two spirits and one of them was useless in battle, what was the point of having two spirits?

Lin Feng knew that the spirit was a part of the soul, people with dual spirits had extremely strong souls, but was that the only reason that dual spirits were so revered?

Lin Feng suddenly realised that he knew almost nothing about spirits and souls.

On the path of cultivation, there was a vast amount of knowledge for a person to acquire, the many paths of cultivation were unfathomable. In the continent, everybody was trying to become a strong cultivator, but in the end, who was really attempting to reach a complete understanding of the many paths of cultivation, to stand at the very peak of power?

For example, in Xue Yue, a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer was already considered strong. Besides, those who were above the fifth Xuan Qi layer could be considered as the most incredible cultivators of the entire country. They were regarded as deities. Lin Feng had never heard of anyone who had broken through to

the Tian Qi layer.

But in the continent, cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer were considered the same as cultivators of the Qi layer in Xue Yue. They were just like insects compared to the other cultivator on the continent?

How many people remained a big fish in a little pond their entire lives? How many people only had a superficial idea of cultivation?

There were many questions about spirits, why were cultivators born with a spirit? And why did some spirits awaken before others? Lin Feng didn't understand any of this.

Lin Feng slightly shook his head as he emerged from his thoughts. He had only broken through to the Xuan Qi layer. He had no right to be proud of himself, he didn't have the strength required to wander the continent.

“What I need now is to become stronger. I still need to break through to the Tian Qi layer and be able to look down on Xue Yue, then who will dare to bully me again?” Whispered Lin Feng. Everything was happening because he was too weak, Lin Feng had been bullied and looked down on, he discovered a vein of the earth which was immediately stolen from him by force.

What upset Lin Feng the most was that at the moment when the Yue Clan and the Wan Shou Sect were fighting over the vein of the earth, Lin Feng, who had discovered the vein of the earth in the first place, wasn't even been qualified to say anything or intervene,

he had no strength and no power supporting him, so he didn't have the right to speak.

He needed to become stronger, stronger than anyone. That was Lin Feng's innermost desire and he was absolutely determined to make it a reality. He wanted to look down at the world from the heavens, so he needed to become extremely strong, he could only rely on his personal power to reach the heavens.

"Divide!" Shouted Lin Feng in a low voice, he saw the celestial fangs spirit and the purple spirit separate. The six heads of the dragon were looking to the sky and the purple dragon formed, its eyes looked ice-cold, they both once again looked like separate entities.

"The Qi of my spirit has become weaker, but when the different spirits merged, it seemed like an incredible change was about to happen." Thought Lin Feng. A moment before, his desire to kill Wu Zhen had reached an extreme, he subconsciously forced the two spirits to combine which abruptly increased their strength. The mixture of the purple spirit and the six headed dragon spirit was extremely powerful. It was able to swallow Wu Zhen and his shaman in an instant, how terrifying!

"Huh?" At that moment, Lin Feng's heartbeat suddenly accelerated. Immediately after, the celestial fangs spirit started to writhe. An evil bestial Qi started to rise into the air as the six-headed dragon started to roar. On the body of the celestial fangs spirit, a long tentacle was slowly rising into the air, gradually, that long tentacle transformed into another head on the dragon.

The celestial fangs spirit only had six heads before, but at that moment a seventh head had formed.

“This is..... The shaman!” Lin Feng abruptly frowned, the seventh head and the six other heads were different. The new head of dragon looked ice-cold and bestial. One of its eyes was black and the other was white, amazingly, it was the shaman spirit.

The shaman spirit had been swallowed by the dragon and was transformed into another head, it had become the dragon’s seventh head?

Lin Feng’s heart was violently pounding. How incredible!

Before, with his celestial fangs spirit, he had been able to absorb some ferocious beasts and Meng Qing’s ice Qi, they were all things that granted him an extra spirit, the evil illusion’s spirit, the ice spirit and the purple lake were all created after the dragon consumed Qi and replaced the previous spirit. This time, his celestial fangs spirit had swallowed the shaman spirit but it didn’t replace the other spirit, instead, it had become a head on the dragon.

Chapter 386: Ancient Ferocious beasts

The shaman spirit had become one of the dragon's heads.

Lin Feng remained silent for a while as a radiant smile appeared on his face. Before, he was relying on his celestial fangs spirit or his purple spirit to kill any ferocious beasts he encountered.

But at that moment, if he used the shaman spirit, he would also be able to control ferocious beasts.

“What a coincidence. I am in need of a ferocious beast which can fly.” Said Lin Feng while smiling innocently. With his strength of the Xuan Qi layer, Lin Feng could also fly through the air but he had to consume pure Qi to do so, he couldn't continue to fly for long periods of time. His speed would also begin to slow over time as his pure Qi diminished. If he had a ferocious beast which could fly, he would be able to fly through the sky as much as he wished, and at a fast speed!

“It seems like I should be grateful to Wu Zhen.” Lin Feng walked forwards and gazed into the distance. Immediately after that, his silhouette flickered and he rushed deeper into the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain. Wu Zhen hadn't returned yet, the Wan Shou Sect would probably come to see what had happened. He killed Wu Zhen so he should avoid encountering the Wan Shou Sect again, otherwise, they would try to kill him.

Therefore, Lin Feng couldn't head back to the vein of the earth, besides, he also had to remove all traces of his Qi before leaving.

The Wan Shou Sect specialised in hunting and taming ferocious beasts so they probably had a way to track Qi!

In fact, Lin Feng's guess was correct. Teng Wu Yao and the others could track Wu Zhen's Qi to find the location of the fight. The members of the Wan Shou Sect and the other powers, all arrived at the scene of the battle.

When they saw the destruction and huge crater that was created, people frowned. Deadly energy, they could still feel traces of a monstrously powerful deadly energy. Everything in that area had been turned into ashes. It looked like some kind of natural disaster or huge battle had occurred.

“It's Wu Zhen's Qi.” Said Teng Wu Yao while frowning. What an apocalyptic landscape! How could Lin Feng have the power to fight against Wu Zhen and create such destruction.

The members of the Wan Shou Sect all looked extremely tense. Was this really the result of Wu Zhen and Lin Feng's battle?

So many doubts fill their hearts, they just couldn't believe their eyes. They had all hurried to see the results of the battle but in the end, they could still only guess, because Wu Zhen and Lin Feng were nowhere to be found. No matter if it was Wu Zhen or Lin Feng, all traces of their Qi had been erased. It was extremely strange.

“Patriarch, there's some sun Qi and some ice Qi which comes from Wu Zhen's lower moon skill.” Said Teng Wu Shan to Teng

Wu Yao who nodded when he noticed. The sun Qi probably belonged to Lin Feng and the lower moon skill was definitely the one which belonged to Wu Zhen. They were sure that Lin Feng and Wu Zhen had fought here but it was possible for other people or ferocious beasts to have joined the battle.

“Lin Feng isn’t dead.” Thought the crowd. Wu Zhen hadn’t been able to kill Lin Feng, otherwise, Wu Zhen’s Qi wouldn’t need to erase his Qi and he would have returned to the vein of the earth by now.

Since Lin Feng wasn’t anywhere to be found and Wu Zhen’s Qi was gone... It was very likely that Wu Zhen was dead!

The members of the crowd were all coming to the same conclusion. Immediately, their hearts started pounding, the members of the Wan Shou Sect were particularly shocked. They also came to the same conclusion as everyone else, but they didn’t even dare to think about it, but why else would the Qi of both fighters disappear?

If Lin Feng killed Wu Zhen and then erased all traces of Qi before leaving, it would explain the situation, but they didn’t dare believe that such a thing was possible, it would be too shocking. If Lin Feng hadn’t been killed by Wu Zhen, it obviously meant that he had luck on his side, but did he have the strength to kill Wu Zhen?

“Move forwards, let’s keep searching!” Said Teng Wu Yao in an ice-cold tone while pulling a long face. Even though his voice didn’t tremble, the crowd could still sense that he was feeling extremely anxious.

Maybe Wu Zhen had really been killed by Lin Feng. Otherwise, why would his Qi just disappear?

When the members of the Wan Shou Sect heard Teng Wu Yao, their hearts were racing. Immediately after, they nodded and their silhouettes started to flicker and they moved deeper into the depths of the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain.

The Members of the Yu Clan all looked perplexed. Lin Feng was surprisingly alive... The person they had deemed an insect, a nobody, did he really have the power to shock them?

Yue Qing Shan's white hair was fluttering in the wind. He was drowning deep into his memories, so many similar events had occurred in the past. Back then, Lin Feng's father, Lin Hai, was a tough young man just like Lin Feng. He had gone through many dangerous situations where his life was at stake, but in the end, he was sealed by the Duan clan.

Yue Qing Shan would see Lin Hai whenever he looked at Lin Feng, they looked very similar.

.....

The following day, Lin Feng didn't even know how far he had travelled. He only knew that the place he was at, looked like the very depths of the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain, it was a very remote area.

Lin Feng was being extremely cautious while moving forwards. He was using his earth fusion so he kept his head clear and remained observant. He could perceive everything around him and sense every movement. He had already come across ferocious beasts as he travelled through the mountain chain. Besides, some of them had been incredibly horrifying. He didn't dare to approach it, he decided to take another way and remain as far away from the beast as he could.

A place filled with ferocious beasts could be a paradise for cultivators but it could also be hell. There were incredible opportunities but danger was lurking in every direction, nobody dared to come into such a place and act recklessly. If Lin Feng hadn't been able to use his earth fusion, he wouldn't have dared to come so close to such strong ferocious beasts.

"Ferocious beast, three-eyed evil wolf." At that moment, Lin Feng noticed three bloodthirsty eyes were glowing. The wolf had three evil looking eyes on its head.

The three-eyed evil wolf was an extremely rare ferocious beast and it was also extremely strong, his third eye was particularly sly, it could unleash an attack to confuse its opponents. However, Lin Feng, in the depths of the mountain chain, had already seen a lot of three eyed evil wolves.

"Unfortunately, the three-eyed evil wolf doesn't have wings... Otherwise, I would have loved to tame him." Thought Lin Feng. At that moment, the three-eyed evil wolf had stopped and glanced around as if it had noticed that something was observing it.

“Its senses are very sharp.” Lin Feng’s silhouette flickered and he was not looking at it anymore, after a while, the wolf finally walked away.

Lin Feng smiled and when he was about to move forwards, he came to an abrupt stop.

“Impossible.” Thought Lin Feng while frowning. Someone was spying on Lin Feng. At that moment, Lin Feng had the sensation that he was being watched.

“How could it be... How could my senses be wrong?” Lin Feng frowned. When he was in fusion with the earth, his senses were extremely acute, he then searched into the distance but he could only sense grass and the extremely thick and dense jungle.

“Nothing?” Lin Feng was surprised. His senses were extremely well developed, when using his earth fusion, his feeling of being watched on couldn’t be wrong, but when Lin Feng tried to search, he sensed every blade of grass and gust of wind, but found nothing. He hadn’t discovered anyone watching him, besides, the feeling of being watched had also disappeared. It was extremely strange.

Lin Feng’s facial expression returned to normal, he slightly shook his head and continued moving forwards as if nothing had happened but he was travelling with more vigilance than ever.

The feeling of being watched invaded Lin Feng’s heart again. He frowned and stopped. He slowly looked around.

He had surprisingly forgotten to search deep into the ground, a moment before, he had the feeling that something deep in the earth was watching him.

“Come out.” Said Lin Feng sounding cold and detached. Not far away from Lin Feng, the ground trembled and immediately after, a silhouette burst out. When Lin Feng saw the silhouette, he started to frown.

It was a ferocious beast, it looked extremely strong and majestic. It had a fire-red fur and its hair looked like sharp needles, on its back, there was a set of red wings which it then spread through the air. That beast looked extremely dangerous.

That ferocious beast looked similar to the daemoniac fire lion but it looked much more majestic and more impressive than the daemoniac fire lion.

Lin Feng searched his memories about ferocious beasts and frowned.

The people feared and worshipped the Daemoniac Fire Lion for two reasons, apart from its monstrous strength, it also had the blood of an ancient ferocious beast. They were a subspecies of an ancient ferocious beast.

Rumors said that these ancient ferocious beasts were not extinct, but no one knew exactly how many were still in existence, it was extremely rare to see one.

Ancient ferocious beasts were priceless, its fur was like an armor of needles and its body was fire red and looked like the body of a muscular ox, its back possessed a pair of majestic fiery red wings that seemed to contain fire Qi, it looked incredible and dangerous.

...and it appeared in front of Lin Feng, what a rare occurrence!

Chapter 387: The Silhouette in the Mountains

It was an ancient ferocious beast, more precisely a Winged Tiger.

Lin Feng was surprised, the daemoniac fire lion was just a subspecies of this ancient beast. With its potential, the Winged Tiger could easily reach the Tian level, how strong was it!

The Winged Tiger had the blood of some ancient ferocious beasts, its strength had to be monstrous.

At that moment, when Lin Feng glanced at the Winged Tiger, the beast was also staring at him, its eyes were filled with brutality, it was dangerously looking at its prey.

A fire-red illusion suddenly surprised Lin Feng. He took a step backwards and his body was suddenly sent spinning through the air.

“Pssh.....”

Blood splashed through the air. Lin Feng's clothes were ripped apart and a huge wound appeared on his chest. That attack tore deep into his flesh, he was covered with blood.

A cold sweat started to form on his back. Lin Feng wasn't even able to avoid the attack, he was fixated on the Winged Tiger.

How terrifying.

Lin Feng was just realizing what a huge mistake he had made, a terrifying mistake. Lin Feng was so excited to see the Winged Tiger that he had forgotten to remain vigilant. He couldn't play around when dealing with an ancient ferocious beast, the beast immediately attacked him and Lin Feng was wounded.

“Awoooooo....” Howled the beast, as if it had come from the depths of hell, it looked extremely cold, it looked like a tiger and a wolf at the same time, which made Lin Feng raise his vigilance and release a cold energy.

“Pssshh!” An illusionary fire suddenly appeared. This time, Lin Feng reacted quickly enough and immediately dodged. However, at the moment when the silhouette of the Winged Tiger flickered next to Lin Feng, it abruptly opened its wings and rushed towards Lin Feng with its gigantic body. Its attacks were perfectly synchronized, every attack was planned perfectly by the beast and left no escape. That beast was extremely cruel and aggressive, its senses were also more acute than those of human cultivators.

Lin Feng was stupefied. Lin Feng couldn't dodge. The speed and acute senses of the Winged Tiger were terrifying. Even if Lin Feng knew how and where the beast was going to attack, he couldn't dodge without encountering another attack.

Some pure sun Qi suddenly emerged from Lin Feng and rushed towards the Winged Tiger. However, it seemed like the Winged

Tiger ignored it and immediately dove into the flames. Lin Feng quickly rushed back in retreat.

“BOOM!”

The sound of something breaking and cracking filled the air. Blood gushed from Lin Feng’s mouth and his body was smashed through multiple tree trunks until he finally came to a halt.

Lin Feng slammed his feet into the ground to stop himself from flying back. He was fixedly staring at the Winged Tiger while slowly walking towards him.

At that moment, Lin Feng was sure that the Winged Tiger was much stronger than him. It was a Xuan level beast but no matter if it was in speed or strength, it far outmatched Lin Feng. It had a monstrous speed which made Lin Feng feel hopeless, Lin Feng couldn’t fight against such speed.

It also made Lin Feng realize that he was seriously lacking in agility, but it made him want to tame that Winged Tiger even more.

A purple light illuminated the atmosphere and his purple spirit appeared, it turned into multiple purple snakes which started rushing towards the Winged Tiger. Lin Feng wanted to see how strong that Winged Tiger really was.

The Winged Tiger was walking very slowly and staring at Lin

Feng as if he was eyeing up his next meal. The situation looked quite ominous, the purple snakes quickly reached its body.

“Crrrr.... Crrrrrrr.....” The fire in its wings started to flicker and unleashed its power, destroying the purple snakes on its body. The Winged Tiger hadn’t been hindered at all, it was still moving towards Lin Feng with a hungry look in its eyes.

“What a monstrously strong beast.”

After the purple snakes were destroyed, they lost all their power. Usually cultivators could restrict a beast’s movements but in the case of the Winged Tiger, it was useless.

“You’re mine.” Thought Lin Feng looking excited. The more powerful the Winged Tiger was, the more excited Lin Feng became.

His celestial fangs spirit appeared and each dragon head let out a terrifying roar. Behind Lin Feng, his dragon had a head which didn’t look like the six others, it looked dangerously cold and bestial, it was the shaman spirit.

The Winged Tiger looked at the dragon and looked extremely surprised. Its feet then immediately stopped moving and it abruptly moved back.

“Whoosh” The body of the Winged Tiger looked like an illusion as it opened its wings and went to dive back into the ground, it

looked magnificent.

“Roaaaarrrr...” The dragon heads were roaring, then the six heads suddenly started to rush towards the Winged Tiger. In a flash, the six dragon heads had all sunk their teeth into part of the beast’s body.

“Roaaaaaarrrrr.....” The Winged Tiger roared and it suddenly looked much more ferocious and wilder than before, it was incredible. Its needle like hair then rose and transformed into extremely sharp blades which pierced into the dragon, at the same time, scorching hot flames ignited on its body.

“Woooo.....” The Winged Tiger uttered a long shout while looking at the sky. Its voice echoed into the distance, some fire then separated itself from its gigantic body and burst into the air, the dragon wouldn’t be able to stop that attack.

“Oh no... That’s bad.” Thought Lin Feng. The shout of the beast would probably attract a great deal of extremely strong ferocious beasts.

Ancient ferocious beasts were terrifying. Lin Feng had never encountered such a cunning ferocious beast.

It also seemed like Xuan level beasts were particularly scary.

The seventh head of the dragon whistled and moved towards the Winged Tiger, the shaman spirit started to glow which made the

Winged Tiger start to panic, it was as if its soul was being consumed.

Its huge eyes were gradually becoming more docile, as if that evil bestial glow was forcing it to submit, could an ancient ferocious beast submit that easily though?

“Awoooooooooo....” The Winged Tiger raised its head to the sky and howled. Its prey, a human being, was trying to control it, how could it not be enraged?

A terrifying light invaded the atmosphere and the Winged Tiger suddenly spread its wings as wide as possible, they were so sharp that they sliced their way through the mouths of the dragon. Then, it immediately threw itself towards Lin Feng.

“BOOM!”

The dragon tried to stop the attack but was unable to withstand the strength of the Winged Tiger. When Lin Feng saw that, he was dumbstruck and his pupils started to shrink. That Winged Tiger was monstrous.

Lin Feng recalled his spirit back into his body and jumped through the air. The Winged Tiger spread its wings, its silhouette flickered as it tore through the air like a meteor.

Lin Feng couldn't beat it, his celestial fangs spirit coupled with the power of the shaman spirit was not enough, the Winged

Tiger's strength was too terrifying.

“Little one! Who made you so furious?”

At that moment, a voice spread through the air which surprised Lin Feng. A moment before, he had been so focused on the Winged Tiger that surprisingly a silhouette had appeared without him noticing.

Lin Feng looked to the horizon and saw a middle-aged man in white clothing who was slowly walking towards him. That person was smiling but that smile looked evil.

The Winged Tiger, when it saw the silhouette, lowered its head and immediately moved towards the middle-aged man.

The Winged Tiger, after arriving next to the middle-aged man, started to wrap around his legs, as if it submitted before that man.

“Little one, you ran away again.” Said the middle-aged man while smiling and shaking his head. The Winged Tiger lowered its head even lower.

Then, the middle-aged man crouched down to pet the Winged Tiger in a soft and gentle way, his speech was very warm and affectionate as if he was talking with a friend.

Lin Feng was standing in his original position and frowning. There were humans in the very depths of the Nine Dragon

Mountain Chain. Surprisingly, there were even humans in this remote location, besides, that person even seemed to be the master of the Winged Tiger.

It was too amazing. Lin Feng looked extremely perplexed. He wasn't able to fully understand the middle-aged man's intentions from the warm expression in his eyes. He had absolutely no idea why the middle-aged man would appear in the depths of the Mountain Chain.

Besides, the middle-aged man almost seemed like he had always been there and Lin Feng was trespassing into his home.

“Little one, next time, don't run away and cause trouble.” Said the middle-aged man. Immediately after, he raised his head and looked at Lin Feng with a friendly smile, he looked like a person who was easy to get along with.

“My friend, do you come from the outside?” Asked the middle-aged man indifferently. Lin Feng nodded.

“Do you like my little one?” Asked the middle-aged man and then added: “My friend from far away, if you want to see what the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain had to offer then you can come with me, but this little one is my best friend, he will not leave my side.”

“I acted without thinking, I didn't know it was yours.” Said Lin Feng while slightly shaking his head.

“No problem, I will show you around the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain.” said the middle-aged man while shaking his head and smiling, surprisingly, he wasn’t offended at all. Lin Feng couldn’t read the man at all.

Lin Feng, of course, didn’t know what kind of spirit his interlocutor had or how strong he was. But if his pet was a Winged Tiger, he was definitely an amazing cultivator with an incredible strength.

Chapter 388: Astonishing!

When Lin Feng heard the man's invitation, he was a bit surprised.

Did he live there? Did the bestial looking middle aged man live in the depths of this mountain chain? What about his own safety?

Besides, he was proposing to show Lin Feng around the mountain chain as if it was a normal thing, he sounded like he knew the mountain chain.

Could a human walk around in the depths of the mountain chain as they pleased?

“Where do you live, Sir?” Asked Lin Feng in a very polite tone while remaining vigilant. The situation could turn very dangerous, Lin Feng didn't feel reassured at all.

“Near here, come with me, we can talk and play some chess.” Said the middle aged man with a beast like smile yet it also looked like a very warm smile, he was nodding while looking at Lin Feng. Immediately after, he turned around and started walking.

Lin Feng remained speechless and irresolute for a moment and then followed the man. A moment before, the Winged Tiger roared so loudly that it wasn't safe to stay there anymore, maybe there were many dangerous ferocious beasts who would rush there.

The beast and the man lived together in a forest of stone, there were gigantic monoliths resting against each other, everywhere and under a few of them, the man had established his residence. Everything was made of stone there, there were stone tables and chairs as well as wine cups made completely of stone.

What gave Lin Feng a strange impression was that these tables and chairs made of stone didn't feel real.

“Do you want to drink some wine and play some chess? It's not easy for me to get these things all the way out here.” Said the middle aged man while walking towards Lin Feng and smiling indifferently. He also sounded quite proud of himself, the beast also followed him, but it wasn't enraged anymore and was just like a docile pet.

Lin Feng was more and more surprised with each second. Everything was so weird! That middle aged man was so unconventional, he was wild and unreserved.

Another astonishing thing was the Winged Tiger, it was shockingly obedient to him. The ancient ferocious beast had become docile and affectionate around him, it didn't look like it had the tiniest bit of wrath.

“My honoured guest, please come in.” Said the middle aged man sound sounding extremely attentive and polite. He was inviting Lin Feng into his home.

Lin Feng approached the residence created by several monoliths,

the inside looked very spacious, it even looked like a palace.

The middle aged man started walking and his body suddenly disappeared. In a flash, he appeared on an elevated throne on the other side of the palace. His hands were on the armrests, he looked domineering, looking down on everything from such a high spot. He looked majestic.

“Honoured guest, don’t you think that my home is majestic and awe-inspiring?” Asked the middle aged man while spreading his arms out wide. He looked extremely majestic which made Lin Feng’s eyes twinkle. At that moment, the bestial-looking man looked extremely powerful, like a king.

“Indeed, very majestic and imposing.” Nodded Lin Feng. The palace really looked like it was fit for a king. There were many flights of stairs all around the main hall. Everything was extremely vast and imposing.

When the middle aged man saw Lin Feng nod, he smiled as if he was really happy to hear Lin Feng’s opinion.

He then stood up and immediately arrived next to Lin Feng, which made Lin Feng’s pupils shrink.

How quick.

A moment before, Lin Feng wasn’t sure but at that moment, he was sure that even when looking directly at the middle aged man,

he still couldn't see him move, he moved so fast that Lin Feng could not sense it.

The Winged Tiger was already monstrously quick but that middle aged man seemed to be several times quicker than the Winged Tiger.

“As expected, he's incredibly powerful.” Thought Lin Feng who was also wondering who this person was.

“Have you always lived in this mountain chain?” Asked Lin Feng, he couldn't help but ask.

“Indeed, I've always been here, well, it's been so many years that I don't know how long exactly.” Said the middle aged man calmly while nodding.

“Why not go outside?” Asked Lin Feng curiously.

“Go outside?” Asked the middle aged man with a mysterious smile on his face: “I want to go outside. I want to go soon.”

When the Winged Tiger saw the middle aged man's smile, it slightly frowned, it acted extremely brutal before but at that moment, it seemed like it was docile and was curled into a ball at their feet.

Xuan level ferocious beasts could understand human conversation, so it was very clear to the Winged Tiger what Lin

Feng and the middle aged man were saying.

“You want to go outside?” Lin Feng frowned when he heard the middle aged man. It seemed like he wanted to go outside but couldn’t for some reason, as if something was preventing him from leaving, Lin Feng had a strange feeling building.

“Of course I want to leave here. Do you know how boring it is to stay here? Even if I have the little one with me...” Said the middle aged man while hugging the Winged Tiger which made the eyes of the beast look a little bit warmer again.

The ancient ferocious beast could also be warm and affectionate, it wrapped itself around its master’s body and slightly closed its eyes.

That move made Lin Feng grow speechless. Was it still the monstrously violent and brutal beast from a moment before? At that moment, it had become so obedient and docile that it seemed like a house pet.

“But it’s alright, I have a guest now, you can stay with me, until I am able to leave.” said the middle-aged man while raising his head and smiling at Lin Feng which stupefied Lin Feng.

“Stay with him?” Lin Feng didn’t have time to stay in the middle of the mountain chain, he had many things to do.

“If you want to leave, let’s go together and we can go now.” Said

Lin Feng. The middle aged man looked at him with a smile yet not a smile on his face and shook his head.

“Well, I may have to leave before you.” Said Lin Feng. How was he supposed to spend all his time there until the man decided to leave? If it was for a few days, that would be alright but what if the middle aged man wanted to leave in a year or longer, how could Lin Feng stay with him?

“No, you will stay here.” Said the middle aged man while shaking his head which made Lin Feng frown.

“Are you threatening me?” Lin Feng sounded dissatisfied, there was something fishy about this.

“My dear, honoured guest, I am not threatening you but you must stay here, do you know how long I have waited to finally have somebody else to talk to?” Said the middle aged man while contradicting himself. He was saying that he wasn’t threatening Lin Feng but at the same time he was also forcing Lin Feng to stay and keep him company.

“I have matter that I need to attend to, so I must leave. If I have the opportunity in the future, I will come back and visit you.” Said Lin Feng forcing himself to remain calm and not grow angry. His interlocutor’s strength was unbelievable, if he made him angry, it wouldn’t be beneficial.

The middle aged man ignored Lin Feng and walked past Lin Feng while groaning.

“Leave? Impossible. Absolutely impossible.” Said the middle aged man while shaking his head. “Do you know how long it has been since I entered the depths of the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain? One hundred years? One thousand? I don’t even remember clearly, but it was a long time ago, a very, very long time ago.”

“One hundred years? One thousand years?” Lin Feng frowned. A hundred years, that was credible but a thousand years, how could that be possible? A cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer could live two hundred years and even a cultivator of the Tian Qi layer could only live five hundred years.

One thousand years... Lin Feng didn’t know what kind of cultivators could live for a thousand years, it had to be at least a Zun Qi layer cultivator.

“In the mountain chain, apart from the “kill or get killed” atmosphere, there is nothing interesting.” Said the middle aged man who ignored Lin Feng’s suggestion. He sounded like he was talking to himself.

“It’s nothing like your world outside where you can drink, play chess and court beautiful women. Here, there is only myself, I am sick and tired of living in the mountain chain where there are only wild beasts. I want to go outside.....”

“Go outside.....” These words were resonating in Lin Feng’s ears. At that moment, the middle aged man spread his arms wide and the Winged Tiger moved down to the ground. Then, he raised

his arms towards the stone ceiling and shouted as if he was venting his frustration.

The entire mountain started to rumble and shake, but it quickly became calm again. The middle aged man had calmed down as well.

“I want to go outside. It won’t be that long now. It’s not easy to find someone with whom I can chat and play chess, how could I let you leave? How great would it be for us to enjoy each other’s company.” said the middle aged man with a husky voice. He sounded like an animal.

He turned around and looked at Lin Feng, Lin Feng was also looking at him, and had the feeling that his head was going to explode.

He only saw that at that moment the middle aged man’s pupils had turned red like blood. They were filled with bestial flames. Millions of veins had started to explode in his eyes and looked like a myriad of red threads. He looked ferocious and wild, his eyes and his face didn’t even look like that of a human anymore.

It was a..... beast.

Lin Feng was speechless. That middle aged man wasn’t a man... But a ferocious beast!

Chapter 389: The Transformation!

“No wonder, no wonder that he lives in a place filled with such powerful ferocious beasts and nothing happens to him.”

“No wonder that the Winged Tiger is so afraid of him.”

Lin Feng suddenly understood a lot of things when analyzing what his interlocutor was saying. If he had already been there for a few hundred years, even a thousand years, he would feel extremely lonely.

Indeed, ferocious beasts could live much longer than human cultivators. Their lives were much longer than that of humans, especially powerful beasts such as the middle aged man. After reaching a level where he could transform into a human, how could he not feel lonely by himself?

These stone chairs, tables and the chess board was probably a sign that he wanted to become more like a human. He wanted to have a normal human life and be part of the human world.

The palace didn't stop shaking, very quickly, the middle aged man returned to normal. The palace also stopped shaking, as if nothing had happened. The middle aged man was staring at Lin Feng with a cold and detached smile, that smile made Lin Feng feel very uneasy.

It was said that only Tian level ferocious beasts could transform into a human form and speak the language.

The one in front of Lin Feng could do all these things which meant that he was at least a Tian level beast. If he entered the world of human beings, he would easily be able to create chaos in a weaker country like Xue Yue.

Only a cultivator of the Tian Qi layer would be able to fight against him.

Lin Feng didn't understand why his interlocutor said that he was going to leave and wanted to go outside soon, why couldn't he just go at that moment?

Lin Feng calmed down and looked calm again. He then asked: "Sir, since you already transformed into a human form, why do you have to wait before going into the human world? Why would you have to stay here?" Lin Feng didn't have time to stay there, he needed to leave.

Lin Feng didn't criticize the world of ferocious beasts either, they had their own culture and forms of wisdom. Besides, Lin Feng didn't think that humans and ferocious beasts were that different, ferocious beasts were very cruel and brutal but weren't cultivators bloodthirsty and cruel as well?

"Because I am still a ferocious beast. If people find out that I am a ferocious beast, they will try to kill me or make me into their pet whom they will use as a pet. I would become a pet and forced into slavery." Said the man slowly which surprised Lin Feng. Indeed, if a Tian level ferocious beast appeared in the outside world,

wouldn't there be even stronger cultivators who would want to capture him? The world of cultivators was large and didn't lack extremely strong cultivators.

“But you said that you would be able to leave soon, why?” Asked Lin Feng who didn't understand.

When the beast heard Lin Feng, he smiled, he smiled in a particularly bestial way. He then glanced at the Winged Tiger on the ground, the beast just glanced at him while looking scared and remained motionless. It knew how monstrously powerful that middle aged man was.

“You really want to know?” Asked the beast while turning around and looking at Lin Feng again. His smile was becoming more and more bestial.

Lin Feng didn't understand what his interlocutor meant but he slightly nodded.

“Hehe, I will tell you, there's no harm in doing so. I've been sick and tired of being a ferocious beast for a very long time, Now, I am about to obtain a human form and become a normal human.” Said the beast with twinkling eyes. His voice was husky: “I will finally be able to get rid of my bestial body and obtain an authentic human body.”

“Huh?” Lin Feng frowned, he would become an authentic human being? Could ferocious beasts become real authentic humans?

“My honoured guest, you still don’t understand? Humans will always reign over the continent and everything in creation. Even though we, ferocious beasts have a body more suitable for fighting than a human, humans can rely on their understanding and then outstanding cultivators who are stronger than ferocious beasts appear. The potential of human cultivators is almost infinite whereas ferocious beasts are doomed from their birth, their talent and natural abilities never change, they can only rely on the destiny they were born with.”

Lin Feng calmly listened to his interlocutor. It was the first time that he heard about these things because he had never considered these things before. Actually, things were really like the man was describing them, humans were able to cultivate to a higher level, even though there were incomparably strong ferocious beasts with terrifying strength, the continent didn’t lack extremely strong cultivators, therefore, no matter how strong a ferocious beast was, there would always be an even stronger cultivator out there to defeat them, therefore, humans reigned over the continent and not ferocious beasts.

Ferocious beasts were already doomed from birth and could only rely on their bloodline. Human beings had unlimited potential, it all depended on how much effort they were willing to invest into cultivation.

“However, there are always opportunities, when ferocious beasts reach the Tian level, we have a decisive decision to make, partial or full transformation into a human.”

“The human transformation is divided into two possibilities, one

can keep one's beast body and temporarily turn into a human being, it's a bit like putting on a human disguise but the Qi that one releases is still bestial, however, the second possibility is to completely transform into an authentic human and leave one's animal body behind. At that moment, one doesn't have the intelligence of a beast anymore, but that of a human. One would lose the fighting power of a beast to gain the understanding of a human cultivator."

Lin Feng was astonished, two possibilities, one was to stay as a beast and the other one was to become a human.

That was the first time that he heard that ferocious beasts could become human.

"So the human transformation process has already started for you?" Asked Lin Feng, the Tian level beast nodded, he had already started transforming.

"Reaching the Tian level is like dipping your toe into the human world without being truly accepted by humans, right?" Asked Lin Feng trying to find an explanation.

The Tian level beast was astonished and staring at Lin Feng with an evil smile, he then immediately continued: "You are very smart but even if I tell you these things, what can you do? The first choice is very easy, any ferocious wild beast can do it, but becoming human is another story, during the transformation process, the natural power of a beast body is removed, in other words, it means that I won't have the strength of the Tian level any longer. Besides, it is not guaranteed that the transformation

will succeed, if it fails, my level will still be reduced. It's a once in a lifetime risk."

"As expected." Whispered Lin Feng. The man had chosen the second option. While he was going through the transformation process, his strength was reduced, he wouldn't be able to increase his level during that period of time. On top of that, if it failed, his strength of his body would never return. Only ferocious beasts could understand how large of a risk it was.

"Well then, how can you increase the chances of success?" Asked Lin Feng looking lost in thought.

"Having contact with humans." Replied the Tian level beast which astonished Lin Feng.

"...which is the reason why you want me to stay here, right?"

"Indeed, during the transformation process, you will stay here with me, we will have fun and talk together, it will be great." Said the Tian level beast whose voice didn't sound husky anymore, he looked determined and evil.

Lin Feng remained silent, the Tian level beast had told him so many secrets so he wouldn't be able to leave, if he left, Lin Feng could tell other humans who would come and kill him.

Lin Feng didn't beg the Tian level beast either, the man looked calm but kept his evil instincts and was as bloodthirsty as any

beast. If Lin Feng infuriated him by accident, the consequences could be disastrous.

At that moment, Lin Feng wanted to know something. After the ferocious beast finished its transformation process, what strength would it have? And what would its fighting ability be like?

“Ancient ferocious beasts are monstrously strong, He can make that Winged Tiger become as docile as a cat, besides, he has told me everything already, even if his level has been reduced, he still seems like he’s monstrously strong, otherwise he wouldn’t have shared the secrets with me, I can’t afford to act recklessly.” Thought Lin Feng warning himself.

“Is there anything else you want to ask me? I will happily tell you.” Said the Tian level beast with a husky voice while smiling in a more and more evil way, his eyes were turning red again.

“No, there isn’t.” Said Lin Feng while shaking his head. He had the feeling that he knew what the ferocious beast was going to say so he didn’t ask.

“Are you sure?” When the ferocious wild beast saw Lin Feng’s eyes, he said in an evil way: “Don’t you want to know if I will kill you when I’m done with the transformation?”

Lin Feng was stupefied, what an intelligent ferocious beast. Lin Feng really wanted to ask that question but didn’t need to as he already knew the answer.

“I will tell you now. I will kill you. When I am a human, every human and ferocious beast who knows that I am a ferocious beast will need to die. I want to become a real human being.” Said the Tian level beast while raising his head at the sky and slightly closing its eyes, his voice was still husky. Once he was a human being, beasts and humans who knew he was originally a ferocious beast would have to die.

Chapter 390: Convincing the Winged Tiger

When the Winged Tiger, which was lying down on the ground, heard the Tian level beast, it raised its head, what it was thinking wasn't clear though.

It also knew that if the Tian level beast became an authentic human of the Tian Qi layer, he would kill the Winged Tiger. It knew that this was the case for a while.

But, what could it do?

Even though it was an ancient ferocious beast, its strength was still inferior when compared with the Tian level beast, so what could the tiger do?

Its gigantic eyes twinkled and it just continued lying on the ground, as if it hadn't heard the Tian level beast at all, its body curled into a ball.

Lin Feng didn't pay attention to the Winged Tiger, he was only silently looking at the Tian level beast.

The Tian level beast had immediately told him that once the transformation process finished, he would kill him.

“Honoured guest, let's not talk about such useless things. You are here now, so you are my guest, you also have to stay within fifty kilometres. During this time, we can chat, you can also play with

the little one, it can even show you around the mountain chain and show you all the ferocious beasts. Besides, you will personally witness the transformation of a Tian level beast into a human.” Said the Tian level beast not paying attention to Lin Feng and or the tigers emotions, otherwise he wouldn’t have told them he was going to kill them.

“Fifty kilometres...” Whispered Lin Feng.

“Indeed, fifty kilometres, that’s your new home. If you leave that area, honoured guest, I will be forced to kill you.” Said the beast in an evil voice.

Lin Feng nodded and immediately started walking, he walked past the Tian level beast, he wanted to leave the palace.

The Tian level beast was stupefied and then smiled evilly. He also didn’t try to stop Lin Feng, Lin Feng had already followed them here, how could he escape?

If he tried to leave, he would just end up dead. The Winged Tiger was quicker than Lin Feng but the Tian level beast always managed to capture it when it tried to escape, and by acting dominant towards the tiger, it’s nature had become more docile than in the past.

Lin Feng just walked around randomly, fifty kilometres was big area and small area at the same time, in that area, there was nobody apart from the Tian level beast and the Winged Tiger, as if it was a forbidden area.

Ferocious beasts had a much more developed senses than human beings and marked their territory, how could such a monstrously strong ferocious beast accept other beasts entering its territory?

These ferocious beasts didn't dare enter its territory anyway, in that mountain chain, the Tian level beast could really be considered as the king.

Lin Feng arrived next to a waterfall and then immediately sat down cross-legged. He calmly sat down next to the water and closed his eyes. He entered into a state of meditation and it was if the outside world had nothing to do with him any longer.

Lin Feng sat there for three days, apart from taking out purity stones and putting them around him, Lin Feng remained motionless for three days, absorbing the pure Qi of the purity stones.

At the top of the waterfall on the cliff, there was a beast and a man, the waterfall was under their feet, they were also standing there, motionless, looking at Lin Feng.

Obviously, it was the Tian level beast and the Winged Tiger.

“Human beings can absorb the Qi of heaven and earth, and by relying on purity stones, they can increase their cultivation speed, increasing the reserves of pure Qi in their body. At the same time, they can use their heart and their power of understanding to increase their cultivation level.” Said the Tian level beast while

looking at Lin Feng. Since he was going to become a human, he had to be familiar with their practices and habits.

He had to understand what drove humans and needed to be in constant contact with humans. This was the only way he would be able to increase the chances of success during his transformation. Also, being in contact with humans didn't necessarily mean that he had to be in close proximity to them. Observing their behaviour was enough.

For the Tian level beast, the most important was to understand what it meant to be a human.

“They practice cultivation much quicker with their high natural abilities, they are indeed much quicker than ferocious beasts, for beasts to progress, it's much slower.”

The Tian level beast turned around and started walking, slowly leaving Lin Feng to practice.

The Winged Tiger turned around and looked at the Tian level beast. It waited for the Tian level to leave and then suddenly jumped and landed in front of Lin Feng.

It then started walking around Lin Feng, slowly, while looking pensive.

“What an idiot.” Thought the Winged Tiger while suddenly stopping and crouching in front of Lin Feng and crushing a purity

stone with its paw.

“Kacha!” The purity stone broke. It seemed like the Winged Tiger sensed something, he was just staring at Lin Feng.

“You noticed it, didn’t you?” Said Lin Feng and immediately after, he opened his eyes and looked at the Winged Tiger.

The Winged Tiger was staring at Lin Feng, and slightly nodded. It could indeed see that Lin Feng wasn’t practicing his cultivation, it was just a facade, in fact, Lin Feng had already broken through to the next layer.

“You noticed but you didn’t tell him because you secretly despise him and want him dead, right?” Said Lin Feng while smiling. The ancient ferocious beast was cruel and proud but the Tian level beast had made him into a docile pet, it was going through hard times.

The Winged Tiger had to act docile, friendly and even hug the Tian level beast, how could it not be filled with wrath?

Lin Feng was almost sure that the Winged Tiger hated the Tian level beast.

The eyes of the Winged Tiger were filled with hatred. It was an ancient ferocious beast with a sacred bloodline, whereas the Tian level beast was an absolutely ordinary ferocious beast, it had just been alive for a much longer time. It was thus monstrously strong

and was able to capture the Winged Tiger as a pet. Who could understand how monstrous the pressure in the tiger's heart was, who could understand how furious it was? However, it couldn't release that fury, even if it tried, it was useless.

“You hate him but you don't dare to say it, you have to act as a loving and docile pet. You thirst for freedom but you are tied down, just like a house cat. You must be constantly looking for new opportunities to leave or kill him.” Said Lin Feng in a soft and gentle voice while trying to arouse the wrath of the tiger. The Winged Tiger looked more and more ferocious, cruel, and was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's words gave the beast the feeling that its heart was being pierced with needles.

“You don't need to get enraged, you are an ancient ferocious beast, a Winged Tiger. However, you are doomed to be docile your entire life... Until the day you die. His transformation process will come to an end soon, maybe you will be lucky and it will fail but can you be sure that he will not kill you before seeing the result? Therefore, the day of his transformation will be your last, you will never be able to live like a real ferocious beast.” When the Winged Tiger heard Lin Feng, it slightly opened its mouth, its sharp teeth looked like they could tear Lin Feng into pieces.

“What's the point of being furious? If you don't want to die, there is only one solution.” Said Lin Feng while looking at the Winged Tiger's expression, he then continued slowly: “You must kill him, it's your only chance to regain your freedom. Only then will you have the opportunity to regain your freedom.”

“Grrr.....” The Winged Tiger growled in a low voice. Of course, it knew all these things. It could understand everything that Lin Feng was saying but could it kill the Tian level beast?

If it had been able to kill the Tian level beast, it would have done so much earlier.

“We need to act together.” Said Lin Feng. “You need to tell me how strong he is now, and how advanced is his transformation process?”

Lin Feng’s spirit emerged and one of the head of the dragon slowly moved from Lin Feng’s back towards the Winged Tiger, it was the shaman spirit.

“Grrrrr.....” A bestially dangerous light spread over the tiger and in a flash, it moved back and growled while looking at Lin Feng. Its eyes were filled with hatred and seemed like they could swallow Lin Feng. Lin Feng’s shaman spirit was trying to control the soul of the Winged Tiger.

“You can’t kill him, the only thing you can do is wait and die. We have hope only if we act together, therefore, I need to know everything you know, so you need to let me control you for the time being, if we don’t act together, we will not be able to escape and we will both die.” Lin Feng was trying to convince the Winged Tiger, which looked ferocious and was coldly staring at Lin Feng.

“I have a solution to deal with him, but I need to know

everything about him. If you trust me, we can win, if you don't, we will lose everything. This is a once in a lifetime opportunity, otherwise, you will continue to be a pet for the rest of your short life, isn't that tragic for an ancient ferocious beast to die as a pet?"

Die as a pet...

When these words pierced through the ears of the beast, its eyes grew even colder. Wasn't being a pet humiliating for an ancient ferocious beast?

Chapter 391: Control!

Would the Winged Tiger believe Lin Feng?

Obviously, the Winged Tiger couldn't trust Lin Feng, how could it trust a human?

The Winged Tiger had no choice but to admit that Lin Feng was right. If they didn't kill the Tian level beast, they would definitely die. As an ancient ferocious beast, it had never had the opportunity to go through the most glorious period of its life. It was captured, humiliated and would soon be killed.

The Winged Tiger wanted to fight but Lin Feng wanted to control him. The tiger couldn't really understand the dangerously bestial Qi that Lin Feng was releasing.

The Winged Tiger looked like it was struggling.

If Lin Feng really had a way to control him, wouldn't it make Lin Feng the same as the Tian level beast? Wouldn't Lin Feng make it become his pet as well?

"If you are not resigned to do it, I will not bother. You should clearly think about the situation, even if I control you, we will be equals, I will not treat you as a pet like that guy... I am not the same as him, what I need is your strength, you are an ancient ferocious beast, I need your power to defeat him." Said Lin Feng when he saw that the Winged Tiger was starting to look irresolute.

The Winged Tiger agreed deep in his heart. Lin Feng and the Tian level beast weren't the same, if Lin Feng really controlled it, it wouldn't stay as a glorified pet, and it could show his power as an ancient ferocious beast.

Some steam shot from the beast's nostrils and it slightly shook its body.

"If I don't fight against him, then we will both die. Even if I control you, it doesn't mean anything if we are both fated to die, if I can really kill him, at least you will still be alive. Joining me is the safest option and you will no longer be forced to live in humiliation." Lin Feng knew that the Winged Tiger was already affected by his words. He needed to continue to convince him by slowly riling him up, after all, forcefully controlling an ancient ferocious beast was extremely difficult.

"Grrr....." The Winged Tiger looked at Lin Feng while growling, it still looked vigilant but it didn't look as cruel as it did a moment before.

The shaman spirit slowly released a black and white energy which moved towards the Winged Tiger.

"Let's work together, let's make this gamble together, you don't want to die and I don't want to die either.

At the moment when the shaman spirit started staring at the Winged Tiger, the latter looked like it wanted to resist but after

Lin Feng's words, it just lowered its head and didn't put up any resistance. The black and white light enveloped its body, and quickly moved towards its soul to take control of it.

When Lin Feng saw that the Winged Tiger wasn't struggling anymore, he finally smiled. That plan was a success, Lin Feng didn't need to invest more energy into convincing the beast, he had managed to gain control of the ancient ferocious beast with a few words.

The shaman spirit could control ferocious beasts by controlling their souls. The light enveloped the body of the beast. The black and white eyes looked dangerous. Lin Feng could distinctly sense that the soul of the Winged Tiger was slowly weakening. It then shook and entirely submitted itself to the shaman spirit. Lin Feng could sense that he was now in complete control of the beast, it was such an intriguing sensation.

"What a powerful spirit..." Whispered Lin Feng. It could weaken the soul of a beast and control its soul, if a beast wasn't strong enough, it was easy to gain control over it.

The shaman spirit enabled a cultivator to control ferocious beasts with impressive speed, what a terrifying power!

Of course, Lin Feng didn't realize that the reason that he managed to control the Winged Tiger so easily was because he had practiced the surplus souls technique and had a powerful soul. Lin Feng's extremely strong soul and powerful technique were two essential factors in controlling a beast.

The Winged Tiger gave a low purr and then lowered its head, it looked sad.

“My friend, come with me. You will not feel sad for much longer.” Lin Feng stretched out his hand and started to pet the Winged Tiger’s head in a solemn way which made a feeling of determination rise in the heart of the beast. It suddenly felt extremely determined and its heart was filled with the desire to kill. Then, the Winged Tiger raised its head and stared at Lin Feng in a deep and meaningful way.

“The Tian level beast is called Lei Yan Mao, it’s a thunder flame cat, he is currently transforming into a human being, his level has been restrained but he still has the strength of the fifth Xuan level.”

Lin Feng was extracting information from the beast’s brain about the Tian level beast, Lei Yan Mao, surprisingly it was a cat beast.

However, that cat had made the Winged Tiger, an ancient ferocious beast into its pet. How humiliating was that for the Winged Tiger... It was so furious that it had accepted Lin Feng and submitted itself.

“Fifth Xuan level, it’s similar to a cultivator of the fifth or sixth Xuan Qi layer. He is monstrously strong.” Lin Feng slightly blinked. Perhaps what the Winged Tiger knew didn’t wasn’t the entire truth. Maybe Lei Yan Mao hid the truth to protect itself and it was actually much stronger than what the Winged Tiger

imagined.

After all, maybe the Winged Tiger had never seen him use his full strength.

“Even if I assume that he only has the strength of fifth Xuan level, I fear that I have only one option.” Lin Feng had many doubts, he had been escaping from the members of the Wan Shou Sect and hadn’t anticipated that he would come across such a terrifying Tian level beast.

“You know how strong I am, so what do you intend to do now?” Said an indifferent voice which made the Winged Tiger shiver. It looked at the sky above the waterfall and suddenly seemed terrified.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the top of the waterfall and saw the silhouette of a beast.

“Just a stupid animal!” Said the Tian level beast in the tone of a joke which made the Winged Tiger feel terrified.

“Against all expectations, you are quite smart, you surprisingly managed to fool an ancient ferocious beast into submitting, I initially thought that you were both simply complaining about needing to remain here, but you ended up plotting against me.” The cat was smiling as if he found the situation amusing. He was looking at Lin Feng and the Winged Tiger in an evil way.

What Lin Feng and the Winged Tiger were doing was absolutely pointless. Did Lin Feng really plan on killing him? That was too ridiculous.

“I don’t even need to think it over, I, Lin Feng, might die at anytime, I would never become your pet. I don’t have time to play around with you.”

“What you mean is that you didn’t intend to stay here with me at all? In the end, you’ve just been delaying until this moment?” Asked the cat.

“You can put it that way, yes.” Nodded Lin Feng.

“How idiotic! Since you want to die, I will play with you a little.” Said the cat in a husky voice while releasing some evil Qi. It immediately took a step and swiftly jumped through the air. It moved so fast that it looked like an illusion.

Suddenly, a painful sensation invaded Lin Feng’s body, he hadn’t even had the time to think and his body was sent flying backwards. Immediately after, a rumbling noise spread through the air and a cloud of dust rose. The cat was now standing where Lin Feng was previously standing and there was now a small crater beneath the cat’s feet.

“How quick....” Lin Feng felt cold from head to toe, the cat’s speed was terrifying!

“Initially, you were my guest, I let you go where you liked within my territory and tried to be a good host, I wouldn’t have thought that you would end up disrespecting my kindness. You are courting death, but I will not kill you, I will make you suffer so much that you will wish that I would kill you.” The cat looked even more evil and cruel. His face looked more and more bestial with each second.

Chapter 392: The Battle Against the Tian Level Beast

“A beast will always be a beast, it can never change its bestial nature, even if it transforms into a human.” Joked Lin Feng, when he saw that the cat was looking more bestial, which caused the cat to look even more ferocious. It then said in a husky voice: “So what? Wait until I transform into a human and possess an authentic human body, relying on my strength, I will be able to kill whoever I want in the human world. I will make it my territory and kill anyone inside.”

“Basically, you don’t want to become a human, you are just bored of having been a beast for a thousand years. You want to experience something new, but your desire to slaughter those weaker than you will never change, strong cultivators will never allow you to enter the human world and needlessly slaughter.” Lin Feng was shaking his head while talking. That cat initially didn’t really want to be human, it was only because he had lived for such a long time and was extremely bored, he grew tired and lonely, thus he wanted to enter the human world and cause mayhem for its own enjoyment. He was not arrogant and proud like a human cultivator, he was cruel and bloodthirsty like a beast.

“Maybe what you’re saying is true but I advise you to think carefully.” Said the cat looking ferocious and with a grin that unveiled his sharp teeth. He looked like a hideous monster.

In a flash the cat was standing mid air above them.

“Roaaarrr.....” The Winged Tiger let out a roar. It then threw

itself at the cat. Its body started to grow larger, the tiger's heart was filled with hatred and wrath.

“Animal! Get lost!” Shouted the cat in a sharp voice. The cat immediately turned around and streaked through the air. Its hand transformed into a claw and slashed through the air leaving only a trail of blood behind. The Winged Tiger's body was sent spinning through the air. The claw had torn into the tiger's flesh.

The Winged Tiger's mouth was open, it was furiously roaring towards the cat. Its face looked extremely ferocious and its heart was filled with hatred. It didn't want to be humiliated by the Tian level beast anymore, it had been suffering for too long. It had even lost its bloodthirsty temperament from being docile for so many years.

“It seems like you feel too lonely, too pitiful, to the extent that you just want to die.” Said the cat in a husky voice. At that moment, he was standing tall and his hands had completely transformed into extremely terrifying claws.

“Don't attack him alone, come here!” shouted Lin Feng to the Winged Tiger. The sun was shining upon his body diffusing a dazzling light. Pure sun Qi was transforming into flames which surrounded Lin Feng's body.

“As expected, you broke through to the second Xuan Qi layer.” Said the cat in a husky voice when he sensed how powerful Lin Feng's pure Qi had become.

Lin Feng didn't say anything. He had, indeed, broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer.

His fighting potential was becoming more powerful over time. In a short time, Lin Feng had fought against Qiong Bi Luo, Yu Qiu, Ji Feng, Du Yan and Wu Zhen... He had used his black lotus frequently which forced him use the majority of his pure Qi. After, he managed to use his spirit to absorb some Xuan level beasts, the shaman spirit and Wu Zhen's body to restore his pure Qi.

When Lin Feng ventured into the depths of the mountain chain, he was looking for a place where he could safely break through to the next Xuan Qi layer. That is when he encountered the Winged Tiger. Therefore, he was forced to constantly use his pure Qi reserves and in monstrous amounts. However, his body had become much more resilient because of it. He needed to condense massive amounts of pure Qi into his body to break through... and only when those conditions were met, could Lin Feng succeed in breaking through to the next Xuan Qi layer.

In fact, the day before, he had already broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer which was why the Winged Tiger had thought that the Tian level beast was stupid. Lin Feng had stopped practicing his cultivation, he was only attracting the pure Qi towards him but was not using it to cultivate.

The Winged Tiger didn't know what Lin Feng was doing.

"But even achieving that cultivation layer is useless." Said the cat in a husky voice while slowly walking towards Lin Feng. The Winged Tiger roared and moved next to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had said that he had lots of ideas to deal with the Tian level beast, even though the tiger didn't really believe Lin Feng, it still had some hope.

“Let's see if it's useless.” Lin Feng's eyes became pitch-black and emotionless. In these black eyes, once in a while, a dangerous light would flash, it looked incredibly dangerous.

“Huh?” The cat frowned. A moment before, a dangerous light flashed in Lin Feng's eyes and he had the feeling that it was attempting to control him.

Lin Feng started condensing some pure sun Qi and black flames started to flicker, When the pure sun Qi was condensed, it slowly turned into more black flames.

The sun Qi was being transformed into grim fire, finally, the black flames formed into a black lotus, a black lotus made completely from grim fire. It looked incredibly captivating.

“What's this?” The cat was staring at the black lotus. Those black flames seemed like they contained an extremely strong deadly energy. The cat hadn't ever thought that such a thing could exist.

The Winged Tiger was also staring at the black lotus in Lin Feng's hand, its confused face indicated that it didn't understand either. Was that the solution that Lin Feng was talking about to deal with the Tian level beast?

“Interesting!” The cat was staring at the black lotus and smiled in an evil way. It was walking slowly, surprisingly, it wasn’t using its speed and was being cautious.

Cat beasts were extremely dangerous and... Lei Yan Mao was of the most powerful of the category of cat beasts. Besides, he was at the Tian level which meant he had plenty of battle experience. Even if he was extremely arrogant, he was also extremely cautious, otherwise he wouldn’t have stayed inside the mountain chain for all these years. Because he was extremely careful, before transforming into a human, he couldn’t afford to make a single mistake.

If the incredible Tian level beast encountered an accident before becoming a human, how tragic would that be.

“But I won’t try and prevent you from playing with fire.”

The cat stopped walking while saying these words in a husky voice. His body was suddenly surrounded with flames which fluttered in the air, the flames looked like they contained the power of lightning and caused thunder claps to sound. It looked magnificent.

Lei Yan Mao could use thunder flames.

That kind of fire was extremely destructive, it could cause devastation.

“Go.” The cat raised its claws and in a flash, a crackling sound filled the atmosphere. Thunder flames were rushing through the air towards Lin Feng.

How quick! The thunder flames moved as fast as lightning.

Fortunately, Lin Feng had already entered into his world of darkness and his perception was extremely acute. At the moment when the thunder flames appeared, he had already started moving and immediately moved his black lotus in front of him.

The magnificent red thunder flames collided with the black lotus and a thunder clap filled the atmosphere. After a while, the flames dispersed but the black lotus still remained, it looked incredible.

The cat was surprised. Such a strong thunder flame had surprisingly been destroyed by the black lotus. It was obvious that the black lotus was terrifyingly dangerous, the cat had underestimated Lin Feng’s ability.

That black lotus contained all the pure sun Qi in Lin Feng’s body. Lin Feng’s pure sun Qi had absorbed the fire essence from the seven-tailed fox, this made it grow even more powerful. Then, the pure sun Qi was combined with deadly energy to create grim fire, which was then condensed it into a black lotus, how terrifying!

The Winged Tiger looked at Lin Feng and its eyes were filled with hope. Maybe Lin Feng’s lotus could really defeat the cat.

The cat glanced at the Winged Tiger indifferently. It was looking more and more evil. It then smiled coldly and said: “Do you think that you can defeat me with fire?”

The Winged Tiger was surprised, it was looking at the cat with its sanguinary eyes. Indeed, could Lin Feng defeat such a terrifying creature using fire?

The Winged Tiger was losing faith.

“Don’t forget that I am a monstrously powerful Tian level beast.” Said the cat in a cold and husky voice while raising his hand. Thunder flames were fluttering through the atmosphere and a fire dragon formed in the air above him.

“Now, prepare to become the victims of my fury.” When the cat finished talking, just like an illusion, it disappeared from its original position.

Lin Feng was stupefied. He immediately moved back and a white light streaked through the air in front of him. It had been so quick that he didn’t even see it clearly.

“BOOM!”

The thunder flame dragon bombarded the atmosphere towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng slammed his foot into the ground and jumped through the air.

However, at that moment, even more thunder flame dragons were rushing towards him. They were incredibly quick and there were more than Lin Feng was able to dodge. He raised his hand and the black lotus blocked the incoming thunder flames. A resplendent light started to illuminate the atmosphere.

Lin Feng hadn't even got the chance to attack yet, he narrowed his eyes and only saw the claws of the cat falling from the sky and aiming at his head.

These claws were absorbing and incredible quantity of terrifying beast Qi, if these claws reached Lin Feng's head, he would certainly die!

Chapter 393: Unsheathing The Evil Sword

Lin Feng moved back while raising his hand, his black lotus then rose up and diffused a dark light filled with deadly energy.

“BOOM!”

Thunder flames emerged from the cat's claws and surrounded the black lotus. After that, the Tian level cat disappeared again.

Lin Feng, in his world of darkness, could distinctly sense that its claws were approaching him from behind. The eyes of the cat looked incredibly sanguinary.

“What a sly and vigilant beast.” Thought Lin Feng coldly. That cat was a Tian level cat beast, even though his cultivation was restricted, he was still extremely strong. Besides, even though he was extremely strong, he was still avoiding any direct contact with Lin Feng's black lotus. He was using his advantage in speed to attack from behind, he would continue to use sneak attacks until one eventually killed Lin Feng.

After all, it could injure Lin Feng with one strike if it successfully landed a blow.

“Good thing that my perceptions are extremely acute.” Thought Lin Feng while moving away, the claws of the cat streaked through the after image of Lin Feng, the whole thing seemed like an illusion.

The cat wasn't hurrying at all, it turned around and his claws moved towards Lin Feng which made him quickly raise the lotus to block.

When facing the cat, even if Lin Feng managed to dodge the cat's attacks, he was unable to attack because he was unable to keep up with his speed.

The eyes of the Winged Tiger looked sanguinary and ferocious. It was watching the fight very closely. It was gradually losing hope as it had the impression that Lin Feng wouldn't be able to defeat the Tian level beast.

Even though the black lotus was monstrously powerful, the cat's speed was too much for Lin Feng. Lin Feng had absolutely no opportunity to attack so he had no hope of killing him.

The Winged Tiger was silent, it looked like it was thinking of all the possibilities. It was thinking about how to kill the cat, the tiger had already suffered too much because of him.

“BOOM!”

At that moment, a sound emerged from the atmosphere. Lin Feng had received an attack from the cat. His body was blown away and crashed heavily into the cliff. On his chest, there was a set of bloody claw marks.

The black lotus was still in Lin Feng's hand, his heart started to beat faster, and the black lotus transformed itself back into pure Qi and was absorbed back into Lin Feng's body.

The black lotus was useless against the cat. Of course, Lin Feng also understood that if he didn't have the black lotus, the cat would have killed him already, he wouldn't have been so cautious when attacking.

Lin Feng coughed some blood and his body was trembling. From the hole created in the cliff where he had crashed, his black eyes still looked emotionless.

"Please accept my most sincere apologies for having injured you, my honoured guest." Said the cat whose face kept switching between its human shape and its cat shape. His voice still sounded husky.

Lin Feng took out a pill and an incredibly refreshing sensation invaded his body, then the bloody wounds on his chest started to heal.

Lin Feng was still staring at the cat with his emotionless eyes. Lin Feng then said in a cold way: "Since you want to kill me, let's see who will die first."

"Who will die first?" The cat smiled in a particularly bestial way. The cat thought that it was funny to even suggest that Lin Feng still had the strength to fight against him.

But the cat only smiled for a second because after that he noticed that Lin Feng was releasing an energy that was filled with an air of cruelty. He was releasing a terrifyingly evil energy. A few seconds later, sword energy spread through the atmosphere.

“What’s going on?” The cat was astonished. Lin Feng was surprisingly releasing a terrifyingly powerful sword energy filled with cruelty and determination, how could that be possible?

The Winged Tiger was also astonished and fixedly staring at Lin Feng and at the sword energy. Its heart also started beating faster.

“Shiiiink!”

The cat and the Winged Tiger were stupefied, a sword was slowly emerging from Lin Feng’s body.

Lin Feng was shockingly hiding a sword inside his own body?

At that moment, Lin Feng’s eyes were still pitch black. He was focusing on only one thing: his sword.

Lin Feng didn’t act immediately after breaking through to the second Xuan Qi layer. He had been studying the nine swords which seemed to have merged with his body.

Lin Feng had managed to isolate the nine swords from the rest of his body by using his determination and soul power, but at that moment, he needed something to increase his power, so he was

forced to bring them into play.

Lin Feng could also clearly sense that he didn't need to do anything to these nine swords, they already had their own will, thus he only needed to release them. The sword in his hands seemed like it wanted to devour Lin Feng's soul and replace Lin Feng as the owner of the body.

Therefore, Lin Feng had to be over-cautious which was why he was releasing the sword very slowly and with the utmost care.

A terrifying black cloud started to envelop Lin Feng's body. It seemed like Lin Feng had drowned himself in a sea of evil sword Qi. The most powerful thing about that evil sword Qi wasn't that it felt emotionless and bloodthirsty like normal sword Qi, instead, it gave the feeling of resentment and hatred.

That sword seemed like it had a life of its own and it was filled with resentment and wrath. It felt only hatred against the world, against the ones who sealed it away.

The evil black cloud was expanding through the atmosphere, it was becoming more and more violent as it expanded. The cat and the Winged Tiger were absolutely shocked, they had never thought that such a terrifying power could have been contained in Lin Feng's body.

“So that's what he meant, he wasn't trying to trick me. He really had a way to defeat him.” Thought the Winged Tiger while fixedly staring at the evil sword emerging from Lin Feng's body.

The cat however, after being surprised for a moment, a smile slowly appeared on his face again, a particularly evil smile.

“I don’t believe that you can control such a powerful sword, that sword is mine.” Yelled the cat evilly, a tidal wave of energy then started rolling through the atmosphere, the ground beneath them started to shake.

“Meooowww.....” It was the first time that the cat was using its full power. His body transformed into a blur which moved straight towards Lin Feng at full speed with its claws ready to strike.

In a flash, the cat arrived in front of Lin Feng.

“Come out!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. A rumbling sound spread through the air and the terrifying evil Qi moved straight towards the cat. The cat spun through the air using its claws to become a deadly hurricane that cut through the evil Qi. Lin Feng quickly dodged and the cliff behind him started to burst apart as the cat’s claws tore through the cliff.

“In order to control such a powerful weapon, one must develop their soul strength and only then can one use its power, otherwise communication between the soul and the weapon is impossible.” Thought Lin Feng. At that moment, the sword appeared in Lin Feng’s hand which made his entire body shake as evil Qi in the form of black clouds started to pour out from the sword.

“How terrifying!” Thought Lin Feng whose heart was racing. He

had already anticipated this kind of situation but he hadn't thought that the evil sword would release such a cruel energy filled with hatred, the endless evil Qi was making his mind spin. It seemed like the sword was attempting to taint his body with evil Qi, as if it wanted a body with evil Qi to take possession of.

That sword clearly wanted to take over Lin Feng's body and consume Lin Feng's soul.

But how could Lin Feng accept such a thing, his dark and emotionless eyes were filled with determination. At that moment, with Lin Feng's emotionless calm, the evil Qi was unable to penetrate into his soul.

How could someone like Lin Feng let a sword to defeat him and take control of his body.

The evil sword was shaking which caused Lin Feng's arms to shake, however, Lin Feng was still firmly holding the hilt.

Whistling sounds spread through the atmosphere, the sword was creating a tremendous pressure. The evil sword was shaking so much that Lin Feng's entire body was affected.

Lin Feng gnashed his teeth and blood started to flow from his mouth, nonetheless, his black eyes looked as determined as before.

"Ahhhh....." Lin Feng furiously shouted, his voice resonated through the sky and then he raised his hand and pierced through

the air with his sword.

A terrifying sound consumed the atmosphere, there was a shocking black evil energy shooting into the sky, it looked incredible, it looked like a black hole being sent into the sky.

Lin Feng had lacerated the atmosphere with the sword and his face was covered with cold sweat. He was holding the sword horizontally and finally it had stopped moving. Then, suddenly, on Lin Feng's face appeared an extremely strange and evil smile.

Finally, he managed to gain a fraction of control over the evil sword.

It was only a sword but what a powerful hatred and willpower it contained! That evil energy was so brutal, if Lin Feng had released all nine swords at the same time, his soul would have been consumed by these terrifying swords!

At least, at that moment, Lin Feng didn't dare release more than a single sword at any time.

Chapter 394: Removing the Restriction!

Lin Feng didn't even dare to think anymore about it. Just now, if he had chosen to release the nine swords at the same time, the evil swords would have immediately consumed his soul and taken over his body. Lin Feng would have died and the evil sword would have been reborn into his body.

The cat remained alert and was looking at Lin Feng, or more precisely at the evil sword in his hand. This time, his evil and bloodthirsty smile had disappeared from his face. At that moment, he even looked somewhat scared.

That sword had its own will. If Lin Feng was able to gain control of that monstrously powerful sword, who would be able to stop him? The Tian level cat would definitely fall beneath the full power of that sword, even if he was at the peak of his power before he started the transformation.

If that sword had its own cultivation, it would be even higher than the Tian level cat.

Fear was spreading through the cat's heart... But compared with his fear, his greed was spreading much quicker. Even though he was only a ferocious beast and didn't use a sword, in the future, if he managed to become a human cultivator of the Tian Qi layer, he would be able to go anywhere he wished if he killed Lin Feng and stole that powerful weapon.

At that moment, Lin Feng couldn't see himself, but his pitch

black eyes looked even colder, and even more expressionless and heartless, as if he had come from the depths of hell, only one glance from those eyes sufficed to make the cat's heart start to pound.

“You want to kill me?” Said Lin Feng in an ice-cold way. Lin Feng wouldn't have thought that the cat would be filled with killing intent at that moment. He hadn't given up and now wanted to kill Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's hands, which were holding the sword horizontally slowly rose into the air, at that moment, evil clouds were unceasingly rolling through the atmosphere causing the very air to shake. Above Lin Feng, black evil clouds started to gather and cover the sky, it looked apocalyptic and sinister.

Wherever Lin Feng moved, the black evil clouds would follow.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously and his sword descended. The evil clouds started to emit loud noises as they rolled through the atmosphere. In the vast atmosphere, all of the Qi of heaven and earth was separated into two parts which moved in different directions. It was as if Lin Feng's sword parted the sea of Qi contained within the atmosphere, the empty space in the middle of the parting was filled with the evil sword which was releasing an evil sword Qi.

The sword had gone into a frenzy, it was filled with intense wrath and wanted to take revenge against the world that sealed it.

“Whoosh!” The cat shot into the horizon like an arrow. That sword could lacerate anything. The sword was filled with evil energy and its own willpower, the cat wouldn’t be able to withstand a single attack, dodging was the only option.

“BOOM!”

A mountain that was far in the distance was split apart. The cat did not stop moving higher into the sky, he had the feeling that he was in grave danger. He was monstrously quick but that sword attacked across such a large area. Lin Feng was able to attack as he pleased, that sword would be so powerful that it was almost unbelievable.

At the moment when the cat jumped into the air, Lin Feng gave chase. His evil sword emitted a whistling sound as it cut through the air, it was filled with an evil energy. The atmosphere was filled with another black evil energy.

The pupils of the cat went rigid when he saw the evil energy. He started to push himself beyond his limit, he was moving so fast that he was almost invisible, as if he had reached the speed of light, it was incredible.

“Die.” Lin Feng’s face was filled with killing intent. At that moment, even though he had gained a fraction of could control over the sword, his cultivation was still too low so the sword was starting to influence him and his actions. His entire body was filled with evil Qi and his mind was plagued with murderous intentions.

Lin Feng's entire body transformed into a black cloud and shot through the sky. The evil cloud rushed through the air, it was moving with extreme speed and the evil sword was leading the chase. The entire atmosphere was filled with evil clouds, rumbling noises spread through the atmosphere and it felt like the apocalypse had come to the mountain chain.

Lin Feng's body was being followed by the evil clouds. There seemed to be a beam of light trying to escape the evil clouds in the sky, it was the cat.

“Meooooowwww.....” A meowing sound spread through the air. The cat's eyes were filled with endless flames of rage. He felt a cold sweat forming and before Lin Feng he felt powerless. All he could do was dodge again and again, just like Lin Feng was, a moment before. He was in an extremely dangerous situation. Now that Lin Feng could control the evil sword, he had a clear advantage over the cat.

The cat was a Tian level beast, a monstrously powerful Tian level beast, surprisingly, a human that was weaker than him was putting so much pressure on him.

At that moment, the face of the cat had become rabid, he had flames in his eyes and looked incomparably ferocious.

He was staring back at Lin Feng in the hopes of spotting an opportunity, he couldn't believe that Lin Feng could attack with the sword as he pleased. Even if the cat was backed into a corner, he still wanted to kill Lin Feng, he was an incredibly strong Tian level beast, even if he was in a weakened state, could a tiny little

human have the power to kill him?

Lin Feng also knew what the cat was thinking. The evil sword was extremely powerful but with his cultivation, he couldn't control the power. Also, he was much slower in comparison with the cat, otherwise, the cat wouldn't have continued to fight, he would have run away a long time ago.

At that moment, the cat was looking for an opportunity to kill him, he wanted to kill him and steal the sword.

Lin Feng's emotionless and bloodthirsty eyes started to look like they were filled with wrath and hatred, as if his thoughts and feelings were being influenced by the sword. Lin Feng smiled coldly and then attacked with the evil sword again, evil clouds continued to spread through the atmosphere.

But the evil sword energy didn't move towards the cat this time, which stupefied him. Immediately after, he smiled in an ice-cold way.

The cat's silhouette flickered and he threw himself at Lin Feng with incredible speed.

It seemed like the cat had been gathering all his Qi to carry out this powerful attack in an attempt to kill Lin Feng, he moved like lightning. His face looked extremely ferocious, it was horrible.

Lin Feng didn't even pay attention to the cat who was moving

closer. Lin Feng's eyes looked as emotionless as before, he looked absolutely unaffected.

The sound of waves crashing emerged in the atmosphere. Lin Feng's purple lake appeared and started to move, an endless stream of purple snakes then moved towards the cat and tried to restrict his movements but at that moment, the cat's body was surrounded by thunder flame. Besides, it was also monstrously quick, the purple spirit could only slightly slow the cat's movements. In the end, it wasn't very useful.

The cat was moving closer to Lin Feng and his face was becoming more and more animalistic as well.

The cat's sharp claws were slicing towards Lin Feng at full speed, the beast was moving through the sky like an unstoppable meteor.

"Celestial Fangs." Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. His voice was ice-cold. A dragon with six heads appeared behind Lin Feng, it then grabbed the cat with its mouth and wrapped its body around the cat, restraining his movements.

"Meooooowww....." The cat was meowing in panic. Lin Feng raised his sword and immediately attacked, his speed was incredible.

"Die." Said Lin Feng in an evil and cold voice.

The celestial fangs spirit disappeared, Lin Feng recalled it back

into his body. It seemed like there was nothing else but an evil sword filled with wrath and hatred left in the atmosphere.

The cat frowned, his face drastically changed. It was astonished, a dual spirit cultivator, an evil sword...

At the moment when Lin Feng's sword was not aimed towards the cat, he thought that he had enough time to attack and kill Lin Feng, but it seemed like he had underestimated the power that human cultivators were capable of when their life was in danger. Besides, that dual spirit was enough to slow his movement for a few seconds, during these few seconds, the cat's fate had been decided.

The evil cloud rolled through the air along with the monstrously powerful sword.

"Meoowww....." A loud meowing sound resonated through the atmosphere, then his face became entirely animal. The energy which was restricting his power emerged from his body, as if the transformation had been broken.

The evil cloud made the entire atmosphere vibrate. Lin Feng sensed the power surge under his sword and a strong wind started to blow, Lin Feng had the impression that his body was going to be blown away.

"The restriction has been removed!" Lin Feng's heart was pounding. The cat was releasing Qi which was at the Tian level.

While the cat was undergoing the transformation process, his strength was reduced, besides, the restriction was extremely hard to remove, but at that moment, the evil sword had struck against the cat's body and when its life was threatened, it returned to an authentic Tian level beast again.

The Winged Tiger looked extremely excited, Lin Feng had succeeded in attacking the cat, surprisingly, he almost killed him and forced him to remove the restriction.

Transforming into a human was a once in a lifetime opportunity, it was given to the beasts of the world by the heavens, going against it was the same as going against fate. If the restriction created by the transformation process was removed or broken, the ferocious beast would regain its initial strength and become a ferocious beast again. From that moment on, the Tian level beast would be forced to remain as a beast. Unless a miracle happened, it would remain a Tian level beast its entire life.

At that moment, the thunder flame cat's transformation process had been ruined. It was now trapped as a Tian level beast, all of its dreams were crushed.

The Winged Tiger slightly shook, this noble and ancient ferocious beast would finally regain its freedom. The nightmare was finally over.

It was sick and tired of being hugged and petted by the cat for such a long time. It was sick of acting docile and gentle, it had already lost its bestial nature because of it.

The Winged Tiger's eyes looked extremely ferocious, it looked pensive. It was filled with hope, hope that the cat would be completely annihilated. The best thing would be if Lin Feng managed to slaughter it.

The cat meowed loudly, it raised both of its paws in the air, its ten sharp claws looked like ten dazzlingly sharp swords, the claws were much longer than normal swords.

“Die.” Lin Feng's black eyes were filled with an unparalleled determination, he condensed his entire strength into another sword strike. A slicing sound filled the air as the ten claws reached the sword and were sliced apart.

Chapter 395: Scared!

Two terrifyingly powerful Qi collided in the air, one belonged to the evil sword, the other to the Tian level beast.

The sword Qi was filled with a murderous and hateful evil energy. It was cold and filled with wrath. The Qi of the beast was brutal and evil, it contained an endless blood lust.

Both energies were piercing through the atmosphere. The sword had cut through the cat's ten claws which were still falling to the ground, but in a flash, ten new claws replaced the damaged claws. At the same time, the cat started to retreat at the speed of lightning.

“Meooooow.....” The cat meowed loudly and released a monstrous energy. The evil sword fell from the sky followed by the evil cloud which crashed into the cat's body. A wound appeared on the cat's body, but the bestial blood was absorbed back into the wound. However, the cat's Qi wasn't as strong as a moment before, it had been weakened a lot. That evil sword energy was filled with incredible wrath and it penetrated through the flesh and into the bones.

“Tian level beasts are really tough...”

Lin Feng had attacked with the evil sword but it hadn't been enough to kill the cat. Lin Feng looked at the beast before his eyes, he looked disappointed. Lin Feng was much too weak. Even if the evil sword was monstrously powerful, it needed someone

extremely strong to control it, Lin Feng couldn't control it properly. Besides, the cat was also much stronger than him, therefore, that sword which definitely should have killed him had, in the end, failed.

The Winged Tiger was astonished as well. Disappointment was visible in its eyes. The beast hadn't died, in the end, Lin Feng wasn't able to kill the cat.

The restriction had been broken and Lei Yan Mao had regained its power. The Winged Tiger was also thinking about how great it would be if it managed to become a Tian level beast in the future. In the mountain chain, nobody would dare to bully it anymore, it would become the king of the area. It would never be treated as a pet ever again.

“Eeeeeeee.....” The cat let out a shriek, which didn't sound like that of a cat, while looking at the sky.

How ridiculous. The cat was normally so prudent and cautious, but it had been so impatient to become a human being that it fought with Lin Feng and Lin Feng's sword broke the restriction and crushed the cat's dream. Its only desire was now unachievable.

The cat had become a Tian level beast again but it wasn't happy at all. The restriction had been broken which meant it was forced to remain in beast form for its entire life, how miserable.

It was doomed to remain as a beast, a simple cat. It wouldn't be able to act like a human anymore, it would remain a simple cat,

maybe it would even be captured and domesticated. Of course, it would do anything to prolong its life.

When the cat thought about his cruel fate, his eyes looked monstrously evil. It was fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng had destroyed its bright future, it would not even be allowed to take the form of a human.

“It seems like the restriction is extremely complex.” Thought Lin Feng when he saw how miserable the cat looked. Breaking the restriction would have terrifying consequences, otherwise the cat wouldn’t have been overly cautious and stayed within the mountain chain the whole time. It very rarely left the area of fifty kilometres which it confined Lin Feng to.

Its sharp claws attacked again and it released a terrifying Qi. The cat wanted to kill Lin Feng. Lin Feng had ruined its life.

“Die!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously before the cat could unleash its attack. Lin Feng raised his sword, it was filled with wrath and a shocking evil Qi. The evil cloud was following closely behind the evil sword.

“Meow!” The cat meowed loudly and a bestial Qi filled the atmosphere and crashed against the evil cloud. At the same time, thunder flame surrounded its body and bombarded the atmosphere towards Lin Feng.

“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!” The sky seemed like it was exploding. Between Lin Feng and the cat, a hurricane was forming in the air.

“A Tian level beast is way too terrifying, I can’t even fight against it with the evil sword.” Lin Feng, hadn’t anticipated that such a thing would happen. The beast had regained its Tian level strength and it was already able to fight back against the evil sword. A point of no return had been reached, Lin Feng had to act now or he was doomed.

If Lin Feng didn’t manage to kill the Tian level beast, he would lose his life. There was absolutely no doubt about that.

Lin Feng saw the Tian level beast rushing towards him and once again the air was filled with explosions. An incredible deadly energy invaded the atmosphere and clashed against the terrifying bestial Qi.

Lin Feng started to retreat. The Tian level beast would have already killed Lin Feng if he didn’t have the evil sword. Lin Feng didn’t even have the opportunity to attack him.

At that moment, he was using the full power of the evil sword that he was able to control, but it was still very difficult for him to defend himself against the Tian level cat.

A Tian level beast’s strength was similar to a cultivator of the Tian Qi layer... Lin Feng didn’t even know if there were any cultivators of the Tian Qi layer in Xue Yue. Lin Feng had already managed to injure the cat, he could be proud of himself for accomplishing that. Thanks to his determination and willpower, he had managed to gain control over one of the nine evil swords.

The evil sword had a monumental destructive power that could be unleashed. Thanks to the power of the sword, Lin Feng had already accomplished incredible feats.

If the restriction hadn't been broken by the cat's desire to live, and if the cat hadn't regained its strength of the Tian level right away, Lin Feng would have killed it using the evil sword already.

Lin Feng's eyes were ice-cold. At that moment, he only knew that the cat was shockingly strong. Lin Feng didn't understand why the cat was attacking so aggressively, the evil sword was still able to put the cat in a terribly dangerous situation.

"You need to delay him. After breaking the restriction, it has temporarily regained the power which was restricted within its body, but its power can no longer be contained as the body was weakened by the transformation. Its power will continue to decrease over time and then you will be able to kill it as you wish." Said a voice transmitted into Lin Feng's mind which stupefied him. Lin Feng was controlling the Winged Tiger, so they could use their souls to communicate. The Winged Tiger didn't need to speak out loud, it could just transmit its thoughts to Lin Feng.

"Its power will continue to decrease over time..... So that's how it is." Lin Feng's eyes flashed as if he had suddenly understood something. He then continued to retreat.

"Die." Shouted the cat furiously. Lin Feng had to die.

"Meow...." The cat started to coil its body and immediately after

it disappeared from sight, in a flash, it appeared in front of Lin Feng. It was truly a ferocious beast, it pounced at him like a fire-red cat. However, that cat was much bigger than an ordinary tiger, it looked particularly monstrous.

What seemed like an endless stream of bestial Qi was leaking from the cat's body. Its sharp claws slashed through the atmosphere. This time, the cat didn't care about dodging Lin Feng's sword, its claws immediately clashed against the evil sword that was rushing towards it. Surrounding these terrifying claws, there was a dazzling white light. These claws were much harder and sharper than a steel blade, they could no longer be compared with a normal sword.

Even though the claws clashed against the evil sword and blocked it, the evil cloud continued moving and an incredible quantity of evil sword Qi penetrated into the cat's body which made its eyes turn even more sanguinary.

“Shiiiink!”

A shocking sound suddenly emerged in the air. Behind Lin Feng there was another evil sword, it was slowly emerging from Lin Feng's back. It was astonishing, the energy of that sword was even more terrifying.

“There are other swords inside Lin Feng's body....” The cat looked astonished and ruthless at the same time. That evil sword was already so terrifyingly powerful and Lin Feng still had more evil swords. He was a monster, Lin Feng was a terrifying monster!

The Winged Tiger was also shocked and was fixedly staring at the sword emerging from Lin Feng's body. How amazing! Lin Feng wasn't lying, he really had a way to deal with the cat. Lin Feng's hidden power was astonishing, he had broken the transformation restriction and was even able to fight with a Tian level beast.

"Rise!" Shouted Lin Feng furiously and the evil sword rose into the air. Monstrous evil clouds started to cover the sky. It was incredible.

"Two swords...." The cat looked uncertain, could it fight against two evil swords?

But while the cat was thinking, a terrifying Qi filled with fury started to emerge. From Lin Feng's back, another sword slowly started emerging!

That was a third evil sword! Lin Feng had already unsheathed three of the evil swords!

At that moment, the cat and the Winged Tiger were speechless. One evil sword was already monstrously powerful but three evil swords... How powerful would three evil swords be when attacking?

At the moment when the third sword started emerging, the entire atmosphere was being overwhelmed by the evil Qi.

The cat suddenly looked desperate. Actually, when it thought things couldn't get worse, a fourth sword started to slowly emerge from Lin Feng's body.

“Meowww.....” The cat meowed while looking to the sky. Its claws that were still blocking the evil sword started to shake. Immediately after, the cat shot towards the horizon at full speed. In an instant, it had disappeared from sight without a trace.

It was so scared that it immediately ran away, it didn't dare to stay any longer. Even though it was going to lose its cultivation level, at least, it still had its life. If it had stayed to fight against Lin Feng, the four swords would have definitely killed him.

Chapter 396: Teng Wu Yao's Fury

The cat managed to escape, it disappeared in a flash.

The Tian level beast reigned over that territory as a king, then it suddenly found itself in a dangerous situation and in time, it would become an ordinary Xuan level beast. He had to find a place to hide.

“Roarrrr...” After having remained silent for a while, the Winged Tiger started to roar while looking to the sky and running around in a frenzy. It also started releasing its Qi into the air.

Its roars echoed through the atmosphere and caused the air to vibrate. The Winged Tiger was venting all of its anger that it held inside all of this time. It had been suffering for ten years, the cat was humiliating it for ten years... And the tiger finally had its freedom.

However, at that moment, Lin Feng's eyes were still pitch black, just like two black holes. His eyes looked emotionless and ice-cold. Lin Feng knew that he couldn't control the power of four swords. At that moment, two of the swords were emitting whistling sounds in the atmosphere. They were chaotically rushing through the air and evil clouds had covered the sky. Lin Feng couldn't do anything to stop them, he could even feel that the swords were slowly gaining control over his body.

“Return.” Shouted Lin Feng in a deep voice. The sword which was still emerging from Lin Feng's body was forced back inside and

disappeared. It returned to Lin Feng's body. Lin Feng then quickly isolated it from his soul and stopped that sword from influencing him.

However, Lin Feng looked deathly pale.

“Return!” Shouted Lin Feng furiously. Then the strength of his soul burst into the atmosphere enveloping two of the swords.

However, these two evil swords were shaking and emitting whistling sounds. They were refusing to return to Lin Feng's body, on the contrary, they wanted to consume Lin Feng's soul. At the same time, an evil Qi penetrated into Lin Feng's body which made his emotionless eyes suddenly look furious.

Those evil swords were polluting his body with evil Qi.

“Return!” Roared Lin Feng while raising his head. The strength of his soul was divided into an endless number of small pieces which rushed towards the evil swords to restrict them. At the same time, it started to drag the swords towards his body. While being dragged through the air, the swords were shaking and struggling against the power of Lin Feng's soul.

Even though Lin Feng's body was now filled with evil Qi, he was still clear-headed. A light started to illuminate the atmosphere through the evil clouds as the two evil swords were slowly dragged back into Lin Feng's body, they soon disappeared as if nothing had ever happened.

“You too.” Said Lin Feng to the sword that he was holding. He then easily returned it to his body. It was the sword with which Lin Feng was the most familiar, it was also the only sword he was able to control.

The four swords had disappeared as if nothing happened and the evil clouds also slowly dispersed.

A thread of black blood suddenly flowed from Lin Feng’s mouth. Lin Feng’s body had lost all of its power and his body was now falling powerlessly to the ground .

“Whoosh!” A light flashed towards Lin Feng, it was the Winged Tiger, it immediately caught Lin Feng who was plummeting towards the ground. It then laid Lin Feng delicately on a huge rock next to a waterfall.

Lin Feng continued to lay there. He left the world of darkness created by his celestial spirit and gradually regained his consciousness. His brow was covered with sweat, he opened his mouth and took a deep breath.

Simply unleashing the evil swords was terrifying, when Lin Feng unleashed them, he had to resist the evil Qi and wrath which was constantly invading his heart.

With his strength, Lin Feng was only able to use the power of a single sword. He had the feeling that he had used all of his pure Qi reserves. The evil swords required more pure Qi than Lin Feng’s body could provide. Besides, if he used the evil swords too often, he

would have his body polluted by the evil Qi which tried to invade his heart. It would invade his heart and slowly take control of his soul, his body would become nothing but a tool. He would be transformed into a tool for the evil sword to use to unleash its wrath on the world.

The evil swords were filled with their own willpower and determination and seemed to have a life of their own. Lin Feng couldn't unleash the power of more than one sword at a time.

"I wonder when I will be able to control more than a single sword, if I could, I would be able to slaughter Tian level beasts." Whispered Lin Feng to himself. If, one day, he was able to control those swords, Lin Feng would be the unstoppable king of Xue Yue.

With a slight movement, a large amount of purity stones appeared beside Lin Feng. He closed his eyes and immediately started to absorb the pure Qi without holding back.

At that moment, Lin Feng was extremely greedy as he consumed the pure Qi, he needed lots of pure Qi to recover. He had used every ounce of his strength.

The Winged Tiger was standing next to Lin Feng and was staring at him with its large eyes. It seemed like he was lost in thought.

The cat had run away but now Lin Feng was his master. However, Lin Feng had said that he wanted the tiger to be his equal, not his pet.

During the battle against the cat, the Winged Tiger had seen that Lin Feng was a courageous and trustworthy person, he would never behave like the cat to trick and humiliate the tiger.

While thinking, the Winged Tiger slightly crouched down and looked towards the sky. It was an ancient ferocious beast and its destiny was in Lin Feng's hands. Lin Feng and the tiger were tied together by the threads of fate.

There was nobody around to bother Lin Feng and the Winged Tiger. They were in a very isolated location in the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain. Human cultivators never came this deep into the mountain chain. The ferocious beasts had all run away from the area when they saw the evil cloud and sensed the Qi of the Tian level beast. They didn't even dare to go near that territory any longer.

The ferocious beasts of that area were extremely wise and intelligent, they wouldn't foolishly go there out of curiosity.

But, the Winged Tiger and Lin Feng didn't know that fifty kilometers away from them, some people had arrived.

The evil cloud and the bestial Qi had invaded the entire atmosphere across a hundred kilometres into the distance, people could still sense the powerful Qi, they could even still see the Qi covering that area.

Those people were the members of the Wan Shou Sect. They were still looking for Lin Feng and Wu Zhen. Even though they

had gradually lost hope and understood that Wu Zhen was probably dead, they still refused to give up.

Before sensing the bestial Qi and the evil clouds, they were about to give up and return.

“Patriarch, that evil Qi must belong to one of the evil swords. Maybe an extremely strong cultivator found one and is hunting in the depths of the mountain chain.” Said the vice patriarch of the Wan Shou Sect, Teng Wu Shan in a low voice while approaching his elder brother Teng Wu Yao. Teng Wu Yao slightly nodded. That evil cloud also contained a terrifying sword energy, it indubitably belonged to one of the evil swords. Surprisingly, someone had managed to obtain it, moreover they even knew how to control it and were using it to fight.

What they didn't know was that the extremely strong cultivator who had obtained the evil swords was Lin Feng and that he actually couldn't control them properly and only revealed a fraction of their power.

Nobody would even think about that possibility. Even at the moment when the nine sword mountains were destroyed, Lin Feng was there, but nobody who knew about the legend of the evil swords had thought that Lin Feng was the one who had obtained the evil swords because he was far too weak, how could he attract the evil swords? How could he have the power to break the seal? Therefore, nobody would ever consider that possibility.

They obviously thought that an extremely strong sword cultivator had obtained the evil swords.

“There is not only evil Qi, there is also the Qi of a Tian level beast.” Whispered Teng Wu Yao. If only they could obtain a Tian level beast, how terrifying would that be? Unfortunately, it was impossible, they could only dream about achieving something like that.

“Patriarch, should we go and take a look or should we leave?” Asked Teng Wu Shan in a low voice.

Teng Wu Yao remained silent for a moment, he looked uncertain. Immediately after he said coldly: “Let’s go back. Whether it’s the extremely strong cultivator who obtained the evil swords or the Tian level beast, either one could kill us all very easily. Perhaps Lin Feng has already died in the depths of the mountain.”

“Of course, even if he is dead, I also want to kill all those who are close to him, his friends and family can accompany him to the afterlife.” Said Teng Wu Yao in a piercingly cold voice. In fact, he was sure that his son Wu Zhen had died. Many people were well aware that Wu Zhen was dead but nobody dared to mention it, it was too painful for the patriarch.

Nobody knew how Wu Zhen had died. They didn’t believe that Lin Feng could kill Wu Zhen, the circumstances of his death were still a mystery.

“Let’s go back.” Shouted Teng Wu Yao in a deep voice. He turned around and informed all the members of the Wan Shou Sect that they were leaving the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain. They sighed

and started to leave.

The extremely strong cultivators of the Wan Shou Sect were all moving together with their beasts, if a strong wild beast attacked them, they would be able to cope using their numbers.

The events hit Xue Yue like a storm, the Yue Clan obtained a vein of the earth, the Yu Clan obtained nothing at all but also lost nothing, the Wan Shou Sect was the one who had suffered the most, it had lost a number of core disciples and the patriarch's son was killed.

The person who was at the centre of all of this, was Lin Feng, he was the one who had actually obtained the greatest of treasures. He had obtained a fortune of purity stone, multiple nine sun grass, the evil swords and even an ancient ferocious beast.

Maybe that storm was simply the calm before an even larger storm... Which would leave the entire country of Xue Yue breathless.

Chapter 397: Wind

In the depths of the mountain chain, there was a person stood midair.

The water from the waterfall was violently rushing down onto them but that person was still standing straight.

A fiery pure Qi was glistening under the waterfall and on a huge stone not far from the waterfall. There was a beast which was watching the person inside the waterfall.

“Rise!” Shouted the person in a deep voice. Then his silhouette rose higher into the air and arrived at the highest part of the waterfall. When he arrived at the top, his body rushed down to the bottom of the waterfall, then he moved against the current of the waterfall until he once again arrived at the top, and he continued to do this for a while.

After some time, he stopped. He then closed his eyes and started to sense the water of the waterfall flowing over his body.

That person was precisely Lin Feng and the beast on the huge stone was obviously the Winged Tiger.

“Roarrrr....” The Winged Tiger roared and rose to its feet. It then turned and its wings started moving as it flew into the distance.

Lin Feng didn't pay attention to the Winged Tiger. He was still

standing midair inside the waterfall. After the cat ran away, Lin Feng took the time to recover, he didn't immediately leave. He had decided to stay and train in the mountain chain for a while.

He needed to find a method to improve his speed.

Lin Feng had been in many battles recently and he had found that his speed wasn't sufficient. He was slower but stronger than many people... But if he wasn't fast enough to attack them, being strong was useless. The opposite was true as well, being quick but not strong enough to injure your opponent was useless.

The water of the waterfall was violently crashing into Lin Feng's body, this method was simple but its results were undeniable.

Lin Feng came out of the waterfall and started to walk through the air. No water was restricting Lin Feng's body anymore, he felt extremely comfortable, he had the feeling that all his movements were weightless.

"The Winged Tiger is so unruly." Lin Feng glanced around looking for the Winged Tiger and then smiled. His silhouette flickered and he flew into the distance.

After a while, Lin Feng arrived in a dense and thick forest. The myriad of tall trees prevented the sunlight from penetrating into the forest. Some extremely loud explosive sounds were filling the air, they came from a place nearby. Some extremely brutal bestial Qi was also filling the atmosphere of the forest.

“The Winged Tiger is fighting against another ferocious beast...” Lin Feng was stupefied. He then flew towards the place where the Qi was emerging from. Very quickly, he arrived in a location which was covered with destruction. Broken trees were sent flying through the air in a whirlpool of Qi.

These two ferocious beasts were facing each other in mid-air.

Lin Feng immediately moved onto a treetop and looked at the two silhouettes. One of them was the Winged Tiger and the beast which it was fighting against was a black bat with cyan wings.

The cyan winged bat was extremely quick, it was one of its main strengths, ferocious beasts of the same level could rarely compete with it in terms of speed.

Lin Feng was watching the bat, it looked extremely cruel and ruthless. It had two extremely sharp teeth protruding from its mouth. These long and sharp teeth looked horrifying. Apart from its speed, its sharp teeth were its main strength. They were extremely powerful. With its teeth, it could bite into beasts' and suck them dry of blood.

“The Winged Tiger really likes to provoke others...” Whispered Lin Feng while sighing. Even though the cyan-wing bat wasn't an ancient ferocious beast, with its speed, it didn't fear any beast of the same level. After all, if other beasts weren't as quick as it was, how could they fight it?

“Eeeeeaaaa..... Eeeeeeeaaaaa.....” Sharp sounds spread through

the air. The body of the bat flashed, its wings flickered and it disappeared.

How quick, it was much too quick! Lin Feng's eyes couldn't even follow the movements bat.

Generally speaking, the faster a beast or a human cultivator was, the better they could dodge incoming attacks. For example, when Lin Feng was walking through the air, he could always sense the wind blowing against his body, but at that moment, the cyan-wing bat was moving extremely quickly but Lin Feng couldn't sense any strong wind at all. The bat was extremely agile and light and was creating no resistance in the wind. Lin Feng was surprised.

“Roaaarr....” The Winged Tiger moved as well, its fiery wings flickered, it was also extremely quick. It immediately moved towards the bat, its sharp claws glistened in the air.

The cyan winged bat didn't try to confront the Winged Tiger, it twisted through the air and then at the moment when it was about to collide with the Winged Tiger, it abruptly moved higher in the air.

The Winged Tiger raised its head and opened its mouth, it started to breathe flames which rushed straight towards the cyan-wing bat. At the same time, its fiery wings moved again and it rose higher into the air while following the bat.

“Even though the Winged Tiger is very quick, speed is not his greatest strength, when it flies, there is resistance in the air... But

thanks to its monstrous strength, it can ignore the wind resistance and reach such a terrifying speed.”

Lin Feng wasn't really interested in the fight, he was just interested in watching the beasts' movements, speed and agility.

The Winged Tiger could rely on the explosive power in its body to ignore the wind resistance, that was why it could move so quickly. On the other hand, the cyan winged bat was an expert in terms of speed, when it was flying, it seemed like there was absolutely no wind resistance at all.

“Speed also depends on the cultivation. As my cultivation rises, my speed will increase but it seems like I can't reach my maximum speed. When my speed increases, it seems like it's actually not my maximum speed. What prevents me from reaching my maximum speed is wind resistance, if there was nothing to create resistance, I would be able to reach my maximum speed.” Thought Lin Feng as if he had suddenly understood something. It was a simple principle, Lin Feng had broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer and that provided him with an increase in speed, however he needed to work if he wanted to achieve his maximum speed.

Lin Feng had understood something new, he had the feeling that certain things suddenly became clearer to him.

Lin Feng's strength wasn't speed, it was his power of comprehension. Because he had an extremely strong soul which was aided by his celestial spirit, he had a much better comprehension speed compared to other people.

There were many outstanding cultivators who were quicker or had a higher cultivation than Lin Feng, however, if they fought against Lin Feng, they wouldn't necessarily win.

Power of comprehension was an extremely important aspect of cultivation. If two sword cultivators of the same cultivation fought, the one who could comprehend their sword path the most would easily defeat the other.

"I'm wrong..." Lin Feng was stupefied. His eyes were twinkling as if he had suddenly had a flash of enlightenment.

Everything that he had thought a moment before was correct, but it was a shallow understanding.

No matter who it was, a beast or a human cultivator, none of them had limits to what they could achieve.

"When cultivators and ferocious beasts move, wind resistance is a hindrance, it slows them down... But that's like going against the current, if I could move with the wind, I would be able to move much faster, and then achieve even greater speed than my maximum." Lin Feng suddenly remembered that when he was practicing under the waterfall, he was very slow when moving against the current, but when he moved with the current, he was much faster because he was aided by the current.

When cultivators and beasts moved, wind had the same effect as the water of the waterfall. It greatly affected their movements.

However, unless there was a strong wind from behind, movements were always against the current which created resistance... Unless one could control the wind and take advantage of it.

“Wind... It’s crucial to move with the wind...” The lights in Lin Feng’s eyes were becoming brighter and brighter. Swords had force, wind obviously also had force. When Lin Feng had learned how to carry out energy attacks, he had learnt how to temporarily borrow all of the force around him. He had almost forgotten about it.

Lin Feng needed to understand wind force and then his speed would definitely increase.

When Lin Feng thought about his realization, he slowly closed his eyes, he could still distinctly sense everything around him but it was almost as if Lin Feng wasn’t paying attention to it at all.

Lin Feng didn’t focus on the mountain chain, or on the battle between the Winged Tiger and the cyan winged bat. He was only focusing on the wind gently blowing on his body.

In Lin Feng’s world, there was only one thing: wind.

Chapter 398: Wind Movement

A sword had sword force, wind also had wind force.

Sword force was sharp and brutal, Lin Feng could kill someone every time he used his sword. Wind force was invisible, and seemed nonexistent but in fact it was everywhere.

At that moment, Lin Feng was using his full power of comprehension, he was calmly sensing the energy in the wind. It was enveloping his entire body. He could also sense the movements of the wind.

Lin Feng had the sensation that he had been there for a long time but almost no time had passed, Lin Feng slightly moved, very lightly. He made a very small movement which had a very subtle effect on the wind. Lin Feng entered in his earth fusion and could sense all the small subtleties in each of his movements.

That small move seemingly changed the particular movement pattern of the wind and it was as if the wind had disappeared. That small move seemed like it was made with greatly reduced wind resistance.

“If my movements are in harmony with the movement patterns of the wind, if I manage to move along with it, then I will be able to benefit from its power.” Thought Lin Feng. He then stopped making small movements. He calmly sensed the wind around him. He concentrated on the movements and patterns of the wind.

After a while, Lin Feng moved again and slowly moved forwards.

There was still resistance against his movements, the wind was still preventing him from moving forwards.

But while Lin Feng was moving, the resistance was becoming less and less. Lin Feng was growing more familiar with the wind and its movements.

Finally, when Lin Feng moved, he began to move with the wind and the wind resistance disappeared and instead increased his speed.

“Wind force... That’s wind force....” Whispered Lin Feng. He then stopped moving and opened his eyes.

The Winged Tiger and the cyan winged bat were still fighting but at that moment, the cyan winged bat looked much weaker and it had wounds covering its body which were dripping with blood.

Even though it was extremely quick, each time it attacked the Winged Tiger, it couldn’t injure it, instead, the bat was being injured by the Winged Tiger. The cyan winged bat was much weaker than an ancient ferocious beast. If the bat hadn’t been an extremely quick beast, it would have been killed by the Winged Tiger already.

The cyan winged bat started to shriek, its silhouette flickered and it moved straight towards the Winged Tiger. The bat was not

planning on retreating and felt humiliated. It was much quicker than the Winged Tiger but it failed to injure it and it even got injured by the Winged Tiger after every exchange.

“Roaaarr!” That time, the Winged Tiger roared in a terrifying way and released an incredibly monstrous bestial Qi.

The Winged Tiger spread its fiery red wings which amazed Lin Feng. When the Winged Tiger had its wings spread, it seemed like the wings could cover the sky .

“Roaaarrrr.....” The Winged Tiger roared furiously. Its gigantic wings started to move. That time, it wouldn’t let the bat escape. It was sick and tired of the bat’s attempts of sneak attacking the Winged Tiger. The bat didn’t dare face the Winged Tiger in head on combat which made the Winged Tiger angry.

When the cyan winged bat saw the huge wings of the Winged Tiger, it started to look scared. It shrieked again and stopped moving towards it. Instead, it turned around to tried to escape.

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

The Winged Tiger tried to capture the bat with its gigantic fiery wings but the bat managed to dodge the attacks and continued to fly away.

The Winged Tiger spread its gigantic fiery red wings again. Its eyes were filled with an ominous glint. The bat had managed to escape again. The Winged Tiger had almost managed to capture it.

The bat glanced at the Winged Tiger in an ice-cold way and then immediately glanced towards Lin Feng. It spread its cyan wings, its silhouette flickered as it tried to escape.

If the Winged Tiger hadn't provoked it, the bat would have never wanted to fight against the Winger Tiger. After all, there was a huge difference in strength between them. However, it had never been afraid of a ferocious beast of the same level before.

The cyan winged bat flew so close to Lin Feng that it made his clothes flutter. Lin Feng was surprised, that bat seemingly didn't care about Lin Feng at all, it seemed like it was ignoring Lin Feng's existence.

Lin Feng then started to move.

"Wind movement." Lin Feng moved with absolute silence, as if he had lost all power to rush against the resistance. His body was one with the power of the wind.

Lin Feng was moving so quick that it was impossible to see his movements. When the Winged Tiger saw that, it was astonished. How was Lin Feng suddenly so quick?

It seemed like he was much faster than the Winged Tiger.

The Winged Tiger had fought against Lin Feng and had also watched him fight against the cat, Lin Feng was extremely strong but speed was his weakness. Against all expectations, Lin Feng's speed had surprisingly increased.

As if the cyan winged bat had sensed it too, it slightly turned around and looked at Lin Feng while narrowing its eyes, its eyes were filled with a dangerous look.

Its wings flickered again and it continued accelerating. Under such circumstances, it couldn't fight against Lin Feng. The Winged Tiger behind would have time to catch up. Trying to fight under such circumstances would be the same as committing suicide.

"You want to escape?" Said Lin Feng with a cold and detached smile. The bat would have to pay the price for ignoring Lin Feng's existence.

Lin Feng started to smile, the wind force grew stronger and Lin Feng shot forward like an arrow from a bow. He was so quick that it was unimaginable. Lin Feng was quickly approaching the bat with incredible speed and the bat didn't seem like it could increase its speed anymore.

Lin Feng's fingertips were filled with an incredibly sharp sword energy and which lacerated the atmosphere as he moved. When the bat sensed the terrifying sword energy, the expression in its eyes drastically changed. It then started to insanely flap its wings in an attempt to increase its speed, but it was already too late.

“Pssssh.”

The bat started to shake, a monstrous sword energy had just pierced into its body.

An extremely high pitched shriek spread through the air, the bat was in agony. Its wings were flapping but it didn't have the strength to move anywhere, then its body slowly plummeted down to the ground.

The bat landed with a thump onto the ground. It had landed on its stomach, it was still trying to flap its wings but it didn't have the strength to fly anymore.

Lin Feng had broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer and the bat was a beast at the first Xuan level, how could it defend against Lin Feng's attack that was filled with such powerful sword energy.

The Winged Tiger arrived next to the bat and looked at it with a ferocious and cruel glare. It then raised its head and looked at Lin Feng.

“Do you want it?” Asked Lin Feng to the Winged Tiger indifferently. The Winged Tiger nodded its head without hesitation.

“Alright, it's yours.” Replied Lin Feng. The Winged Tiger roared deeply and immediately opened its mouth. Its monstrous teeth bit

into the bats body.

The cyan winged bat shrieked, it was in agony but the Winged Tiger, an ancient ferocious beast, didn't care about the bat's pain. The Winged Tiger was biting chunks from the bat's body. It slowly ate the bat while it was still alive. In the end, it swallowed the bats heart whole.

Lin Feng was calmly watching the scene. The mouth of the Winged Tiger was covered with blood. He was a bit surprised to see the Winged Tiger eat the bat's heart. For a beast of the same level, eating its heart was probably very beneficial.

The Winged Tiger swallowed the heart and a strange sensation invaded its body. It then roared and raised its head. It was looking at Lin Feng with a strange look.

It had already understood that Lin Feng's speed had increased. Lin Feng had been concentrating on trying to improve his speed inside the waterfall. The Winged Tiger respected Lin Feng's strength. Besides, it had the feeling that Lin Feng had made huge advancements. In fact, Lin Feng was still focused on improving his speed.

Human cultivators really had a terrifying potential. No wonder the cat had been willing to take the risk of undergoing a dangerous transformation process in order to become human.

“Qiong Qi, are you attached to that place?” Asked Lin Feng while looking at the Winged Tiger. They had been staying there for a

long time, Lin Feng wanted to leave.

Qiong Qi shook its head, it only felt hatred for that place. The cat had been treating it as a pet for so many years and this place reminded him of it.

“Alright, let’s go.” Said Lin Feng while smiling. His silhouette flashed and he immediately landed on Qiong Qi’s back, between its two gigantic wings.

Chapter 399: Coming to Kill!

At the site where people used to observe the nine sword mountains, there was nothing left anymore. There was only a vein of the earth filled with rich and thick pure Qi.

However, since the nine sword mountains had disappeared, more people were coming to that place, but not to practice sword cultivation though.

The Yue Clan had started to unceasingly extract the natural resources from the vein of the earth. They had even found out that the vein of the earth was gigantic and covered an area of dozens of kilometres. Besides, the ground was filled to the brim with purity stones.

The mountain from which people used to observe the nine sword mountains was also filled with pure Qi but before, the vein of the earth was too deep, so people couldn't sense the Qi hidden beneath the earth. At that moment, the vein of the earth was opened and the entire area was filled with the Qi of heaven and earth, it was so thick that it was floating in the air.

For that reason, the Yue Clan had decided to fortify the area and surrounded the vein with protection. After all, that place was in the centre of the Nine Dragon Mountain Chain which was a place filled with ferocious beasts.

The pure Qi attracted ferocious beasts, therefore the Yue Clan had no choice but to defend that location against them.

However, even though the Yue Clan didn't let ferocious beasts into the area, they allowed people from Xue Yue to come as long as they followed some rules. They were only allowed to practice cultivation there, they were not allowed to pick up any purity stones. If someone dared to pick up a single purity stone, even one of lower quality, the Yue Clan would kill them. Anyone who dared violate the rules would be killed.

People were also well aware that if the Yue Clan allowed other people to practice cultivation there, it was only because they were afraid of infuriating them. If they had forbidden people from coming, then people would have gathered and captured the vein of the earth. However, one of the conditions was not to take any purity stones.

Therefore, cultivators who came didn't foolishly try to steal the purity stones. If they tried and were caught, they would die, it wasn't worth it.

At that moment, outside of that protected area, in the middle of a thick and dense forest filled with ferocious beasts, there were some people fighting against ferocious beasts.

That group of people was composed of two girls, one old man and a young man.

Those four people were surrounding a ferocious beast. It was a ninth Ling level snake, it was almost forty meters long, it could spit poisonous Qi from its mouth. When that snake opened its

mouth, it was so large that it could swallow someone whole.

Those four people were being extremely vigilant. A ninth Ling level beast wasn't easy to handle, the strongest of the four people was the young man, he had broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer, he had extremely high natural abilities.

“Feng Ting, Jing Yun, you girls move back. I will handle that snake.” Said the young man while taking a step forwards. He wanted to kill a ninth Ling level beast by himself.

“Duan Feng, let's do it together. You just broke through to the ninth Ling Qi layer, your cultivation is not stable yet... And that snake is extremely powerful, it will not be easy to defeat.” Said Jing Yun while frowning. That young man was precisely Duan Feng but, two years had passed and he looked much more mature. Besides, his eyes looked more profound and mystical.

“Jing Yun, sister, no need, since our big brother is not here, I am in charge of protecting you, don't forget about that. I have never been forced to use my spirit either.” Said Duan Feng while smiling. He was wondering how Lin Feng was getting on these days. If Lin Feng saw how strong he had become, he would certainly be very happy.

When Jing Yun heard Duan Feng talk about Lin Feng, she was surprised and immediately after, her beautiful eyes were filled with radiant splendour.

In the carriage, when they left the small village, she hadn't

realized how high Duan Feng's natural abilities were.

Duan Feng had the blood spirit of the Imperial Clan, he could already use four sealed doors, he had a strong spirit and was extremely talented. In two years, he had broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer, that was extremely quick.

Jing Yun had a realisation, she realized that if someone was both talented and young, their cultivation could increase extremely quickly. It was amazing.

Of course, Jing Yun also knew that not everything could be attributed to Duan Feng's talent, he was also a hardworking cultivator. No matter how much he was suffering, he kept practicing cultivation everyday day and night. Lin Feng had become his idol so Duan Feng was determined to walk on the same path. He didn't want Lin Feng to leave him behind. Actually, he had been able to improve his cultivation so quickly by relying on his natural abilities and by fighting slaves.

"Alright, Duan Feng, please be careful." Warned Jing Yun. Then, she slightly moved back letting Duan Feng fight alone.

The blood spirit of the Duan Clan was inside Duan Feng, he had inherited it. It was an extremely powerful spirit but Duan Feng had never been forced to use it. If he released it, defeating the ninth Ling level beast would be easy.

"Feng Ting." Said Duan Feng to the other girl in black clothes. Feng Ting and the old man then moved away letting Duan Feng

fight alone.

“Ssss.... Sssss.....” The ling level snake seemed to know that Duan Feng wanted to fight it alone. It was confident that it could swallow him easily. Suddenly, it released its black venomous Qi which floated through the air.

“Animal.” Said Duan Feng while staring at the snake. He then moved and in a flash, four sealed doors appeared behind him. In the past, he only had three, at that moment he had four.

Feng Ting and the old man looked surprised. Those sealed doors belonged to the blood spirit of the Imperial Clan...

Surprisingly, Duan Feng had four sealed doors.

“Seal!” Shouted Duan Feng in a deep voice. In a flash, the door rose into the air, it shook while emitting some rhythmic and melodious sounds. Then, the doors immediately sealed the body of the gigantic snake which started shaking to shake. The sealed doors seemed like they had taken control of the snake's mind.

“Hissss....” The snake hissed furiously, it was unceasingly shaking. However, it didn't struggle for a long time, it then gradually calmed down. After the sealed doors penetrated into its mind, the ninth Ling level snake wasn't able to move its body anymore, it was very easy.

“Duan Feng, I'll go and kill it.” Said Feng Ting. Duan Feng didn't

have the time to reply before Feng Ting's silhouette was flickering away already. She immediately arrived next to the snake. After killing the snake, she immediately picked up the precious items it contained and took them for herself.

When Jing Yun saw that move, she frowned. Duan Feng was the one who stopped the snake thanks to his spirit. Feng Ting didn't even ask him if he had any objection, she immediately killed it and took the items for herself.

But Duan Feng didn't say anything, he just looked at Feng Ting with a warm smile on his face. After that, he recalled his spirit into his body.

"Duan Feng, let's go and kill some other ferocious beasts." Said Feng Ting in a detached way. Duan Feng nodded but Jing Yun frowned even more.

What did that girl think? Was Duan Feng her slave? Duan Feng had saved her life, if Duan Feng hadn't appeared, Feng Ting would have been raped and killed by the guards of her own clan.

"Alright." Said Duan Feng while nodding as if he didn't mind which made Jing Yun grow speechless. Because Duan Feng had feelings for Feng Ting, he had transformed into an idiot. Jing Yun knew that Duan Feng liked Feng Ting, even Feng Ting herself knew about it, therefore, she was just using him to obtain some precious items.

"Let's go." Said Feng Ting while starting to walk, getting ready to

move to another place.

“Go? Where do you think you are going?” At that moment, a cold and detached voice spread through the air, it came from inside the dense forest. The group of people were surprised and immediately after, they saw silhouettes coming from all directions.

Those people looked bestial and ice-cold.

“Who are you.” asked Duan Feng while staring at the people surrounding them.

“You don’t need to know.” Said one of the group in an ice-cold way while releasing some deadly energy.

“I don’t think that you and I are enemies.” Said Duan Feng.

“Just consider that you have a bad karma because you are related to Lin Feng.” Said one of the group in an ice-cold way which made Jing Yun and Duan Feng frown. Those people were Lin Feng’s enemies.

“Why do you hate him?”

“Hate him?” The interlocutor smiled in an ice-cold way and said: “I will tell you something, all of Lin Feng’s friends will die, not a single person will be left alive. Not only will you all die but also the people in the Celestial Academy will be killed. Our strongest cultivators must already be at the Celestial Academy killing the

students of the academy by now.”

Those who were friends with Lin Feng were all going to die, what about Meng Qing? Would she be killed?

Duan Feng and Jing Yun suddenly released an ice-cold energy.

Chapter 400: Cold Indifferent Heart

Duan Feng and Jing Yun didn't know the events that occurred. Those people surprisingly wanted to kill everyone who was close with Lin Feng, how cruel.

“Lin Feng!” Feng Ting and the old man's hearts started pounding. The big brother that Duan Feng was talking about in such a respectful way, was surprisingly Lin Feng, the young man at the centre of all those events.

“Those people must be from the Wan Shou Sect...” The old man and Feng Ting immediately guessed who those people were.

The old man moved next to Feng Ting and said: “Miss!”

Feng Ting was stupefied, she looked at the old man while looking irresolute.

But immediately after, she looked resolute and said: “Gentlemen, the both of us are not friends with Lin Feng, we just accidentally encountered these people, that's all. We're leaving now, all of this has nothing to do with us.”

“Huh?” When Duan Feng heard Feng Ting, he was astonished, an acute pain pierced into his heart.

In the past few days, Feng Ting was training in the mountain chain when she was attacked by the guards of her own clan. Then

Duan Feng appeared and saved her. He also started to have feelings for her. He had started to trust her but now that they were in a critical situation, Feng Ting unscrupulously abandoned him. Feng Ting had been using him the entire time, she just wanted him to help her obtain some precious items.

Jing Yun was looking at Duan Feng while slightly shaking her head. Duan Feng was too young and naive. He only knew about cultivation. However, others could see that she was only using him.

“Indeed, we only encountered those two and started travelling together recently, this has nothing to do with them.” Said Duan Feng while smiling after having remained silent for a while which made Feng Ting look at him strangely.

Duan Feng had extremely high natural abilities, he also possessed the blood spirit of the Imperial Clan, if that event did not happen, she probably would have stayed with him, of course, it wouldn't have been out of love.

“Since you are here, you will die too. We don't care about killing two more people.” Said one of the Wan Shou Sect's members which made Feng Ting's heart start pounding and her facial expression changed drastically.

They still wanted to kill them, even if they didn't know Lin Feng, they would still die.

“Sir, not only are we not friends with Lin Feng but we also have

grudges against him. We also wish for his death. What's the point in killing a young girl and an old man like me?" Said the old man who was standing next to Feng Ting.

"Indeed, we hate Lin Feng, we are enemies." Said Feng Ting echoing the old man's view.

"How shameless!" Swore Jing Yun in a low voice but Feng Ting and the old man didn't care about her opinion, they were only looking at the members of the Wan Shou Sect.

The members of the Wan Shou Sect groaned coldly, then smiled in an ice-cold way and said: "Kill them all."

That cold and detached voice made Feng Ting start shaking unceasingly. She didn't even dare to think about those people trying to kill her.

"Jing Yun, sister, come behind me." Shouted Duan Feng but when he finished talking, the one who was leading the group immediately started walking towards him. Duan Feng had broken through to the ninth Ling Qi layer and had the blood spirit of the Duan Clan. Only a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer could deal with him, otherwise Duan Feng would kill them easily.

"Come behind you? That's useless." Said the cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer looking bestial and cruel while making some pure Qi rotate around his body. The disciples of the Wan Shou Sect all had beast spirits and all learnt beast skills and techniques.

“Useless? Then they can come behind me.” Said a voice which was hidden in the forest, that voice stupefied everybody. They turned around and immediately frowned.

They only saw a human riding on the back of a gigantic beast. They were calmly walking towards the group, they were neither quick nor slow.

The beast looked incredibly majestic, its face looked hideously cruel and it also had two fiery red wings.

The cultivator on its back was a young man, he looked handsome and intelligent, his Qi was extremely sharp. He was sitting on the back of the beast between its two wings. They were fixedly staring at the crowd of people.

“Your Excellency, this issue is the business of the Wan Shou Sect, we hope that you will not intervene.” Said the one who was acting as the current leader of the Wan Shou Sect members. He still looked vigilant though. That young man looked extraordinary and his beast surprisingly looked like an ancient ferocious beast, more precisely a Winged Tiger.

Duan Feng and Jing Yun, when they saw Lin Feng, sighed with relief. Since Lin Feng was there, nothing would happen to them.

Feng Ting and the old man’s facial expressions were complex.

“Lin Feng, big brother!!!” Duan Feng smiled while calling Lin

Feng which made the Wan Shou Sect's members frown.

Lin Feng, that young man was surprisingly Lin Feng.

“You want to kill me and my friends but you can't even recognise me when I am right in front of you. You're ridiculous.” the Winged Tiger's body slowly moved forwards. Lin Feng jumped off its back and then stared at the members of the Wan Shou Sect in a cold and detached way. Those people were not there to seize the vein of the earth, they were all weak, therefore they didn't know him.

The faces of the Wan Shou Sect's members drastically changed. They were trapped. They had all heard how powerful Lin Feng was. Du Yan wasn't even able to compete with him and was killed by his hands. These people were nobodies in comparison with Lin Feng.

“What is the cultivation of the members of your sect who went to the Celestial Academy?” Asked Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone while staring at the one who seemed to be the leader of the group.

That person pulled a long face and remained silent.

“Roaaarr....” A low roar spread in the air and immediately after, the crowd saw the beast which was next to Lin Feng disappear from its initial position in the blink of an eye.

“Ahhhhh....” Two horrible shrieks spread through the air and the Winged Tiger appeared at its initial position again. Its mouth

was covered with blood and its eyes looked extremely ferocious which made people start shaking.

Two of the Wan Shou Sect's members were killed in the blink of an eye, the Winged Tiger bit off their heads and they were now lying down on the ground, dead.

The crowd was astonished and fixedly staring at the Winged Tiger. Its eyes looked extremely cruel and ferocious.

"Is that an ancient ferocious beast...?" thought the crowd. The Winged Tiger was an ancient ferocious beast and it was extremely rare. Those people had never seen such a creature, none of them had witnessed the power of an ancient ferocious beast.

Only the leader of that small group of people had knowledge of ancient beasts, he had actually seen a picture of it in an ancient book describing ancient ferocious beasts. He had the feeling that Lin Feng's ferocious beast could carry the blood of a Winged Tiger or a Brutal Lion, it also looked somewhat similar to a daemoniac fire lion.

"Tell me." Said Lin Feng coldly while staring at the cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer. He looked incredibly cold which made the hearts of the Wan Shou Sect's members start to pound even faster. If they didn't tell Lin Feng, that ancient ferocious beast would kill them.

"If we tell you, will you let us go?" Said that person after having remaining silent for a few seconds.

“Roaaarrr!” Another roar spread in the air, the beasts figure disappeared again.

The face of the cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer drastically changed, he released some pure Qi but in a flash, the Winged Tiger had already landed in front of him.

“Splash....!” Blood gushed into the air. The Wan Shou Sect’s members’ hearts were violently pounding. He had died! In a flash, a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer had been killed by the Winged Tiger. It bit through his throat, separating the head from its body, how shocking!

The Winged Tiger then slowly walked around looking intimidating and bloodthirsty. When the Winged Tiger glanced at people, they just lowered their heads, they didn’t dare look at the beast.

That beast was terrifying!

If it was able to kill a cultivator of the Xuan Qi layer in the blink of an eye, what about them?

“You speak.” Said Lin Feng coldly while looking at someone else which made that person abruptly shake from head to toe.

“Multiple cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer... The strongest ones are at the third Xuan Qi layer, then there were also some of the

first second Xuan Qi layer. In total, there are about ten people.” Said the person with a trembling voice, he was also shaking while glancing at the Winged Tiger.

“Ten cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, including a few who reached the third Xuan Qi layer....” Lin Feng’s facial expression looked colder and colder. They wanted to kill Meng Qing, they wanted to kill Lin Feng’s other friends as well...

“Wan Shou Sect!” Shouted Lin Feng in an ice-cold tone: “I will kill you all!”

Table of Contents

[Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 301: I don't want to see you suffer!](#)

[Chapter 302: A Hundred and Twenty Thousand Pills](#)

[Chapter 303: The End of the Conflict](#)

[Chapter 304: Kill Him!](#)

[Chapter 305: The Cultivators in the Coffins!](#)

[Chapter 306: The Empire's Influence](#)

[Chapter 307: King Class Evil Ectoplasm](#)

[Chapter 308: The Impermanence of Life](#)

[Chapter 309: The Sealed Doors!](#)

[Chapter 310: The Emotionless Sword](#)

[Chapter 311: The Request](#)

[Chapter 312: Ambitious Goals!](#)

[Chapter 313: I am Lin Feng!](#)

[Chapter 314: Wen Ren Yan's Wedding!](#)

[Chapter 315: How Shameless!](#)

[Chapter 316: Lin Feng is back!](#)

[Chapter 317: Provoking Everyone!](#)

[Chapter 318: Wen Ren Yan's Death!](#)

[Chapter 319: The Terrifying Lin Feng](#)

[Chapter 320: Death of a Noble!](#)

[Chapter 321: The General](#)

[Chapter 322: The Era of the Geniuses](#)

[Chapter 323: Bi Luo's Insanity](#)

[Chapter 324: Heaven and Earth Are Cruel!](#)

[Chapter 325: Perilous Encirclement!](#)

[Chapter 326: The Death God](#)

[Chapter 327: Startling and Shocking](#)

[Chapter 328: He Hasn't Died!](#)

[Chapter 329: The Blue Void Underworld!](#)

[Chapter 330: Bullying Lin Feng?](#)

[Chapter 331: Cosmos Burning Sun](#)

[Chapter 332: The Sword of Sunlight!](#)

[Chapter 333: The Flames at Dong Ling!](#)
[Chapter 334: Burn and Die!](#)
[Chapter 335: A Speechless Lin Feng!](#)
[Chapter 336: The Sun Skill](#)
[Chapter 337: Chess with the Princess!](#)
[Chapter 338: Eighteen Years Ago!](#)
[Chapter 339: To Kill or not to Kill](#)
[Chapter 340: The Opportunity!](#)
[Chapter 341: Kill Yu Tian Xing?](#)
[Chapter 342: Dazzling Sword!](#)
[Chapter 343: The Sound Waves!](#)
[Chapter 344: The Incredible Celestial Book!](#)
[Chapter 345: Banned!](#)
[Chapter 346: The Grim Fire](#)
[Chapter 347: The Black Lotus!](#)
[Chapter 348: The Holy Courtyard Is Landing!](#)
[Chapter 349: The Appointment](#)
[Chapter 350: The Lesson](#)
[Chapter 351: Who Is Pathetic?](#)
[Chapter 352: Egotistic](#)
[Chapter 353: The Guess](#)
[Chapter 354: The Portrait](#)
[Chapter 355: Touching](#)
[Chapter 356: Imperial Guard Officer](#)
[Chapter 357: The Threat of a Black Lotus](#)
[Chapter 358: Leng Yue's Blade](#)
[Chapter 359: Who Will Save You?](#)
[Chapter 360: Frightening Persuasion](#)
[Chapter 361: She Qiong's Enlightenment](#)
[Chapter 362: Burnt to Death!](#)
[Chapter 363: Wu Ya's Mountain](#)
[Chapter 364: Against the current](#)
[Chapter 365: Fellow Students](#)
[Chapter 366: The Nine Dragon Mountain Chain](#)
[Chapter 367: Mount Sword](#)
[Chapter 368: Shaking the earth!](#)
[Chapter 369: The Evil Sword](#)
[Chapter 370: Veins of the Earth!](#)
[Chapter 371: How to Divide?](#)

[Chapter 372: Sword of the Rising Sun](#)
[Chapter 373: Wan Shou Men](#)
[Chapter 374: Merciful?](#)
[Chapter 375: His Grandson](#)
[Chapter 376: Everybody Arrived!](#)
[Chapter 377: Kill Lin Feng!](#)
[Chapter 378: Who Wants To Kill Him?](#)
[Chapter 379: The Ability?](#)
[Chapter 380: Beast Metamorphosis](#)
[Chapter 381: The Shaman Spirit](#)
[Chapter 382: Beast Control](#)
[Chapter 383: Celestial Fangs](#)
[Chapter 384: Devour!](#)
[Chapter 385: The Dragon's Heads](#)
[Chapter 386: Ancient Ferocious beasts](#)
[Chapter 387: The Silhouette in the Mountains](#)
[Chapter 388: Astonishing!](#)
[Chapter 389: The Transformation!](#)
[Chapter 390: Convincing the Winged Tiger](#)
[Chapter 391: Control!](#)
[Chapter 392: The Battle Against the Tian Level Beast](#)
[Chapter 393: Unsheathing The Evil Sword](#)
[Chapter 394: Removing the Restriction!](#)
[Chapter 395: Scared!](#)
[Chapter 396: Teng Wu Yao's Fury](#)
[Chapter 397: Wind](#)
[Chapter 398: Wind Movement](#)
[Chapter 399: Coming to Kill!](#)
[Chapter 400: Cold Indifferent Heart](#)